

My Breaking Point

Prologue

The point at which something breaks down or gives way. The breaking point of something is the point at which stress has increased so much that things begin to fall apart or break down. Before something has reached its breaking point, it has undergone many trials and tensions.

Some days you wake up and feel like you can change the world, and some days you wake up and feel like world owes so much and as much as we are all trying to live in this life, there bits and pieces of encounters we have that add up to our day-to-day struggles.

Sometimes we are lucky to survive them, sometimes we are luck to get out of them.

Sometimes we are lucky because our hearts are good at suppressing emotions that can control/detect our day set up.

We are living in a world where pretence has become a norm, we pretend like we don't care, we pretend like it didn't happen, we pretend like we didn't see anything, we pretend like it doesn't hurt, we pretend like we are fine, we pretend like we got it all figured out. Have you ever been there? I have, so many times, and I think I'm still there even now, but what happens when you reach your breaking point? Do you burst? Do you cry? Do you confront? Do you tell someone? But who? Where do you run to when the only place we thought can offer us safety and assurance has turned into circus? People find joy in telling our secrets, pastor's wives like making example of us because we had children out of wedlock.

We are always the perfect examples of everything

bad. They don't even want to know why it happened, how it happened. All they care about is themselves and their bright two pieces. But our emotions? Our hearts? Those don't count. Society has labeled us "whores and prostitutes." We are this immoral beings that will forever be known as having a child at the young age.

They normalize criticism into love. They judge us, and hide behind the veil of love. "You can't sing if you had child before marriage. You can't serve in front if you had a child out of wedlock. You need to pray for God to forgive you." Everything is normalized around your "Mistake" one thing left is for them to name your child a mistake.

Then tell me, where do you run to when things are like that. Who do you tell your pain when you feel like God is not about to come for you? How do you go about your wound everyday.

Everything has become so spiritual that we are conformed too much spirituality than reality. The church has instilled a mindset of spirituality in us so much that we lost touch with reality, forgetting that as much as we want to be spiritual, reality always catch up with us. We end up seeking validation in wrong things and people because our voices that are crying out for help are not heard. Everything happening we must just pray our way out of it. What happens when that prayer is not answered?

We were taught to close our bedroom doors and talk to God until he answers, but what happens when nothing happens? Who do we talk our feelings with? Who do we tell how we feel and they assure us? It is not all about being spiritual, because God created us to be physical too. For us to conquer in the spiritual we need to conquer in reality first. But how?

Pretend is the It thing baby, Fake it until you make it.

What if you don't make it? Have you ever thought about that? What if you make fake thing since you faked it from the beginning?

Anyway, I guess that is life.

So much has happened in my life, so much that today. Being mother at the age of 15, my parents lying to the community and the church about my pregnancy because they are elders of the church who feared to loose respect and their positions in the church. Can you blame them though? I mean the church that we attend, your child fall pregnant, the mother is not praying enough. Your house is not in order.

It is so spiritual like nobody's business. We harbour secrets because we fear to be shamed. We fear to be seen as those who don't pray much. We pretend so much that we are not even allowed to talk about sex and things like that.

We pretend that we have it all together but behind those closed doors and curtains, nothing will make you wish to be us. Do you know what's even worse? I was impregnated by the PK, yeah, the pastor's kid and I had to bury the memory of it like it never happened. The night he deceived me, the night he took away my innocence, he lied to me and now? He is living a happy life with his family. Is like I never existed. He promised me heaven on earth. He knew I wasn't experienced in this things, yet he had his way and pleasured himself and walked away.

Since that fateful night, he never spoke to me, even when I went to choir practice he will pretend like I'm not there. He will laugh and flirt with other girls but he never looked my direction. He ruined my future, yet that didn't bother him. He didn't care. Now he is married to my best friend Mercy, and you what's more funny? They have two beautiful children and everyday when Mercy invites me over, I feel like Wisdom is just rubbing it in my face that he is a

father and a proud one.

Yes I told him that I'm pregnant but he never believed me, I mean I wasn't going to believe it either, because my daughter happens to be my sister. My parents made up a story about adopting her, and guess what? They were praised at church for doing that. To think my mother was never there for me during my pregnancy. I felt neglected, I felt like she didn't care. I remember those days like yesterday. I was young and lost. I was staying alone in another city, because I couldn't afford being seen by people, so says my parents. They hid me, we never spoke about it because I'm a shame to them. It was like I was a contagious disease.

I surpass so many brokenness in me and anger. I don't know who I am angry with the most. God? My parents? Pastor Mofokeng and his wife? Wisdom or myself? I don't know. Having to watch my friend everyday playing happy family with a man who took

my vulnerability makes me sick. Jealousy always creeps in, strong thoughts drives me to depression.

Every single day the emotions of being a failure, of not having a leg to stand on and fight for my child hurts me so bad. I'm practically nothing. I lost an opportunity to go to school, but if I had to choose to go school or my daughter goes to school and I stay, trust me I will choose the latter and that's what I did.

My mother never fails to remind me how she is doing everything for my daughter, and she can't do that for me too. Yes, I'm the only child. My dad? Whatever my mom says, goes with him....

This is just the bit and pieces of my life... Are you ready to ride with me?

Oh my bad, I forgot to introduce myself..

My name is Palesa Ella Motaung please buckle up and let's take drive around my life...

Keep this in your minds for now. We will continue soon..

My Breaking Point

Chapter 1

Years before the present..

Mama: "Oreng Palesa? Who is responsible for this mess? Wena o mosadi this days neh? You are a big woman now you? You want me to be a laughing stock in this community? Not only that but you want them to take away my position as an elder at church?" She was furious. If she had any other choice she was going to beat me. My father never said anything, he was just looking at me but you could see that he was very furious.

Papa:" Who is responsible for this? " I kept quiet, and continued to play with my fingers..

Papa: "Ke bolela le Wena Palesa! When you were opening your legs you couldn't talk? Weren't screaming when that boy was on top of you?"(I'm talking to you Palesa!)

Me: "Papa... Sorry.."

Mama: "Sorry? Sorry? Sorry Ella? Sorry jwang? I don't understand. Sorry how? Which part are you sorry for? You are sorry for being pregnant or you are sorry that you are shame? At the age of 15?15 years, we sent you to school to become a doctor, and this is the thanks we get? This how you repay our efforts? Motaung ke tlo sebolaya se?" (I will kill this thing.)

Papa:" She must just tell us who is responsible for this first, then I will help you in killing her. Do you

know who we are at church? Do you know we are in the church leadership? Ke mang papa wa selo se?
"(Who is the father of that thing?)

Me: "Ke.. Ke.."

Mama: "Bolela man, ke.. Ke.. Ke ke dilo mang tsona tseo?" (Talk man, what is is, is?)

Me: "Ke Wisdom." They looked at me to continue but I know they have an idea who I am talking about.

Mama: "Wisdom yeo ga ena sefane?" (That Wisdom sdoesnt have a surname)

Me: "Wisdom Mofokeng." I quickly said and wiped my tears.

Mama: "O Jeso heeeee, Ella you want us to be a laughing stock at church? Ella, Wisdom is too good for to be accusing him of this abomination, taboo. Wisdom is a very decent boy, I mean he leads the worship team at church phulisi, don't bore me and give me the name?"

Me: "It's him mama, ke bolela nnete." (I'm telling the truth.)

Papa: "Pales a my baby, please tell us the truth. We both know that Wisdom will never do that."

I don't know which part was hurting me the most. My parents not believing me or standing up for someone they only know from a distance.

I was the one with him few months ago, we were practicing in his father's garage, and I left behind helping him to pack so that his mother doesn't scold him like she always do. Everyone left giving reasons why they should go and I decided to be generous and help him pack and I always helped him anyways, he was a good friend of mine. Some of the instruments stays in his bedroom. I was wearing my pink dress, it's not short, but it's descent enough for me to go to church with even my mother approved of it.

When I placed the keyboard on the stand in his room, he was behind me. He kissed me, for a moment I froze but I didn't respond to anything. I

asked him what he is doing but he just looked at me deep in my eyes and told me that I'm beautiful.

We were good friends before all of this. Yes, he would walk with me to school and home. We spoke about so many things and he even told me that one day he will make me his wife. He told me one day I will be by his side and watch our little ones grow. But all that was just to sweet talk me in breaking me. My parents never really had time for me because they were focused so much on church than me.

At the age of 15, I know nothing about love, I have never been in love, I see my age mates dating at school and sending their boyfriends letters but to me, it was just never in me. I just love to sing, that's all I thought lived for and also to be a doctor as my parents wanted me to be. I'm not a bright student but I do study, and I believe that I can do it. I do get good marks and my dad used to be proud of me.

Me and him were not dating but I saw him as a good friend of mine but no, he was on a mission to break me. He was on a mission to get what he wants from me and move on like I never existed.

One thing led to another in that room, he told me how he was always watching me, how he thought I was a good decent girl that he would want to marry in the future. To be honest who wouldn't want to be married by a pastor's son? He is in his matric, 3 years older than me. So I will say he raped me because he didn't even care about my answer, all he wanted was to satisfy his selfish desires and fantasy.

All I remember is him satisfying himself on top of me. I didn't even enjoy anything about the sex. I told him that I'm not comfortable but he said I should trust him. I couldn't trust him because he was violating me, while sweet talking me. Afterwards he told me to dress up and go home. Just like that. He

didn't even care that I was bleeding, he gave me R30. 00 to buy myself cold drink along the way to home. I was so hurt. And from then our not existing relationship never existed.

Me: "Papa I'm telling the truth."

Papa: "You are accusing an innocent person Palesa because lying won't get you anywhere. Do you want me to beat the truth out of you?" He was already up on his bed, fastening his belt.

Me: "Papa ke bolela nnete."

Mama: "Nnete Kae, papa beat her, maybe her mind will come back because it seems like she is confused."

My father hit me so hard with his belt. He was not merciless. My mother wasnt even interested in whether papa is killing me or not.

I got a chance to run out of the house because the

beating was too much. My body was very sore and painful.

I sat at the back of the house and cried. I heard the car driving out after sometime, they went to church.

I went back into the house, I took a shower and cried myself to sleep, I woke up around 22:30 when the parents were back. They were arguing the moment they got into the house.

Mama: "We will have to move her papa, she can't afford to stay here. I will be a laughing stock at church. Mind you I'm the who who is actively involved with the youth."

Papa: "I know but where will she move? Everyone is everywhere this days."

Mama: "She will move to Lephallale, that is the only place that is far from here."

Papa: "What about school? Where will she stay in

Lephalale?"

Mama: "We will rent a flat for her, we will use the money we saved for her school. We don't have a choice in this, I'm not going to allow Palesa to ruin this for me. Not after I worked so hard to be on that position. Aowa papa, never. Palesa must just go and have that baby there then we will raise the child for her. We will come up with a plan to tell the pastor. "

Papa:" It seems like you got it all figure it out. Fine we can do that. "

Mama:" Yes, we have to go tomorrow. I already told Ma'Mofokeng that we are leaving for few days. Let me go tell her pack her bags. This child will definitely kill me this time around. After everything we did for her and this is how we get paid. Nonsense." She was talking to herself walking towards my room.

She roughly opened the bed, and pulled the duvet off me.

Mama:" Pack your bags, tomorrow we are leaving and make sure you pack everything valuable that you will need."

Me:" Where are we going? "I innocently asked.

Mama:" Somewhere people won't see you and the shame you brought to this family. "

Me:" What about school? "

Mama:" School? You should have thought of that when you opened your legs and accusing people of sleeping with you. I hope your stay there will make you more wise. " She banged the door and walked out

I dragged myself out of bed and wiped my tears. Took out suitcases and packed my bags. My heart was palpitation, shaking a bit and feeling a little sweating dripping down my spine.

I packed with my eyes dripping wet with tears. I can't believe I have done this. My parents will never

forgive me. I felt my heart continue to beat more faster and faster, I was getting some uneasiness, getting nervous.

What are they trying to get rid of me? What if they never come back for me in that city?

Papa walked in, I was seated on the bed, trying to adjust all the uneasiness and nervousness I was feeling, more like anxiety creeping in.

He sat down next to me.

Papa: "Lele you know we are doing this for you right?"

Me: "Are you doing it for me or for yourselves papa? Do I really disgust you that much that you have to send me away?"

Papa: "We are not trying to get rid of you. There's a lot at stake here." He didn't even sound convinced.

Me: "But do you believe when I say is Wisdom who did this to me?" I looked into his eyes hoping his eyes will say yes but who am I lying to? Who will ever believe me? Who will believe a 15 year-old who will be seen as someone who will ruin the future of an upcoming Lawyer? Yes, everyone at church knows that he is going to study law next year...

My Breaking Point

Chapter 2

Palesa Ella Motaung

I have turned and tossed the whole night. I was restless, my heart was not at peace my mind kept on dating back a couple of times. I don't even know what is expected of me, I don't know how my life will turn to be like in the future. Being 15 and pregnant with no support system is something else. I'm being sent to another city because my parents

are ashamed of me.

I woke up and checked the time it was just after 02:30. I got out of bed and knelt down on my knees.

Me: "God, I know I don't usually pray so often but I can't sleep. I know I'm a disappointment, I disappointed you, my parents and even the whole community. I know much was expected from me but I let you down. Lord I'm sorry, I promise I didn't mean for all of this to happen. I'm lost, I'm confused. No one believes my truth, even my own parents don't believe me. Who will believe me if the people who should stand by me think I'm lying? Lord please come through for me. Fight for me and protect me and my child. Fight for us and let the truth prevail. I pray for Wisdom too, God I pray that you soften his hard, let him not reject this child, let him not shame me, let him also take responsibility of his action. I ask all this in your name. I know it is so and so shall it be. Amen. "

I thought I will feel better after praying but anxiety was killing me. I ended up just seating on the bed doing nothing until morning.

I cleaned the house and made breakfast for everyone. Maybe today it will be a different day. I set the table. I made bread, butter, polony and cheese with tea. I placed everything on the table and I took my food and went to sit outside. It was bright Saturday, people were already out and about, you know how Kasi is, there's no night a morning nje.

After eating I sneaked out and went to Mercy's house, I wanted to say goodbye to her, I didn't know which lie I was going to sell to her but she deserve to know because she is my only true friend.

Nthabiseng: "O ya Kae vroeg so?"(Where are you

going so early in the morning?) That is my noise neighbor Nthabiseng, she is forever snooping in everyone's life. There's nothing she doesn't know in this neighborhood.

Me: "Kea go bona batho." (I'm going to see people.)

Nthabiseng: "Okay, Matsatsi'a gape o nonne hle Wena." (This days you gained weight hey?) See what I mean?

Me: "Life is good." I quickly walked away because she was going fish out news until she gets what she wanted. I don't want to make my parents more angry than they are now.

I arrived at Mercy's house, her mother was around but luckily she let me see her. I lied to her and said there's homework we have that I needed some clarity on.

She came outside.

Mercy: "Chomie, so early? O sharp?" "Are you good?"

Me: "Yah ke sharp chomie. I came to say goodbye."

Mercy: "Goodbye? Where are you going?"

Me: "I'm moving to Lephale, to stay with my grandmother, she is sick and I have to go and take care of her."

Mercy: "Mara mokgots'e, what about school? We are about to write June exams, you can't just up and leave nje?" She was sincerely concerned.

Me: "I know, I will go to school that side, my grandmother needs me chomie. I really have to go. I just came to say goodbye."

Mercy: "Lisa no, who is going to be my friend when you leave? I can talk to my mom to talk to yours, or I can even move with you, I will talk to my mother about it." She was in tears and she was breaking my heart.

Me: "No, friend I will be back I promise. I will be back for you." I couldn't hide my tears that were

burning in my eyes too.

Mercy: "You promise?"

Me: "I promise, I will call you every day."

We hugged and cried together and she accompanied me home and turned along the way.

I walked to Wisdom's house, it was 3 blocks away from my home and Mercy's house is just four houses away from mine.

The gate was wide opened and I walked in. I didn't even where did I get the liver to go inside without feeling anxious or scared. I knocked at the door twice and Mamoruti "Mamfundisi" opened the door. She is a very beautiful woman, with a beautiful figure but her heart doesn't suit her outside appearance. Wisdom's mother is not a friendly person if you ask me, she will make you feel like you are nothing.

Ruth: "Ella? What are you doing here this morning?
Is everyone okay at home?"

Me: "Yes ma'am, everyone is okay at home. I'm here
to see Wisdom." She gave me a death stare.

Me: "I mean I need some clarity on the assign²they
gave to us and since he is our tutor I need him to
explain few things for me." She gave me a
questioning look before she stepped aside and let
me in.

She went upstairs to call Wisdom and left me
standing in their sitting room. I couldn't sit down
without her telling me to do so, I don't want to be
told where to get off.

They descended the stairs and walked towards me.
The look on Wisdom was dangerous if I may say.
He looked shocked yet, trying to calm down but
angry at the same time.

Ruth: "I will be in the kitchen if you need me."

Wisdom: "No need mamzo, we will talk while I walk

her out."

Ruth: "Oh, okay. Send my greetings to your parents Ella."

Me: "I will do so ma'am. Bye."

We walked out and he pulled me towards the gate.

Wisdom: "What do you think you are doing here? What do you want here?"

Me: "I'm pregnant Wisdom."

Wisdom: "So? What should I do with your information?"

Me: "You are the father."

Wisdom: "You must be out of your mind. How can I be the father of your child?"

Me: "We slept together, you forced me to sleep with you the other day."

Wisdom: "You are crazy, I never forced to sleep with

you. You threw yourself at me. And I didn't even penetrate that day. So you better go and look for the father of that child and stop accusing me."

He tried to walk away but I pulled me.

Me: "I'm telling the truth Wisdom. I have never slept with any other guy. You are the only person I slept with."

Wisdom: "Listen to yourself, do you think I will ever down grade myself like that? Girl, I will forgive and act like we never had this conversation. I keep my mouth shut because I have a reputation to keep, my parents have reputation to keep, so, I will act like we never had this conversation. Do you hear me? "

His words were like a sword piercing my heart.

Oratile:" Wizzy mama is calling you. "That was his little sister, standing at the corner of the house just near the gate.

Wisdom:" I believe we will never have this conversation ever again. Stop accusing me of

things I know nothing about. Go find guys in your league. Ugly fat lizard. " He walked away leaving me there like with tears blurring my vision.

God what did I do to deserve this? I took that long walk of shame to home. My heart was racing, my whole body was failing me as I walk home. I didn't think I will arrive home in one piece. My mind was dis oriented, it kept on dating back to Wisdom's words. They were like a sword designed to pierce my heart only and it not only pierce but it broke my heart into million pieces.

I got inside the house and I fourth both mama Nad papa having breakfast. I only noticed their presence but I didn't have the courage to speak to them because I knew I was going to get the shouting of my life, not only that but also be reminded of how much of a disappointment I am.

Mama: "O tswa Kae?" (Where were you?) She was

very calm for my liking.

Me: "I went to say goodbye to Mercy."

Mama: "Okay, I hope you didn't say anything to her."
I nodded.

Me: "I will be in my room."

Papa: "Finish packing, we are leaving in an hour." I
nodded and walked to my room. I threw myself on
the bed and silently cried.

How did I get myself in this? God where are you to
help me?

I must have fallen asleep in my cry. Mama woke up
me up saying I must freshen up. I went to take a
shower and when I went back to my room, she was
packing my some of my warm clothes in my bag. I
let her be and dressed up.

Mama: "Palesa, come. Sit down." She sat down and

I sat next to her.

Mama: "I know you think we are being harsh on you but my child, we are only trying to protect, we are protecting you from this community, we are protecting you from this cruel world. We want what's best for you. Yes we are disappointed but we still love you."

Me:" I know mama, and I'm sorry for disappointing you. Mama, can I ask you something? "

Mama:" Ask. "

Me:" Do you still don't believe me when I say Wisdom is the father of this baby, he raped me mama. "

Mama:" Palesa please. Stop this lies of yours. Stop it. We both know that Wisdom will never do that. Stop dragging him in this mess of yours. He is the pastor's child for crying out loud. He respect that boy, so we are not going to have this conversation ever again. Am I clear? "

Wow, so much of loving me...ifn you really love me that much why don't you believe me then? What's so hard to believe there? I was raped for crying out loud. Everything happened out of my concent but my parents still think I am lying? Wow...

I wipe my tears.

Me: "Yes ma'am" my heart became heavy all over again. I felt like I needed to burst...

[03/12, 15:17] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 3

Palesa Ella Motaung

5 months later

I can safely say that anxiety took over me in the

past few months since I moved this side. There were times I wish I had siblings, maybe it could've been different, maybe things will be better because I will have someone to share my pain with. Maybe the weight that is on my shoulder will be lighter, maybe then my parents won't be this struck with me. Maybe then I will have a normal life like any other kid out there, maybe, and maybe life will be much better than living in this hell now.

Staying alone did nothing but more harm to my health. There were days were I thought of killing myself and end this emotional pain I was living with. There were days were I wish I could just disappear from the surface of the earth for few minutes, just so I can breath. There were moments I was happy, but they didn't last.

I have been a loner for 5 full months, I don't go out, I'm always coupled in my room, the only time I go out is when I got to the grocery store to buy food, or

going to the park to read books that I bought for pregnancy as advised by my gynecologist.

I have grown to love my baby more than anything, she is the only thing that keeps me sane and make me want to fight more. Yes, she is a girl, though my parents don't know anything about it. Lately we have grew more apart, they no longer call to check up on me, and I also don't bother myself in calling them.

My relation with Mercy was still stronger but I didn't tell her about my pregnancy, apparently my mother told everyone that I'm gravely sick with prostate cancer and I'm at the hospital, so everyone at church everyday they meet to pray for me. Even Mercy too believe that I'm sick, and I also act like I'm sick. The other day she wanted to come and see me but I gave million reasons for her not to come. I wonder what my parents are telling people who wants to come and see me. Which lie are they using?

How do they even sleep at night with so much lies that they tell people?

I just got back from the park, I was with Nyeleti, the lady who stay next door to my flat. She has been the only mother and a sister I ever had. She is the only person who availed herself to accompany me to doctor's visits. She work at SAPS as clerk and she stays with her boyfriend Thabiso but not full time. He only comes on weekends and they both have been so good and kind to me. She is the only person I opened up to about my relationship with my mother and how I became pregnant. She advised me to lay charged against Wisdom but to be honest, I'm scared to that. If I do, my parents will diswon me, and where will I go if I do that? What will I feed my child if I do that? I can't let that happen. I have learned to live with it and as much as is still haunt me, I decided to grow up and be a mother, meaning always putting my child first in everything else.

Nyeleti: "Let me go quickly fix you something to eat and I will come with Thabiso so we can watch a movie."

Me: "Okay, thanks sis Nyeleti. I'm going to lie down a bit."

Nyeleti: "Still feeling the pain?"

Me: "Yes, but they are not too much."

Nyeleti: "Maybe we should go to the hospital."

Me: "If they become worse we will go, for now I just want to rest."

Nyeketi: "Okay baby, I will see you in a bit."

She kissed my forehead after making sure that I got inside the blankets and I'm warm.

I slowly drifted into sleep land but my phone woke me up. I just answered without checking who it was.

Me: "Lebowa Funeral Parlour, how am I assist?"

Mercy: "Hahaha, try that with someone else mokgotse."

Me: "Friend, I was napping, you know how much I hate to be woken up."

Mercy: "Askies mokgotse, how are you feeling today?"

Me: "Ke sharp, ke tla reng." (I'm good, what can I say.)

Mercy: "I'm sorry chomie, I wish I could come and see you hey. But I'm forever praying for you and I'm about to go church now for prayer. Everyone at church is praying for you to recover, you will be well." I rolled my eyes. My parents are really into the deep I tell you.

Me: "Thank you friend. "

Mercy: "You are welcome, I have news for you. "

Me: "Okay, I'm all ears, I hope it's good news. "

Mercy: "Of course it is silly. Me and Wisdom are official. Mokgotse he proposed yesterday at school

in front of everyone. It was so sweet of him. " I felt my heart sink into the deep. She literally cut down deep me. Couldn't he have went with someone else not my friend? Couldn't he have gotten another girl at church but obviously not my best friend? Wow.

Mercy:" Ella, are you still there? "She brought me back to reality. I couldn't hide the pain I felt, even my tears Betrayed me, I mean how do I pretend to be happy for her? Like where do I start to be happy to begin with?

Me:" Yes, I'm here, I'm happy for you. Look, I have to go, I have to take my medication."

Mercy: "Okay, I love you and get well soon."

Me: "Sharp." I cut the line and got out of bed.

Mynheart was becoming more heavier with each and every step I took towards the door. I felt like I was about to pass out. My chest was closing out on me., I was running out of breath, and suffocating. This is too much for me, how could Wisdom do this to me. He knows very well that Mercy us my best

friend. He knows that very well without a doubt.

Me: "Sesi Nyeleti." I said on her door with a low voice, it wasn't audible enough for her to hear me, I tried to open the door but I didn't have enough energy to help me do so.

I fell down right on her door step on my knees.

I was suffocating, trying so hard to breath but it felt like my air pipes were closed on me.

Me: "God help me." I said slowly and in a whisper, I don't think if there anyone to hear me say that. Before I knew it I passed out on the floor....

Few hours later, I was up with sis Nyelete fussing on me. I was in the hospital and we were waiting for my gynecologist to come check me, but the doctor said my blood pressure was extremely high and the moment she thought the baby's heartbeat stopped, which is true because I was awake when we were

doing the sonar. There was no heartbeat of the baby and few seconds later it slowly retaliated faintly so.

I was on some drip to keep me awake because the doctor said she couldn't risk me falling asleep because of the danger the baby and I we are in.

Nyeleti: "Your mother is not answering her."

Me: "She will never answer it, maybe she is at church."

Nyeleti: "Why is your mom so heartless? What did you do to her that makes her treat you like this?"

Me: "I guess me falling pregnant made her that angry. I mean she even refused me to go back to school."

Nyeleti: "Hai, this is more than just that don't you think?"

I shrugged my shoulders I mean I don't even know what could be the reason behind such hatred.

Nyeleti: "We will need the baby clothes, I mean we never had a chance to buy them."

Me: "I don't have any money to buy the clothes now, I'm waiting for month for papa to send me cash and if he doesn't like he didn't last month, I don't know. I will have to ask people to donate for me."

Nyeleti: "Oh Lisa, this is too much. Don't stress about the clothes, I will make a plan. I will ask Thabiso to help me buy them. Let me go because the doctor said there might be a possibility that you give birth tonight. I promise I will come back before you know it. "

Me:" Thank you very much sesi. "

She kissed my forehead and wiped my tears with her thumb.

Nyeleti:" You are going to be fine, okay. "I nodded, she wiped her tears and walked out.

I called my mom's phone and it rang a couple of times and she answered.

Mama:" Pales a, ke busy I will call you back."

Me:" Mama at the hospital... "

Mama:" Ke busy baby, I will you back. Sharp." She cut the line.

Put my phone down and cried until my gynecologist came. I was rushed to emergency C-section operation. It was one of the most scariest moments of my life.

I needed my mother to hold my hand and go through every emotion with me, but she didn't care even when I tried to tel her that at the hospital. At least I had the best gynecologist ever, she held my hand through the whole process. Indeed God will put angels everywhere for you who will take care of you even though you need specific people or expected specific people to be the who who will help you but I'm grateful.

I gave birthday to a beautiful baby girl Naomi Motaung. For a moment I thought my life is perfect but little did I know that she will be taken away from me. The only thing that made sense to me...

[03/12, 15:18] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 4

Mercy Mashugane

After speaking with Ella earlier on I wasn't very settled. I know Ella can be many thing but Ella is not a liar. Something fishy is going on and I'm going to find out soon. And what is this cancer, Ella was never sick when she left, and she is not a sick type. Always making excuses when I need to see her. She left school just like that, she might not be intelligent but she is a hard worker and she loves school.

I went to my mom's room to ask her money for airtime. I really need to know more this cancer thing. A prostate cancer, what the heck is that? Does it even exist? I mean Ella's parents are well off, I mean her grandparents (paternal) were very rich, you know, owning agricultural business. They were doing poultry farming and since Ella's father is the only child, He inherited everything. Both her mom and dad are working full time in poultry farming and they own few houses around here ekasi which they are renting.

Me: "Mama, ke kgopela le nthekele go airtime, ke nyaka go Dira a school research." (Mom please buy me airtime I want to do a school research. "

Mmathapelo:"This school of yours is really chowing our money hey. Bring my purse there." I gave her the purse and she gave me R50 saying I should buy bread.

You see my mom is a very sweet soul, she is not a woman of many words. She is a house wife, but she is selling Tupperware, Avon, and she also sew clothes for people, wedding and all that, and my dad is a surveyor at some construction company. We are not rich as people could say it but we have everything we need and what we want too. My brother Kabelo also just got an internship in Gauteng, he is staying with my elder sister Nthabeleng who is married and has one child Lethabo, a cute little man who I adore so much.

I got the airtime and I loaded it and bought data, I didn't buy bread yet, I sat down at the big Rock near the shop. I Googled this prostate cancer thing, I was shocked with the results. So, because at kasi people we are very ignorant, there are things we will never follow up because they were said by people who knows too much.

What I don't understand is how can Ella have a

particular disease that occurs in men's private parts? Is that normal? I might be 15, but that doesn't mean I'm stupid. Why would they lie to me? Or maybe they never told the whole church about this prostate nonsense? Because I never heard anyone talking about it. When I asked Ella she just said okay, like her respond was very questionable, I mean the other day when I was there to ask if I could go and visit her, her mother nearly cut my head off, she is not a friendly woman hey. And when I asked what kind of cancer does Ella have she just quickly said prostate cancer without even thinking about it. Now the question is, why are we not allowed to go and see her? She is very rude and ever since she got her position at church, yoh Jesus, she is always breathing down our neck about how we should carry ourselves. She is acting like Jesus's wife.

I arrived at her place and I found MmaNakedi(their helper) in the garden cutting the flowers and what not. She doesn't come here everyday, they are days I find her some she is not there.

Me: "Dumelang mma, le Kae?" (Greeting ma, how are you?)

MmaNakedi: "Mercy, re gona le Kae sesi?" (I'm good and how are you?)

Me: "Re gona, Bo MmaPalesa ba gona?" (Is Palesa's mom around?)

MmaNakedi: "Eya ba gona, tsena." (Yes, there are around, go in.)

I went in and I knocked before I could enter. I was very nervous but hey I needed answers.

I greeted her and she allowed me to sit down. She was busy with some papers, with cup of tea in front of her.

Nomzamo:" Mercy, what are you doing here?"

Me: "Erh, Ma, not to disrespect you but there is something that I don't understand."

Nomzamo: "What is it that you don't understand?"

Me: "Erh, regarding Palesa's cancer, you said she has prostate cancer right?"

Nomzamo: "Yes I said that." She sounded so confident in her statement.

Me: "But Ma, when I Googled that type of cancer, it says it's cancer cells found in men's private part, I mean does Palesa have male private part?" I whispered the last part of it because I knew she was going to go crazy on me.

Nomzamo: "Are you saying that I'm lying?"

Me: "No, ma'am." I quickly said shaking my head in the process.

Annah: "Good because this is not up for discussion, whatever cancer she has, it is found in her private part and if I hear anyone say anything about this, you will have me to deal with, am I clear?"

Me: "Yes ma'am."

Nomzamo: "Good, Ella will need your support now, not your snooping and trying to be intelligent on me. If you just stop stressing me with fake internet knowledge and be a friend that my daughter would appreciate with less questions asked. She might die for crying out loud and you are busy here trying to

be a superhero. Focus on studying for your final examination. "

Me:"Yes ma'am."

You see? I left with a tail behind my ass. I mean you would never win an argument with Lele's mother. But maybe she is right what if she dies and yet I'm here trying to play superhero?

Mercy drink water and mind your own business girl before you get in trouble...

Palesa Ella Motaung

I woke up few hours later, my body was in pain. The operation stitch was very painful. Thank God for being in a private hospital, at least they go extramile in helping us. The nurse came and helped me to go and take a shower. She said she will bring me pain medication and I will also learn how to breastfeed

after eating.

I just wish my mom was here to see me through everything. These emotions are just overwhelming for me. I wish she could just say I'm here for you. Sometimes I wish Mercy's mother was my mom. She is so sweet and gentle. Not rough like Annah. I wonder why did she lie to people about the cancer, what's going to happen when I get home after this? It's obvious that most people at church know, but why lie? I asked the doctor about it earlier on and she said it's male cancer, Hai, my mother is something else I really need to give it to her. I'm sure Mercy already Google it. That girl lives for Google I tell you. If she doesn't understand anything, she goes to Google.

At least, I don't have to lie about it, even when Mercy told me, I just said okay, I mean I didn't even know that she lied to people that I have cancer, she could've at least prepared me for it but nah, girl has

it all figured it out.

Nurse: "And here is your baby girl." My eyes welled up with tears. All emotions. She was cupped in a fur pink blanket brought by Sesi Nyeleti last night with buti Thabiso. She such a cute baby, her lips are so perfect her hands so tiny and perfect. Thank God she didn't look much like Wisdom but the nose and lips were like his. More reason for my parents to not believe me.

She gently placed her in my arms, helping me to carry her nicely.

Nurse: "There you go. Always make sure you support her neck because she is not strong enough."

Me: "Okay, she is so perfect."

Nurse: "Yes she is, where is your mom, isn't she supposed to be here to support you emotionally and morally?"

Me: "She is a busy woman, but she does call and check up on me every now and then."

Nurse: "Okay, first thing first, make sure you always wipe you nipples before you feed her. It's going to be little uncomfortable because it's your first time but you will get used to the feeling."

Me: "Okay." She gave me wipes and I did as instructed and I gave her my boobie, damn girl sucked the hell out of me plus I don't have much milk but the nurse told me it will naturally come out but I must drink more tea, which I think I already drank 3 cups.

The nurse stayed with me for a while, her name is Shirley, she was so kind and she kept on saying I must go back to school and never look down on myself for having a baby at this young age. She was so kind to me and she even prayed for me and my baby. Everyone was just so nice to me expect for my parents. If only they could be nice to me, I will be happy.

I know this will soon end. I will be going back home and trust me, I won't even enjoy a single day there. I wish I could stay here more.

Nurse: "Why did you name her Naomi?" She asked as she showed me how to change her nappies. She told me that later she will go buy some baby creams for me at the pharmacy that will help maintain her skin and some formulas too but she advice that I breastfeed her as much as I can.

Me:" She is my happiness. She is the only thing that makes me happy right now. I have learned to be happy with her unlike at home." My eyes well up again, I hate talking about home because there's no good memory I have about that place. All the good ones were wiped by the bad ones and when I think about them, my anxiety become too overwhelming for me.

Nurse:" I may not know what you endured at home, but there's something special about you. You are a very nice child. All this shall pass too. You see me, I

have been married for 10 years now and I have been praying to God to bless me with a child but nothing, when I see a young girl like you having a child I make it my duty to take care of her because I know the pain of not having a solid support system when we are going through the most. I call every little baby I see in this hospital my God baby and I always pray for them and I will pray for you too. God will give you peace one day okay? "

Me:" Thank you, you are very kind and pray that God one day will bless you with the fruit of the womb. "

Nurse:" I know He will. I have to go back to work now, I will come and check up on you before I leave or even on lunch break, let me take this little one with me. "

Me:" Okay. When will I see her again? "

Nurse:" J ust after the doctor saw her I will bring her back to you. And I'm sure your sister and brother would also want to see her. "

Me:"Thank you Mam'Shirley."

Nurse: "You are welcome baby." She kissed my

forehead and put Naomi in the cot and wheeled her out.

Why can't my own mother be like this? God what have I done to deserve a mother like mine? Why did you bring me in this earth if the people you chose to be my parents will be this cruel to me?

[03/12, 15:18] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 5

Palesa Ella Motaung

It's been 2 weeks since we were discharged at the hospital. Mam'Shirley kept her promises indeed and she bought everything that Naomi need, from diapers to formula and clothes. She even bought her other clothes saying they are Christmas clothes for her and me too. Vele we are approaching festive

season. Sesi Nyeleti has been a great help to me and my little one, she even took some time off work to be with me and help me with the baby. Naomi is not troublesome. After breastfeeding her she sleeps, even after bathing she sleeps. That has been our usual routine.

Well, my mother, she called a couple of times but she never came to see us. She said she will come today. She sent me some cash every week, enough to buy almost everything Naomi and I will need.

I didn't buy anything since Mam'Shirley and sesi Nyeleti went out of their way to buy my baby everything she needs. I was even beyond shocked to see the prices of the things that they bought, they were beyond too much for me. They both advice me to save the money that my mother send me, just in case. I'm supposed to go town with Sesi Nyeleti to open a fixed account and to buy some groceries for my flat, because I'm not about to let my mother

find out that I have been staying with someone else.

Buti Thabiso borrowed us his car to use for the day as we please. He is such a gentleman. He always go out of his way to give his girlfriend all she needs. Their love is so vivid and out there, sometimes I envy her.

Nyeleti: "Lisa are you done? Me and Naomi we are done. Hurry up, you know your mom might just show up here any minute."

Me: "I'm almost done. Did you see my breast pads?"

Nyeleti: "They are in the drawer, be quick man."

Me: "I'm coming, relax. And you know how much Naomi hates noise, she will start screaming her lungs out now and I'm not going to pick her up."

Nyeleti: "If only you were not taking so much time, you will find us in the car. I want to try out her car seat and see if she will be comfortable."

Me: "Okay, I'm right behind you."

I finished dressing up and I took Naomi's diaper bag and went to the car. Sesi Nyeleti was trying to put her in the car seat but she was not having all of that, and this is all her fault. Every time I tell her not to pick her up but does she listen? No, she just love carrying her and playing with now she doesn't want to sit on her own.

Nyeleti: "You will have to carry, she is not having it today."

Me: "I hate to say this, but I told you so."

Nyeleti: "She is just a baby Lisa, she is aunt's baby, come on now, let's get going."

We got in the car and drove to the mall, my mom will probably be here in the in the afternoon, Mokopane to Lephalale is probably 2 hours drive.

We got to the mall and did all that needed to be

done, and we bought groceries too. My baby was such a good girl. We bought takeaways and went home.

She helped clean my flat, and we set up the other room and we moved all Naomi's things back in my flat. It wasn't a lot of things, just her clothes, cot and all other baby stuffs.

Mam'Shirley passed by the house to see us, and she bought also bought Naomi toys as she always bring something for us. She didn't stay long as she was going to work.

Later in the evening mama came, I cooked for us and sesi Nyeleti went to pick buti Thabiso at work.

Mama: "How are you baby?" She hugged me.
Awkward!

Me: "I'm fine and you?"

Mama: "I'm good, I'm sorry I couldn't be here earlier. There was a lot of problems at the farm." Problems were more important than me? Wow, so much of having a mother shame.

Me: "I understand. Should I dish up for you?" Do I really understand or I'm just avoiding to fight with? Mxm

Mama: "I want to see my granddaughter first. Where is she?"

Me: "She is sleeping."

Mama: "Oh, well then I will eat first. I see you have been taking good care of this place."

Me: "Is not like I had anything to do." I mumbled and went to the kitchen to dish up for her. Her presence is so heavy for me. I don't know but I have lost touch with a woman I call my mother. I don't know why she finds everything normal. She hasn't been here since I gave birth and yet she shows up like nothing happened, what kind of a mother is this?

"Lord help me to be the best mother my daughter will ever have. I don't want her to go through the

same hell I went through the hell I am going through" I said to myself as I dished up for her.

I gave her food and we sat in front of the TV quietly. We were like two strangers in the room and she found nothing wrong with that by the look on her face. She looked very unbothered. I miss those days when she was still my best friend. She used to do my hair, baking together every Saturday morning. The farm has always been there but I have always been a priority. She will make sure that she dedicate her weekends to me.

She did everything for me, but most importantly she was there for me. But now? Everything went down the drain, I'm only left with what if's, I'm only left with memories that haunt me. I'm trying so hard to suppress all those memories but I can't, I want to know what happened to us, what really went down with us? Is this because of me being pregnant?

Me: "Mama, what happened to us?" I blindly asked with my eyes still focused on the TV.

Mama: "What do you mean?"

Me: "You are so distant, is me falling pregnant making you this distant? Am I the cause of our relationship to fall like this?" She placed the plate on the coffee table and wiped her hands. I could slowly see the smile getting wiped by sadness or anger, I can't read emotions well but what I saw was exactly what I saw the day I told her that I'm pregnant.

Mama: "Palesa, you will never understand."

Me: "Make me understand mama because this way more than my pregnancy. Everything started falling apart when I found papa beating you the other day. Ever since that day you changed, you never had time for me, yes I was young but I knew that ever since that day you became bitter, you resented me and my pregnancy fueled up the anger. Am I not your child? You can tell me, I promise I will not be angry.. "

Mama: "Palesa stop it, okay, stop it, you know

nothing. You are just a child and you will never understand okay. "

She was crying, I don't know when last did I see this woman crying. I think that should be when I was 7, that was the day I saw papa hitting her, but I have never asked her anything. We pretended like nothing had happened. I don't know if papa is abusing her or what but since that day I have never seen her with bruises or anything, they were a happy couple. So I don't want to speculate.

Me: "I'm sorry, I didn't mean to upset you."

Mama: "It's okay, but stop speculating things, you are my daughter and I love you so much, if I have to move mountains for you I will do that with no shame, but some of the things you will never understand. I'm sorry for being hard and harsh on you lately, maybe I expected too much from you and I never really gave you my attention. I just want what's best for you and having a child now, being judged by the community, people at church, that

can lead you to suicide. Look at what happened to MaMaluleka's child, she killed herself after giving birth, you know why?

Because the ladies at church are ruthless Palesa, very ruthless, behind those beautiful two pieces and big hats, lies cold hearted people, the words that comes out of their mouths no child deserves to hear them. Many kids don't come to church because of those ladies. And I didn't want you to go through that, yes I might have come across harsh but I did that out of love, even now I'm still going to do it again and again, you need to pack for Naomi, I'm leaving with her day after tomorrow then you will come back home after two weeks or 3."

Me:" No, mama you can't take her away, she is my baby, my child, she is not going anywhere with you."
"

Mama:" Palesa, please don't make this any harder than it is. We will pretend like we have adobted her

and that is it. Your father and spoke about this. "

Me: "But Naomi is my child, she is my baby. I will take care of her. We will move out if we have to."

Mama: "And go where? You can't even take care of yourself. I'm doing the best I could to avoid the situation at hand, this is the only solution we have, unless you want those women to drive you to kill yourself and unfortunately I'm not ready to loose my child because of those women whereas we can avoid the situation at hand. Work with me. Is not like you will be separated with her, you will still look after her. "

Me:" I took care of myself while you neglected me here, and I can and I will take care of her, you can't expect me to be away from her for 3 weeks, 3 weeks mama, you can do that, but I can't. Naomi has been my place of sanity while you and papa abounden me here, you left me here, in the middle of no way all by myself, you didn't even care to call to check up on me. I know I have made a mistake but I didn't ask to be raped by a pastor's child who you are protecting yet you fail to believe me, your

one and only child. I went in labor all by myself, where were you? I called you and you ignored me. I needed you but you were not there. I know falling pregnant out of wedlock wasn't part of your plans for me, but it happened and I'm owning up for my mistakes but that doesn't give you a right to punish me forever. I don't care about your church women story, you might have made up all that story so you can take my child away from me. I'm not going to allow you to do that, never. You are not taking her. "

I left her and went to the bedroom with all tears streaming down my face. She can't just come here and take my child, no, I refuse. She is my child, my mistake if need to be called but I'm not going to let her go.

[03/12, 15:18] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 6

Mercy Mashugane

I went to visit Wisdom at his house today. His mother went to prayer meeting with those gossiping women including her. Now I understand why my mom was never interested in women prayer meeting, she only goes to church during services. She used to tell us about how those women gossip about people and stories they have, they will make you hate church.

Wisdom's father hasn't been around, he went to pastor's camp in Bela Bela last weekend, I think he will be coming back somewhere next week.

We were seated in the kitchen, actually I was sitting down and ge was making sandwiches for us.

Me: "You know babe, I have been worried sick about Ella, she is so distant these days. There is just

something wrong that I just can't put my finger on."

Wisdom: "Who is Ella again? And why worry about someone who obviously doesn't care, I mean if she cared and seen you as friend, she would've come straight to you as friend." He handed me my plate.

Me: "Mxm, don't act like you don't know Ella, come Wizzy, the girl who always led worship team. Your best vocalist?"

Wisdom: "Oh Pales a? I didn't know her other name is Ella. Where is she? I haven't seen her in a while."

Me: "You didn't hear?"

Wisdom: "Hear what?"

Me: "Apparently she has a prostate cancer."

Wisdom: "What? She is a man? I mean does she have balls? Like real balls like men?"

I aughed and he always released the laughter was holding in.

Me: "I don't know dude. That's what her mother told me. I tried to confront her and she nearly bit my head off."

Wisdom: "Wow, is her mother literate?"

Me: "I don't know, but why lie? I wonder what's wrong with her. I'm very worried about her."

Wisdom: "Maybe is best that the girl left, I mean I didn't like her. I was only tolerating her because her mother is an elder at church, but I can't wait for her to come back so I can properly laugh at her do the fact that she had balls like me. I can't wait to see them" He gave me a mischievous smile.

Me: "You will never do that to my friend, she is my best friend and I love her. I just need to make her comfortable enough to talk to me."

Wisdom: "Whatever makes you happy babes, I was just letting you know how I feel nje. So, I'm going to varsity next year, we'll in a couple of months. So, how are we gonna make our relationship work?" He was standing in between my legs with his hands on my shoulders.

Me:" I don't know, I still have a long way before I even go to varsity, what I know is I love you and my love is enough for me to wait for you, I don't mind to

wait for but the question is are you willing to wait for me?"

Wisdom: "It's going to be hard but I'm willing to wait, I love you Mercy and that is why I decided to go to UL, they accepted my application. I'm no longer going to Wits and you know what that means?" I shook my head no and he whispered in my ear.

Me: "What does it mean?".

Wisdom: "It means that you babe, will visit me anytime. I will be far away from this place we will have our own privacy....He sent shivers down my spine as he continue to whisper and slightly bite my earlobe..."

Wisdom: "How about we take this to my room, I want to show you how much you mean to me." He locked my cheeks,

Me: "Let's go." I said nervously so....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I don't know how I'm feeling, I'm mad, I'm angry and I'm heart broken. This morning mama left with my baby. They left early in the morning because she wanted to attend prayer at church. My heart was beyond shattered. It all felt like my heart was ripped off my chest. My sense of being is taken away from me. My life was taken away and being told that she will call me sesi, made things worse. Why does she have to call me sesi because I'm her mother?

Nyeleti: "Take this, it will help you to sleep."

Me: "I don't want to sleep sesi Nyeleti, I want my baby."

Nyeleti: "I know but you need to rest so that your mind will function well. Naomi needs a mother with a clear mind please baby. Be strong for her. Don't allow this to break you."

Me: "Why is she so heartless? I hate her, I hate her so much."

Nyeleti: "Oh Lele, askies Nana, come." She cupped me into her arms and let me cry my heart out....

Nomzamo Annah Motaung

Seeing Palesa cry like that really broke my heart. I know most people will say I'm a terrible mother, then let it be. The fact is I will never allow William to kill my child while I'm still alive. William is not a kind man as many sees him. I have endured so much abuse, physical and emotional abuse from and I won't allow him to do that to my child.

Is no lie that he neve really loved Palesa because he wanted a boy instead of a girl and from that day I became his punching bag. The reason why Palesa has never heard me cry is because I no longer cry loud. I didn't want her to hate his father because of a monster he is to me.

After I gave birth to Palesa, I had two miscarriages because of stress. When he realized that I can't give

conceive anymore, he made it a point that he release all his stress on me. Some days are better than others, now I'm even used to being his punching bag. He beat me up when we found out that Palesa is pregnant, the very same day we drove to the farm house and he did number one on me.

He told me that if I dare act soft with Palesa he will make sure that he kills her because he doesn't like her. I wanted to be there for her but his father won't allow me to be. He threaten to cut us both financially if I dare run away with her. Behind this beautiful make up I always wear, lies bruises.

Lele was right, when she was 7 years old, she indeed saw me, when her father was beating me up. That was the day of my miseries. From that day everything changed, there was a time I used to hate her because her father was beating me because of her, but I would rather suffer it all than to see her suffer. I know she is a string girl, she will pull

through, I'm just waiting for the day she turns eighteen, there's money that I have been saving up for her to go school and it will only be released then, she will have to move out and go and start somewhere else afresh. One thing I made a promise to is to love her and her child. I will make sure I spend the rest of my dying days protecting them. I want what's best for them. I want them to have a good life. For the past few months I have been saving up for my granddaughter. I want her to have the best of everything.

I parked at the gate and got out, Naomi has been sleeping all the way until we got home. I want to go to church because we are having women prayer. And again that's a place I hate, simply because Wisdom raped my child, I know Lele will never lie but who am I to go against her father. I was beaten for a fact that "she lied". My husband worship the group the Mofokeng walks on. To them there's no wrong done, to them they are the perfect family, hence he didn't want us to go and lay charges

against Wisdom.

I got home inside the house and I found him making food in the kitchen.

Me: "Motaung."

William: "That's the trash you went to fetch? Where is that good for nothing daughter of yours?"

Me: "I left her, as you suggested papa."

William: "Good, then she needs to go and get a job because I seriously won't feed two mouths. She made a choice of not going to school and she will have to work since she decided to be a woman."

Me: "Aowa Papa, Palesa ke ngwana, she must go back to school, beside ke Wisdom who raped her, she didn't ask for..." He hit me on my face. I was still carrying Naomi, I don't have time to cry because my tears will just anger him and make him to beat me even more.

William: "If I ever hear you say that again, I won't hesitate to beat the truth out of you. Put that thing

in the bedroom and come cook meat for me."

Me: "Okay papa." I went to put Naomi down in her room. I prepared a room for her, at least my husband wasn't against that I mean he won't even want to sleep in the same room with her

I called Palesa before I went back to the kitchen and she answered after some time.

Me: "How are you baby?"

Lele: "How do you expect me to be okay after you took her mama?"

Me: "I'm sorry baby, it is for the best. Maybe we can come and visit you on weekend, how is that?" I swallowed hard as my tears were streaming down my cheeks. I could hear the pain in her voice, she didn't even hide her tears and that was paining me.

Lele: "Mama I just want my baby, is that too much to ask?"

Me: "N... No, it's not..."

William:" Ye wena Annah if you want me to get another wife continue to stay in that room, don't you dare make me angry. " my husband interrupted me.

Me:" I have to go Nana.. "

Lele:" Mama are you crying? Why is papa shouting?"

Me:" It's nothing I can't handle, I have to go. I will call you later and maybe send you pictures of Naomi when she wear her new clothes that I bought her"

Lele: "Mama is papa beating you? Is he abusing you?"

Me: "I love you baby, bye." I cut the line, as I silently cry.

William: "Who were you talking to?"

Me: "No one important." He startled me, i didn't expect me.

William: "So you are hiding things from me now? Huh?" He charged towards me and slapped me across my face without thinking twice and pulled

me down and began to kick me swearing at me.

William: "You are even cheating on me. This what you teach that shameless useless daughter if yours. You taught her to lie about people raping her kante wa feba with older man. Who knows this bastard of a child is an elder man's child?" He took my phone and threw it across the room.

And walked towards Naomi's cot.

Me:" Papa please leave her, she is just an innocent child. She did nothing wrong please, leave her alone, rather beat me papa, leave her hle monna wa ka? "

He took her out of the cot, recklessly, my heart stopped beating for a second if not a minute. I ran towards him and I support Naomi's neck and she was crying because I think he hurt her. I tried to take her slowly but gently from him. He finally allowed me to take her but that didn't end well for me. He pushed me towards the wall and I held Naomi closed to my breast, I will rather die than to let him kill her. He was shouting and swearing...

[03/12, 15:19] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 7

Palesa Ella Motaung

3 weeks later

My mother came to fetch me today with Naomi. She wasn't looking so well. Her eyes had eye bags and her make-up wasn't on point like always, but hey, I will never ask because they will cut my head off. I'm just happy that she came with my daughter, who will be calling me sesi when she grows up, how twisted is that? At least she allowed sesi Nyeleti to see her before we leave. I promised her that we will come visit her sometimes. I was seated at the back with Naomi, I missed her so much, she looked very grown up and chubby. My mom was indeed taking good care of her.

Mama: "She also missed you." She checked us via the rear mirror. I just smiled.

Mama: "Lele, I'm sorry." Okay, what is she sorry for because there are so many things that she did that I fail to count. Which one are you sorry for?

Me: "Sorry for what mama?" She made a turn at Elirus mall.

Mama: "Let's go get something to eat before we go home."

She parked the car and we went in and she picked a restaurant and we went to settle down.

Mama: "You can order anything you want." She tried to smile but her smile wasn't convincing.

Me: "Thank you." We placed our orders and we settled down quietly.

Mama: "You now I wasn't going to take her away

from you. Daddy forced me to come and take her and I didn't have much of a choice."

Me: "I understand." It was useless for me to ask further questions because whatever papa says goes. So, I know indeed that he forced her to come and take her and beside they didn't want people to know that she is indeed my child.

Mama: "I'm sorry that I failed you ngwanaka, I know many of my decisions are questionable but I'm doing everything for you."

Me: "How is you doing everything for me hurting me? I don't understand mama, everything you and papa are doing is hurting me and yet you say you are doing it for me. How is that possible? I don't understand."

Mama: "Lele, you will never understand, and I don't want you to hate your Father because of the decisions I make. I believe you when you say Wisdom raped you. I know you will never lie." My heart sank.

Me: "You believe me? What changed your mind now?"

What made you to have second thoughts?" Tears were welling up in my eyes.

Mama: "Hence I said you will never understand. Maybe one day when you get older you will understand. Right now, I want you to do me a favor. I'm going to talk to daddy so you can go back to school. Please make me proud."

There we go changing the subject as always.

Me:" Maybe that's is the reason mama, you think I'm young, I will never understand, try me. Try me, maybe I will understand. My priorities changed the day I gave birth to Naomi mama, now I am a mother, and I don't want Naomi to go through what I went through as her mother. Maybe if you open up to me, I will understand. Is papa beating you Mama? "

Mama:" What are you talking about? Your father will never lay his hand on me. "

Me:" Then what is it?"

Mama:" Lele, just know that I'm doing every thing for you. J ust promise me that you will go to school. Promise me that no matter what happens will you

will go to school and make something out of your life, if not for me, please do it for Naomi. "

Me:" I promise, but what's really going on mama? "

Mama:" Nothing, eat up so we can go we don't want to arrive home late, maybe Mercy miss you. "

I ate, and she bought take away and we left. I don't know if I'm over thinking or what but something is not adding up here. What is really going on at home? I know my father is not a Saint, he is very ruthless if not heartless, I have seen how he treats workers at the farm, one mistake you are fired or your salary is being cut. My mother has been the yes sir no sir kind of a woman. Maybe the fact that my mother doesn't have any close relatives. I don't even know her parents and I don't even know where is she from. She just said her parents died when she was young and her uncle's took over her parents house and that's it. I don't know any sister from her side beside Mamogolo Sana, but they are not blood related siblings, she is her aunt's child something

like that and that's it.

We arrived home 6pm. Papa was in the kitchen, I don't know if he was trying to burn down the kitchen or what.

Papa: "Finally, what took you so long?"

Mama: "There was traffic coming this side, I mean it's Sunday and people are going back to work."

Me: "Dumelang papa." He just looked at me and ignore me.

Papa: "How is my angel doing?" He took Naomi from mama and walked to the dining room with her.

Papa: "What did you buy in there, please dish up for me, I'm starving."

Mama: "Okay papa."

Mama looked at me pitifully.

Mama: "Just ignore him, take your bags to your room. Naomi's room is next to yours." As if that will make me feel any better.

I took my bags to the bedroom while she made food for her grumpy husband.

I called Mercy.

Me: "Hey stranger."

Mercy: "Mokgotse, how are you? Sorry I haven't called in a long time. How are you feeling?"

Me: "I'm back home.."

Wisdom: "Babe hurry up, I'm waiting for you. "

Me: "Who is that? "

Mercy: "Mokgotse, eish, ke Wizzy, I will call you back. Bye. " She hanged up the line. Wow.

So vele she is dating that good for nothing boy? Wow, that hurts, i never really thought that their relationship will last. I thought was just a fling...

Anyway the following morning I woke up early, I

helped Mma'Nakedi to clean up, she is a woman of few words. She doesn't love drama. She always does her job and when done she leaves unless asked otherwise. My father doesn't want any woman cook for him expect for his wife. So, there's no need for her to stay the whole day, unless the rules changed when I was gone.

Naomi woke up and I changed her and gave her bottle, as I found Mma'Nakedi made them. That's their routine, she wakes up and changes her before feeding her and when is bit warm she bath her. At least they don't give her solid food as Mma'Shirley advised me.

Mma'Nakedi: "It's good to have you back hey. I missed you."

Me: "I also missed you too mma."

Mma'Nakedi: "Yah, cancer is very dangerous but we thank God you survived, go and buy bread while I feed this one. At least you won't be lonely anymore,

you have someone to keep you on the toe. Your parents are really good people."

I just nodded and took the money she gave me to go and buy bread.

I went to the shop and found Wisdom there too. I immediately got disgusted by him. I really hate him for what he did. I was behind him as he was paying. When he turned he saw me and he laughed. I payed and walked out and he followed me.

Wisdom: "I heard you had a prostate cancer, I didn't know you had balls like me. That day I banged a man?"

Me: "Oh, so now you agree that you banged me but when I told you that I'm pregnant you denied it?"

Wisdom: "Hey watch it, I will never impragnate an ugly fat thing like you. I was careful. I did cum inside you."

Me: "It's fine I will tell my parents that you said you

didn't cum inside me." I tried to walk away but he roughly pulled me.

Wisdom: "You wouldn't dare do that, beside who will ever believe you? And where is the child to prove that I slept with you? Girl please don't embarrass yourself. I will tell the whole community that you are claiming that you slept with me and between you and I who will they believe? And for your sake, I hope you will never tell your friend that."

Me:" You are so evil Wisdom, you are so cruel and I hope you will rot in hell. One day God will punish you for denying your child I tell you. Go ahead and be happy but don't be happy with my tears, one day they will be tears of joy for me and you will be crying. Don't forget that this life is like a wheel, one day you up one day you are down. You will be sorry for raping me and denying your child I tell you. "

Wisdom:" Keep dreaming, I will never feel sorry for you. You see very well that I have a bright future ahead of me and you want to trap me with a child you don't know who is hi/her father? For crying out loud, you were never pregnant, how can a man be

pregnant? You mother said you had prostate cancer, so you now want me to believe that you were pregnant? Come on bitch, stop being obsessed with me. Go and find your kind out there and let me. Imagine me having a child with a girl like you? What will people say? Geez. " He spit on my face and walked away.

I sat down in the middle of the road and cried. God why are you letting this to happen to me? What did I ever do to you to deserve this? Why am I here if all my life will be pain?

[03/12, 15:19] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 8

Years later

It's Friday afternoon, I just came back from picking

up Naomi from bus stop. She loves talking. We have been talking about her school since she got off the school bus. Things at home have been little tense. Ever since mama was admitted at the hospital papa doesn't want us to go and visit her. I don't know what really happened to her. She wasn't sick, not anything I know off.

Naomi: "Sesi Ella when is mama coming back?" She dropped her backpack on the floor and ran to the kitchen as always. Yes she calls me sesi, papa made it clear that she will never call me mama and he made sure that they both keep her away from me as much as possible.

After her birth a year later they sent me to a boarding school in Settlers, girl's only school. I only came home on school holidays. After passing my matrix, I stayed home. My dad made it clear that now is time for Naomi to go to nest school, is either she goes to school and I don't or vice-versa.

I work at McDonald's just in town. It's not far from home. It's a walking distance and I have made peace with it. I have made peace with the fact that I will never go to school. Mama has been trying hard to stand up for me everytime papa will get angry with me, but those moments were short lived.

Naomi is the trophy of this House, which I honestly don't mind at all, I'm just happy that she is greeting everything I never got. It is so hard to ignore the fact that she is Turing up to look like her father each and everyday and papa is blindly ignoring that.

Mercy and Wisdom are getting married in two weeks, I'm her maid of honor. I seriously came to acknowledge their relationship. It has been giving me panic attacks but I seriously no longer care, well maybe I do a little. All I wanted was for Wisdom to acknowledge the fact that Nomi is his child, that's all, I never really wanted him to be there but just to acknowledge nje. But anyway I guess I'm too ugly for him. Being plus size ain't easy when people with

petite bodies are always the only people seen as beautiful in this world. Confidence has never been part of my life, especially after I had a child. I managed to hide my scars pretty well. Even at school, I was never comfortable getting naked around other girls. I wasn't really bullied but just seeing how other girls were so comfortable in their own bodies maybe it was kind of bullying me everyday in my mind.

Me: "I don't know when she is coming back sweetie, maybe a little bit later, you want me to make you food?" Ella is 10 years old now, very bright and intelligent girl. She always speak her mind and my father adores her more than me. I'm 25 years old now, I have been saving money to study, but I haven't told anyone yet. I applied early this and my application was approved and I'm just waiting to register, is just that Mercy's wedding three me off the budget a little bit, but I will get back up soon. I'm also planning to get my own place soon but I don't want overload myself, one step at the time. I just

want to see myself out of this place.

Naomi: "Bread, butter and jam please. Where is papa?"

I shrugged my shoulders as I opened the bread bin to make bread for her as per her request.

Me: "Take off your school uniform, and put everything in the basket. Do you have any homework?"

Naomi: "Already done it at school, you just have to check it."

Me: "Good girl, high five." She gave me a high five and ran to the bedroom my phone rang. It was mama.

Me: "Mama, where are you?"

Mama: "Ella listen, I need you to come to the hospital now, your dad went to Johannesburg for some meetings he will be back tomorrow in the afternoon. Please hurry up."

Me: "Why are you at the hospital?"

Mama: "Just come Ella please."

Me: "What about Naomi?"

Mama: "Ask Mercy to watch her for few hours please."

Me: "Okay sharp."

She hanged up and I immediately called Mercy, our relationship hasn't been real good, sometimes I just feel like we are forcing things. She graduated recently with a finance degree and Wisdom is a lawyer, you know when your friends treat you like you haven't made it in life? Yeah, that's how it is. She has a car that Wisdom bought for her on her birthday. I don't know what other things he does on the side but it seems like life is all set and good for the.

Wisdom's parents bought them a house in Sterpark, we had Mercy's bridal shower there recently as they were also officially opening the house. It is beautiful

shame, yerr, they will be moving in immediately after their wedding. She even has new friends, she and Oratile(Wisdom's sister) are beasties, they do everything together. I know the reason she asked me to be her maid of Honour was simply because she wanted to see if I will afford the clothes and everything. The clothes are very expensive if you ask me. Plus she wants us to buy wigs and all those things.

Me: "Baby finish up quickly, I'm going to see mama at the hospital. I want you to be a good girl for me. I'm going to call Mmane'Nthabi to come and babysit you."

Naomi: "But I'm not a small baby, I can take care of myself, and I can even go with you to the hospital. I want to see mama."

Me: "No, you can't come with me. I'm going to call Nathabi."

I rushed out and went to call Nthabiseng, my

neighbor, as much as she loves to gossip, she came through for me on couple of times much more than Mercy has ever been there.

Me: "Nthabiseng, o busy?"

Nthabi: "No girl, I was about to cook. What's wrong?"

Me: "Can you please watch Naomi for me? I have to rush somewhere."

Nthabi: "Where is your friend Mercy kante? Shouldn't she be the one babysitting?"

Me: "Hai marn, I'm sure she is busy with preparations for her wedding."

Nthabi: "Okay, but tell me here Lele, why do still stuck around with that girl when she bad mouth you so bad? Do you know that she was telling people the other day at church that you were spreading lies that you claim that Wisdom raped you?"

Me: "What? Did she say that?"

Nthabi: "Girl, I might be too many things but I'm not

a liar, I was there that day when she was saying all those nonses. Ever since she got engaged into that family she changed and if I were you, I would watch my back because is not everyone you call your friend who loves you. Stay away from her because it's obvious she has tendencies of Mofoleng people now. "

Me:" Wow, okay thanks for the heads up girl. Let me rush, please come. "

Nthabi:" I'm coming, I hope you cooked because I'm hungry."

Me:" I didn't cook, you will make something for yourself. Where is Nomsa? "

Nthabi:" Probably at her boyfriend's place. "

She came around and I left. I took a taxi to the hospital and arrived minutes later. I went to her ward after asking around.

I was shocked to see her, her face was full of

bruises and her lips was cracked. She even had a blue eye.

Me:" Mama, what happened?"

Mama: "I'm fine, how are you and how is Naomi?"

Me: "What do you mean you are fine? Have you seen yourself? Mama why are you still staying with this man? It's obvious that he doesn't love you."

Mama: "I would rather stay and suffer and watch you and Naomi suffer Lele. Look, your father found out the money I was saving up for you in the fixed account and he went mad. I want you to do me a favor now, there's a bank card under the matras s in our bedroom. Please go withdraw everything in it and put it in your account. Use the money to register and pay up the other things for Mercy's wedding and throw the card if possible. When he comes back he is going to check everything. "

Me:" How much is in the bank account? Mama what if he comes back and hit you again? Mama we really need to leave please. "

Mama:" It's enough to pay for your fees this year, I will figure something out next year. Lele we can't leave, Naomi's school fees is paid by him. I can't afford to pay the school fees and how will we survive out there? "

Me:" I'm working, I will find another job, we will survive, Naomi will go to public school, come on mama your life is more important. "

Mama:" I know, but your well-being and Naomi's well-being is more important to me. Just do as I say and don't worry about me. I will be fine." I couldn't even hide my tears anymore. Why is she putting herself through this hell?

Me: "No, mama what will happen when he comes back? He might beat me up or Naomi."

Mama: "He will never touch you as long as I'm alive. He will have to go through me first. Don't worry. Go now, one of his boys might find you here and I don't want that to happen."

Me: "Promise me that you will take care of yourself."

Mama: "I will. Go Lele. I love you baby."

Me: "I love you too." I kissed her forehead and she groaned in pain.

I left and went home. I really need to help mama out of this, papa can't continue to beat her like this. This is too much for her.

Lord give me strength to help her through this because it can't continue like this.

"We are meeting later on for rehearsal dinner. I expect you to be there as my maid of honor."

A message from Mercy came in.

Damn this girl is really testing me shame....yerr

[03/12, 15:19] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 9

Mercy Mashugane

Oratile: "Did she respond?" She placed the glasses on the table as we were preparing the table.

Me: "Not yet, hopefully she will come, but Oratile, why are we doing this to Lele? She has been nothing but good to me. She doesn't deserve all this."

Oratile: "Says who? Do you know that your so called friend accused my brother of raping her? Do you know she accused your husband to be of raping her and impregnation her?" She passed me the under plates.

Me: "Even so, who told you all those things? I mean Palesa is many thing but a liar? No, and Wisdom has never confirmed all this accusations you are making to me. He has never said anything to me about this."

Ruth: "If I were you I will keep my friends out of my

marriage. That girl once came here years ago and demanded to speak to Wisdom. I may not know what they were talking about, but it's wasn't good. Oratile is telling the truth." My mother in law placed the glasses on the table. These people are just confusing me even more. Why had Wisdom never said anything about all this?

Oratile:" And the very same day I found them arguing by the gate. I know she wanted Wizzy to agree on something but he didn't and he asked her to leave before she embarrass herself. Don't you know that your friend had a silly crush on Wisdom? Those years after choir practices she will stay behind with Wisdom to help him pack the instrument? Do you think any girl in her right state of mind will do that without getting anything to benefit from? She was fascinated by the fact that she could sing and Wisdom liked her vocals. She had a crush on Wisdom. "

Me:" Stop it, okay. I know Lele, I know she will never do that to me. She could've told me if she had a

crush on Wisdom. She used to tell me everything. "

Oratile:" You are right, she used to tell you everything, then what happened? Look Mercy, I like you very much, especially as my sister in law and my brother's wife to be, but if I were you, I will make sure that I keep that girl far away from me. She is nothing but trouble. And you don't deserve friends like her in your life. I mean she is not even educated, she is not in your league anymore."

I took a deep breath. This is just too much to swallow. We finished setting the table and I went to bath in the guest room. We left everything for the caterers and decor people to finish up. Me and wisdom we are not allowed to share a room according to his parents, it's not like I'm a virgin. He broke my virginity when I was only fifteen years old and I used to visit him a lot when he was staying at Turf. And we moved in together when I went to joburg and he was serving his articles Cele-Mankoe law firm in J oburg.

I finished bathing and I wore my elegant navy blue evening dress with sparkles. My make up artist came to do her things, this is all my mother in law's idea. I mean I just had my bridal shower few weeks ago, now this rehearsal dinner. Wisdom will be here any moment from now on. He went to get his hair cut and fetch my family.

He came in when I was still doing final touches.

Wisdom: "Wifey to be. How are you?" He kissed me on the cheek.

Me: "Hey babe. I'm good and you? Is everyone here?"

Wisdom: "I'm good sweetheart. Yes everyone is downstairs waiting for us. You look so beautiful and sexy in that. I can eat you up right now." I tried to blush but I couldn't hide the hurt in my heart. Today has been very eventful and I seriously don't look

forward to this dinner at all. Not after what Oratile told me.

Wisdom: "Are you okay? "

Me: "Yah, I'm fine. Why wouldn't I be? " He lifted my chin with his index finger.

Wisdom: "Talk to me. You know I don't like it when you are like this. What's wrong? Talk to daddy."

Me: "Is it true that you and Lele had a thing going in the past?"

Wisdom: "What? Hell no, who told you all those shit?"

Me: "Wisdom please be honest with me."

Wisdom: "Baby listen, you have to trust me. Yes, your friend had a thing for me back in those days but my eyes were only on you, hence I never entertained it. She came here the other day and declared my love for me but baby because I loved you so much and I didn't want to ruin your friendship with her. I know how much you love her

and I still wanted you guys to keep your friendship. " What? So that explain why Lele was never thrilled when I told her about my relationship with Wisdom. So why didn't she come to me and tell me about it? She could've come and told me as her friend. Didn't she trust me enough with this? Wow.

Me:" So, what about the rape accusations? Rumor say she has been accusing you of raping her and impregnating her."

Wisdom: "Like you said, those are just rumors babe, please don't take everything everyone is saying to the head. Trust me. Yes she accused me but I decided to be a big guy and not entertain it and for your relationship with her's sake I decided to keep quiet."

Me: "Okay I'm sorry."

Wisdom: "If keeping this friend of yours in our lives is going to mess our lives we need to cut her off period."

Me: "Lele is my only friend but this? Hay, I don't k

ow anymore. I will have to confront her. I can't keep friends like this in my life."

Wisdom: "No baby, let's rather focus on our wedding and we will deal with everything after our wedding. Maybe she is just jealous. She will get over it. Let her be."

Me: "But she is my maid of honor, I need to iron things with her because I seriously can't have a friend who is seeing my husband in a different eye."

Wisdom: "Okay, do you babe. Finish up our guests are waiting for us downstairs." He kissed my forehead.

I finished up and we went downstairs everything was set perfectly in the garden. It wasn't much just huge table set in the middle of Mofekeng's garden with spot light hanging by the wall fence making everything to look so perfect. People were arriving all in their beautiful dresses and tuxedo's...

Palesa Ella Motaung

I got home late around seven because of the stop I needed to make at the bank, I deposited the whole R70 000 into my bank account. I will have to go and deposit R38 000 into my school account to pay my tuition fee. I still wondered where mama got all this money but she had enough now, right now I just have to do as she asked me.

Me: "Thank you so much Nthabi for looking after her."

Nthabi: "It's not a train's smash makhi. We cooked. I hope you don't mind. She was hungry."

Me: "No, I don't mind at all. Thank you. Now I have to go to Mofokeng residence. Mercy said they are having a rehearsal dinner. What is that?"

Nthabi: "Hai girl, I don't know what that is. Isn't it a white kind of things?"

Me: "I don't know, is she sleeping?"

Nthabi: "Yes, you can go and bath, I will look after her until you come back from your friend's place."

Me: "Are you sure?"

Nthabi: "Go before I change my mind."

Me: "Thank you so much Nthabi, I owe you big time."

Nthabi: "You owe me data. That's all I need."

Me: "I will recharge you tomorrow."

She laughed. I went to take a quick shower and wore my olive green long dress and sandals. Decent enough for dinner I think. I tightened my braids. Me and make we are not friends, maybe is because I didn't own a single make up item nje. I finished and Nthabi accompanied me and turn just when we were approaching Wisdom's house.

I walked to the gate and it just opened without me buzzing the intercom. People has nice life problems i tell you. Even up to this day, I don't know what this

people are doing for a living besides being pastors. Who can ever ask, but at least now Wisdom is a lawyer and his little sister is said to be studying to be a dentist, I don't know and I seriously don't care. This family is just full of themselves nje.

I got in and everyone was dress to kill, I think I was the only person who was under dressed for the occasion. There were ushers at the main entrance who ushered me to the garden that was buzzing with people and lights, soft music playing in the background.

Most people here were from church, and some were Oratile's fake friends and Mercy's new friends and some girls we went to school with.

Mercy: "Friend, so fancy seeing you here. I didn't think you come." She gave me a fake smile. I might not know many things but I know fake things when I see them. Fer face painted with all that muddy make

up looking all dolled up.

Me: "Why would I miss this big night for my friend? I am your maid of honor right?"

Mercy: "Maid of honor who fantasize about my husband behind my back." She whispered but I heard her.

Me: "Excuse me?"

Mercy: "You are excused, make yourself comfortable but not near my man please and tomorrow we are going for cake tasting." Wow, so this is what Nthabi was saying, it's obvious that I'm the main topic around here when I'm not there and what's even worse I'm seen as the bad person and the person who should be a man enough to stand his ground doesn't even have balls to tell his wife to be what he did to me.

Me: "I won't be available tomorrow, maybe you should ask your sister in law to accompany you."

Mercy: "It is your maid of honor's responsibility to be there not Oratile's responsibility."

Me: "So, it's my responsibility only when it suits you? Come out with it ausi because I see there is obviously something that is burning your chest. Rather take it out before it kills you."

Mercy: "What can possibly kill me Lele? I'm better than you in so many ways, I'm beautiful, sexy not a fat like you, I'm educated and intelligent." Her voice was little bit high, so it grabbed attention to people plus the music wasn't that loud.

Me: "Oh so that's what has been burning up your chest? So why am I being a threat to you since you are all that I am not? I mean you are beauty with brains and I'm just a nobody so? What must I do?"

Mercy: "You know what you are not even welcome here anymore, and you are no longer my maid of honor."

Me: "Thank you for making my life much more easier. And next time if you really have something to ask, ask me directly stop going around and listening to lies. I thought you were my friend, but I clearly see that it was all a lie. It's fine Mercy just

because you made it in life doesn't mean you should look down on other people. This life is rotating don't laugh at the people who are down on your way up sis, because one the very same people you are laughing, might be your only help. I wish you nothing but the best in your marriage and I hope Wisdom will treat you good. You two look so good together. If me not being at your wedding makes you feel better, it's fine, I won't come. I will always love you friend. Bye Mercy. "

You know the pain of saying goodbye to the only friendship you have? I felt my heart piercing into pieces all over again. I wiped my tears and walked out, people were taking videos and I couldn't careless. If me not being at her wedding because she feels threaten by me obviously.

I ran outside the gate at it automatically opened and I sat down outside to calm myself down because I felt my heart racing out of its normal heart

rate...anxiety attack was slowly kicking in.

"Calm down Palesa, breathe . Breathe baby, breathe ."
I said to myself....

[03/12, 15:19] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 10

Palesa Ella Motaung

I got home and I found Nthabi standing at the door looking so scared and frustrated.

Me: "Nthabi what's wrong? Why are you standing outside?" She rubbed hands together, trying so much to calm down and she was scaring me with each passing second.

Nthabi: "Your father is back and he was so furious

when he found me in the house and he began to shout and he kicked me out. He was so angry Lele, I tried to call you but you didn't answer your phone." Damn, I'm screwed. I'm done, I'm finished. Ground open up and swallow me right away please.

Me:" What? Where is his car? Where is he now? Is Naomi okay? "

Nthabi:" Naomi is still sleeping, I'm sure he parked in the garage, I was passed out on the couch. I'm sorry Lele."

Me: "It's okay. Thank you for coming through for me. I will take it from here. Let me accompany you home." I was actually trying to buy time to think of my next possible move because if I dare go inside that house without a proper plan or maybe a convincing lie, I will be damn screwed.

I walked her to her house which was not even enough distance for me to do much thinking. We didn't talk much on the way because my mind was racing and seeing how Nthabi is so scared really showed me how furious he is.

Nthabi: "Are you sure you will be okay? I mean you can come and sleep here with me, I'm sure my mother won't mind."

Me: "Nah, I will be fine. I will have to go and explain to my father what really happened and sleeping outside might make him more mad."

Nthabi: "Okay, call me then."

Me: "I will do. Thanks again. I will see you tomorrow." We hugged and she got in and I went back home.

See, Nthabiseng is 3 years older than me, same age as Wisdom. Everyone knows her as a gossipier in this Kasi because there's literally nothing she doesn't know about anyone. But I have realized that she is a good person behind all those things people see. She is not a friend's person. I have never seen her with friends, only her baby sister who is the same age as me.

She was doing short courses at a college in Town and now she works at Mr Price, she is a happy chilled person, easy going and she really has a good heart. Her family is good man, her mother is not a church person but she is a good woman. Greets everyone, and never had beef with her. She is a teacher at the local primary school. I don't know about her father, I have never seen or heard her talk about him.

I got home and I felt like I was running out of breath. I could literally hear myself breathing out loud as I step closer to the door. I tried to open the door and it was locked. I went to the garage door and luckily it wasn't locked. I got into the garage and took out the mat that we always put in this place and a blanket, we have many hanged on top of the curboard in here for visitors, we all know how we all have that in our houses. Blankets for visitors even though we hardly have visitors. Mama always made sure that she put them in a swart sack to avoid dust.

I don't know what papa is thinking but I have to sleep with one eye opened, for my sake. I might wake up to a painful morning. But who am I fooling, I didn't realize how tired I was until I dropped my head down on that mat. I just dozed off immediately and zoned into my peaceful land. How I wish I could live in dreamland, everything is peaceful there.

I woke up to a cold water splashing on my entire body. It didn't take me time to gasp what happened. I mean I know who is behind all that.

Papa: "Where were you last night." He unfasten his belt, I quickly stood up, I had no where to run to but I wasn't just going to stand there and do nothing. He made sure to close the door. The space is huge since mama's car is parked at the back of the house.

Me:" I went to Mercy's rehearsal dinner, hence I asked Nthabi to babysit Naomi."

Papa: "I went to Mercy's rehearsal dinner my foot. You let straat mate like that loose girl inside my house and to babysit my daughter while you are galavanting out there? You want to fall pregnant again? You want to shame me again Palesa." He stepped closer to me, slowly closing me at the corner.

Me:" No papa, I'm telling the truth.. "That didn't end well for me. He whipped me so hard with the belt. I felt each whip on my skin. Crying wasn't going to help me because that will give him more power and energy to whip my ass. I bit my lower to take it all in without making noise. I wouldn't want to wake Naomi up and to come and witness this.

Each whip was followed by the most painful words a parent can ever say to their child. I was told how useless I was. How he wish I wasn't born. How much he hates me. How ugly and fat I am. He was taking out all his anger on me. My tears finally Betrayed me when I realized that this was more then me not being home when he came. The words

are the one that broke my heart more. You see words has more power than the beating.

He made it look like it was my fault that I was born. He made it look like I disappointed him for being born. He finally got tired and he spat on my face like I was a disgusting disease or something. I tried to sit down but my entire body was very sore. I cried for my body hurting and for my heart breaking..

Papa: "When you are done crying there, make me food and don't keep me waiting." He went through the connecting door. I slowly got up in my pain and limped my way to the kitchen. I made food for him and took them to his bedroom where he was. I didn't even knock, what more can he do that won't make me feel any pain?

I placed the tray on the side board and limped out. I was met by Naomi at the door. I mean, I'm wet, bleeding on my ankle, my body is red and painful.

What lie do I tell her?

Naomi: "Sesi what's wrong? You are bleeding."

Me: "I know, I hit the door with my angle." That's the only lie that came to my mind.

Naomi: "I'm sorry man. Come here." She jumped on me to hug me, I flinched in pain. I mean how do I tell her that she is hurting me? She is only trying to comfort me.

Me: "Thank you baby, but you got to get off now. Let me go clean myself up and I will come and make you food."

Naomi: "Okay. I have made my bed."

Me: "Hmm, you are a good girl aren't you."

Naomi: "Yesss."

I went to take a hot salty bath. I'm sure I have put half of the salt in the water plus detol. I nearly screamed out because of the pain my body felt

when I got in the water but I managed to take it in like a big fat ugly girl.

I finally relaxed and took a slow bath minding my painful and aching body. I need to move out of this House before I die. I can't live like this, I'm not strong as my mother. The emotional abuse is enough. Already at my age, I have anxiety attacks, panic attacks, I can't do this to myself. I'm even afraid to get to know my inner self, I'm slowly losing myself into other believing their words.

I finished bathing and I went to dress up. Papa was no longer around. I made Naomi food and while she was eating I packed my bags. I know where I can get a back room, I will use the money that mama gave me to buy a single bed and other essential things.

Me: "Nono, where did papa say he is going?"

Naomi: "He said he is going to pick up mama at the hospital."

Me: "Okay, go and bath. I need to finish packing."

Naomi: "Where are you going?"

Me: "I'm going to school, but I promise that I'm gonna come just for you okay?"

Naomi: "And I will stay with you at your school?"

Me: "Yes you will, now go and quickly bath my angel."

She left and I called Nthabi.

Me: "Hey, how are you?"

Nthabi: "I'm good and you?"

Me: "Are you at work?"

Nthabi: "No, I'm off this weekend.

Me: "I need a favor please. "

Nthabi: "Shoot. "

Me: "Do you know any place I can rent a back room

around here? "

Nthabi:" I know many places, you want a room? "

Me:" Yes, can you please try to look for it for me? I will move in tomorrow if not later today, I will let you know later. Now can I put my bags at your house just in case. "

Nthabi:" Ella? Why? Are you running away? "

Me:" Please Nthabi. I will fill you in when I'm ready. "

Nthabi: "Lele, eish fine. Where is your dad?"

Me: "He is out, he might be on his way back now. I will throw the bags via the fence."

Nthabi: "I don't like this whole thing but I will do it for you. Come to the fence now."

Me: "I'm coming thanks."

I threw some of the clothes that were left in the suitcase and some in the sport bag and my shoes too. I rolled the luggage to the fence and Nthabi was there as promised.

Nthabi: "Lele what happened to you? Why is your lips swollen? Did he beat?"

Me: "Nthabi not now please, just take these for me. I will tell you all about it later. This is the only money I have on me, please pay the deposit of the room, I will pay the whole amount when I come." I gave her the last R500 I had on me.

Nthabi: "Okay, so what more do you need? Take few necessary things, like vaskom, blankets, things you won't have to waste money buying. I will ask Dave to come and fetch with his car. Hurry up."

Me: "Okay thanks."

I went to the garage and took the vaskom and two blankets and threw them via fence while she moved them into her house. My father's car pulled up at the gate just when I threw the last blanket. My heart went high again.

It literally beat out of my chest. I was so nervous, what am I going to say to him? I'm here at the fence there's no denying the fact that I was doing something here.

"Think Lele, come on girl, you can do it. This is your only chance of escaping this House. Think baby..."

[03/12, 15:19] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 11

Mercy Mashugane

It's been days since my altercation with Lele. I will lie if I say my mind has been at ease, but it wasn't. I can't keep her out of my mind. The way she cried that day when she told me she loved me. Her teary eyes haunt me.

Mama: "Have this, it will help you to calm down."
She handed me a cup of camomile tea. I have been feel anxious since I fought with Lele, and fdoing ups and down ain't helping me at all. Sometimes I just feel like giving up, or maybe just sitting back and allowing the wedding planner to do her. But how can I do all that with my mother in law always breathing down my neck. "Mercy do this, no do that, change this, I don't like this, I like that, Wis dom will like thi not tha." Everything is always about her and Wis dom, I'm not counted in the preparations and I'm okay, I have learned learned to leave with it.

We were at my house in Ster Park. The furniture was coming in today so, she decided to company me and to also help me clean up. We were seated at the balcony, overlooking the other houses and the city of Polokwane.

Me: "Thank you Mama, and thank you coming to help me."

Mama: "I will do anything for you baby."

Silence

Mama: "What happened between you and Palesa on Friday?" She took a sip of her tea without looking at me. I feared looking at her too because she might just see right through me.

Me: "Nothing happened. Why?" She sighed and took sip of her tea, making me nervous in the process.

Mama: "You know Mercy don't let other people turn you into a monster that you are not. Don't turn your back on people who were there for you when no one was there. Palesa has been your friend for a very long time, before your in laws were there, I'm not saying your in laws are not important but don't hurt your friends to satisfy people who will be there temporarily. The altercation you had with her the other night? What you said to her wasn't nice at all Mercy. I raised you to be a better person and to always be a bigger person. Trying to fit-in people who don't care about you is very dangerous. You will lose important people who care about you. "

Me:" I hear you Mama but Lele Betrayed me."

Mama:" The devil you know is better than the devil you don't know. Work it out with her. Have you ever tried to sit down with her and talk? Or you just made conclusions from what other people said? Or maybe you are scared that there might be some lines of truth in whatever you heard? Tell me here? Do you really love this boy or you are just getting married because you are pregnant? "

I gasped. Pregnant? Who? Me? Never. I can't be pregnant, never. Me and Wisdom spoke about this.

Me:" I'm not pregnant mama, and I love Wisdom. "

Mercy:" Child, okay. If you say so. But a motherly advice, never get into marriage with doubts because you will live to regret for the rest of your life. And for your information, I'm not stupid, when last did you see your periods? "

I tried to think but I couldn't even think properly, my mind froze...

Me:" I'm not pregnant mama. "

Mama:" Okay Mercy if you say so. Let's finish up and leave your father is coming home today with your brother. " She didn't give me a chance to explain myself, she stood up and went back inside...

Palesa Ella Motaung

I met with mama and Naomi in town. She was here to give me slextra cash and to buy me groceries and a fridge too. The other day? Well, I just saw God move, I really done know what happened and eversince I went to work I never returned home.

That day papa was just so furious with what happened at the farm he didn't even give me attention. He never really got into details with it, he just drop mama off and left and I told mama my plan and she gave me a go ahead to leave. She said she will see what to tell papa, and I shouldn't worry much about him.

She bought me a fridge, microwave, a two plate stove a wardrobe, plus a curboad, other necessary items. She took out a black card on the till, I was shocked.

Me: "Who's black card is that mama?" I asked as we got out of the store, Naomi was busy with her ice cream.

Mama: "Ask no question and hear no lie child."

Me: "If it's going to get you into trouble then, I would rather hear it all."

Mama: "Nono, what do you want to eat today baby?"

Naomi: "I want spur ribs and chips, lots of chips and milkshake."

Mama: "Spur ribs it is baby. Come on let's go."

Me: "Mama, I don't want trouble, what's going on?"

Mama: "Let's sit down first and I will tell you all about it."

We got to spur, luckily it wasn't full, today I'm working night shift, so at least I have the whole day to spend.

Me: "So?"

Mama: "Geez Lele, give me a break."

Me: "No mama, I don't want any trouble." She took out a phone and card and placed them on the table.

Me: "Who's phone is this one?"

Mama: "Nono, please go play there with other kids, I will call you when your food comes neh baby?"

Naomi: "Okay." She ran to the play ground

Mama: "It's your father's phone and his card."

Me: "Mama do you have a death wish?"

Mama: "No, he probably doesn't know where he left them."

Me: "Does he have two phones? And the black card? What does papa do kante beside the farming?"

Mama: "This is our ticket out of that man's life Palesa. Your father is very stingy, He purchased a

car dealership a year ago, all because I advised him to do so, or else he was going to drink all this money with his side chicks. So, I'm entitled to this money as much as he is. It is my money too."

Me: "Mama, this could lend you into big trouble. Papa is not the kind of man to play around with. He is very dangerous."

Mama: "I know, but what I found in his phone made me to resort to this. Your father is having an affair with Ruth, Pastor Mofokeng's wife Palesa. That shows me that our future with your father is not guaranteed, and unless I do something about it, we will be broke. Now we are going to withdraw as much money as we can from this account. I was there when he opened it and I was witness to it. I will then delete the transaction messages on this phone and we will all act like nothing happened. I bought a stand in Lebowakgomo few months ago, we will need money to build and this money in here will help us to build a house for us."

Hai this is just too much to swallow, papa is having an affair with Wisdom's mother hence he is forever protecting them more he does to us?

Me:" Mama this can turn out very wrong, I don't want to lose you, me and Naomi we still need you. "

Mama:" Palesa calm down, what is the worse thing that your father can do that he hasn't done before? I can't just sit and watch him give Ruth the money we both worked hard for. I will never let him do that. "

Me:" I give up, just be careful because this might turn out different. "

Mama:" Palesa I want you to go to school, study and turn out to be something good too. Have a comfortable life too."

Me:" I hear you Mama. I hear. " I don't want to lie and say I'm not scared, I'm very scared. My father is very ruthless but now I understand his ruthlessness is because of another woman.

We are and went to buy groceries and few clothes

and other things. We went to the bank to withdraw the money, mother signed all necessary papers and they gave her the money without any problems, maybe it was because we were being helped by her friend Nora, they seemed like they knew each other for a very long time.

She withdrew R100 000 and she told her that she will come back to withdraw another, I was even scared to ask how much does the card have.

We deposited the money into my account, and they went to drop me off afterwards. I was literally wearing my heart on my sleeves.

They went to drop me off and my things were also delivered the very same day.

"Can we meet tomorrow morning for breakfast in town?" That was a message from Mercy. I just read

it and ignore it. I didn't even tell my mother what went on between us because of so many things that transpired in a short space of time

I don't have time for her and her tantrums really. I'm worried about my mother and she is the least of my worries.

I called my mother

Me: "Mama are you okay?" I was busy preparing myself for work.

Mama: "Yes we are okay, he is in a good mood today, I guess Ruth gave it to him." Mxm that woman really disgust me shame. I can't even begin to imagine her and my father. I mean how do you act so holy holy when you are so rotten? How does a pastor's wife do this to a fellow woman? Meaning all along she was laughing at my mother? She knows that her son really did rape me and she decided to keep quiet about it and overlook it? Wow, I seriously don't know how I should feel about this

whole thing and I don't know how mama is managing to keep calm when she found out about this whole thing.

Me: "Please be careful. Has he asked about me?"

She kept quiet for some time, well, I know the answer to that, no need for to say it out loud. He just don't care nje.

Mama: "I'm sorry baby..."

Me: "It's okay, it's not like he care. I have to go."

Mama: "Please be good and call me if you need anything. I hope you don't get transportation far because it's late."

Me: "Nah, I spoke to our work transportation guy, he will find me just at the gate. I have to go. Say hi to Naomi for me."

Mama: "Okay I will be safe. I love you." For the first time in ages I heard her say those three words again. My heart was overwhelmed with all emotions.

I couldn't find words to respond back but tears clouded my eyes. This is all I needed to hear all my

life...

" God, Please protect my mother for me. Give her strength, that's the only thing I ask of you today. Amen"

"Please respond my text, we really need to talk. Please Lele." Another message from Mercy.

Child leave me alone, you said I should leave you alone, so, why are you disturbing my peace now?

[03/12, 15:20] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 12

Palesa Ella Motaung

I knocked off at 06:00 and I went home. I responded

Mercy's text that we will meet at 10:00 in town. I took a nap and woke up later to freshen up to go and see her. I wasn't really enthusiastic about this meeting. One thing for sure is that it could go either way, I don't even know why I agreed to meet with her. Maybe I miss my friend, maybe not, maybe I just want to look her in the eyes and see if she is not ashamed of what she did to me.

I finished up and I went to town. Upon my arrival, she wasn't there yet on the spot we agreed to meet at. I went to KFC to buy myself breakfast, I settled on the window seat just to look at people going up and down minding their own business and to get the sun on my skin. It wasn't cold not hot, it was just in between and morning weather can be confused too, yes the weather can be very nice in the morning.

A message came through on my phone, it was Mercy alerting me that she is running late, but she

is on her way. Typical her.

I saw familiar car parking in the parking lot, my heart skipped few beats, I know if he sees me, hell will definitely break lose. What is he even doing here so early in the morning? Shouldn't he be at work maybe or somewhere else but not here? He took his time to get out of the car, but he did. He was wearing a suit, for a moment you might think he is a decent guy but behind those expensive suit he wears lies a monster with no heart. My father is very cruel I tell you. Sometimes I wonder why God allow such people live with normal people because it's obvious that they are animals, but anyways who am I to judge.

He went to the other side of the car, and opened the door. I expected my mother to come out of that car, but guess what? It wasn't my mother. Where I'm seated there's no way a person will miss me, as much as I wanted to hide I couldn't, I couldn't stop

looking at my father and this pastor's wife who were not even ashamed. Holding hands in public. I thought maybe their relationship was a hidden thing, maybe they did things in private but looking at them now makes me want to puke. They disgust me.

They walked towards the shopping complex with no care in the world, laughing like the world only revolved around them. What is the world turning into?

I wonder where are they going. I quickly called mama.

Me: "Mama, how are you?"

Mama: "I'm good thanks and how are you baby?"

Me: "I'm good. I just saw daddy and Wisdom's mother now in town. Mama they were all lovey dovey in public."

Mama: "Lele, stop stressing about your father. He made it clear what kind of a man he is. Have you

paid your fees yet? "

Me: "No, not yet, I will do everything later on."

Mama: "How about you apply somewhere far from here next year? You can go to J ohannesburg or KZN? J ust somewhere where you can get a breather and fresh start?"

Me: "What about you and Naomi? I can't leave you two here with that monster. If I go, you are all coming with me."

Mama: "Me and Naomi will be fine. Beside it is much peaceful when he is with that good for nothing woman without brains."

Me: "But still I can't just up and leave you, we both know how heartless that man is. Maybe we can all leave and go and start afresh?"

Mama: "We will need lot of money to move baby, we will need a house when we get there, new good school for Naomi and you also. It might all strain us financially baby. We need to have a solid plan before we move."

Me: "But still, I'm not leaving you guys behind. I will just go to school here, I don't mind."

Mama: "Come on Lele, you need to live a little. Enjoy your life, you are still young. I will take care of Nono with my life. All I want is for you to have a normal life. You didn't get to experience the joy of being young, having boyfriend, going out for clubbing. Go and live a little my child, I will look after your baby girl and I will make sure to tell her that you are her mother and you love her very much. "

Me:" No, mama don't do that, it will break her heart, she knows you as her mother and let it be, we will tell her when she is old enough to understand... Ma, we will talk later, send my love to Naomi. "

Mama:" Okay baby, I will do so. Be safe and I love you. "She is beginning to normalize the 3 letter words and they are slowly and surely melting my heart.

Me:" I love you too mama. " I hanged up

Mercy placed her phone, and car keys on the table. I

haven't touched my food since I arrived because I was on the phone with mama and I got little distracted by what I saw.

Mercy: "Hey."

Me: "Hi." She settled down opposite me. Her make up was very beautiful and she was dressed nice.

Mercy: "Sorry for keeping you waiting. I got held up at the venue."

Me: "Okay."

Awkward silence

Mercy: "Lele, I'm sorry for being a bad friend."

Me: "It's okay Mercy I guess we all grow up and change and that doesn't make us bad people. It's not your fault that you grew and made changes in your life. I'm not going hold it against."

Mercy: "I know, but that's not what I wanted. I still want you to be my friend. I still want you to be my maid of Honour. Please."

Me: "No, I don't want to. Mercy you don't make fun of your friends and come back and apologize and think everything is okay. You didn't cease to make fun of me everyday when we were with your new friends. Always telling me that I'm not educated like everyone else, how I always carried your bags like I am your maid? How my voice was never heard but I was given maid of honor position. Were you doing all that without noticing? I don't think so. I forgive you but being friends with you? I don't think I can go that route again. You and I are better off each other. Maybe your new friends are good for you. "

Mercy:" Lele please, how can I get married without my best friends. Lele it was just a silly mistake."

Me:" I know it was mistake but some mistakes Mercy are costly. You can't afford to make them. And how do I know that you really want to move on from this while I know for sure you still have questions about Wisdom and I? "She bowed her head in embarrassment.

Me:" It's fine I understand, but for your information. I don't love you man, neither do I like him. We have never dated and we will never date. He is not my type of coffee. "I nearly rolled my eyes at myself because I haven't dated anyone to be talking about types.

Mercy:" I'm terribly sorry Lele, please find it in your heart to forgive me. "

Me:" I forgave you long time ago. And if it will make you feel any better, I will come to your wedding but as a guest."

Mercy: "Thank you, can we please continue to talk?"

Me: "Yah sure, I have to go. I'm exhausted. I was working night shift."

Mercy: "Okay, I guess I will see you around then."

Me: "Yeah sure."

I got up and left. I went to the bank to pay for my school fees, and I went to buy snacks at pick'n pay.

I met my dad and his girlfriend on my way out of the shop. He was shocked, or they were both shocked to see me.

Papa: "Lele what are you doing here?" What a dumb question. What do people do at the shops?

Me: "To buy things I guess. Greetings First Lady." I did that on purpose.

Ruth: "Hello Palesa. You will find me in the car Willy. It was lovely to see you again Palesa."

Me: "Likewise First Lady." She let go of my father's hand walked away.

Me: "Goodbye papa."

Papa: "Lele wait." I stopped on my tracks.

Papa: "Where do you stay and why did you leave home without telling me?"

Me: "Because I didn't see any reason to tell you papa. If I wanted you to know where I stay and why I moved out I guess I would have told you."

Papa: "You are even growing audacity to talk back at me."

Me: "I thought I was answering you."

Papa: "Wow, okay. Fine. You never saw me."

Me: "And I know nothing." I left him standing there all by himself. I have never felt this brave and nervous at the same time.

I have bigger things to worry about and that would probably be my studies not papa and his mistress. I wonder what will people say when they see them, Hai Palesa worry about important things like finishing your studies, studying Radiography ain't no child's place I have to say. I thought I will make my mom proud and study one things she wished I could study. I couldn't get into medical school but Radiography was one thing closest to.

I got to my place and I took another nap before waking up and studying.

"If I dare hear people say you saw me with your father, you will have me to deal with. Be a good girl and pray hard. Mxhaa."

Wow, so now I'm being threaten? So much of being a pastor's wife shame.

[03/12, 15:20] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 13

Mercy Mashugane

It's my wedding day and the whole yard is buzzing with people and the music is on blast. It could've been a much more joyous day if only my best friend was here but look at what I did because my selfish reason? I pushed her away and this time around she refused to look back.

I'm just glad that she will come to the wedding, Lele is not a lying type one thing for sure if she promise you one thing she will do it.

My hairstylist finished styling my hair and my makeup artist did her thing. Oratile stepped into the maid of Honour duties and trust me she was stressing me too much. It was more like she is the one getting married whereas it was vice versa. We asked her friend Bohlale to step into her(Oratile) previous position as one of the bridesmaids. In total I had four bridesmaid with the maid of honor included. Kele and Kedibone are my varsity friends we did the same course and we were sharing a flat, and they became friends more like sisters to me.

Oratile: "Are you done? We are running behind the schedule."

Me: "I'm almost done. You are not even dressed yet. How is everything going outside? Are the decor

people done?"

Oratile: "I can't be going outside Mercy, but I will ask someone to check."

Me: "But Rati it is your job as a maid of honor to make sure that everything is going smoothly. This is my wedding, my wedding not our wedding geez."

Oratile: "Mercy geez, calm down. I know my job. Everything is going okay. J ust finish up so that I can help you with your dress."

Me: "Please call my sister for me, she will help me get dressed."

Oratile: "But I'm here to hel..."

Me: "Rati, please just do as I say and stop stressing me." I cut her off and she dragged herself out of the room. The make-up artist laughed. Oratile is something else.

My sister walked in, she was in her apron, she was assisting in cooking, so she wasn't going to be part of the celebration but she will be assisting with

making sure that everyone is fed.

Nthabeleng: "Look at you baby sis, you look so beautiful."

Me: "Thank you sis, can you help me dressed up?"

Nthabeleng: "What happened to your maid of honor?"

Me: "Arg that one? Everything is more about her more than it is about me, so I dismisses her."

Nthabeleng: "Why am I not surprised. Lele could have done a much better job, let me go wash my hands and I will be back just now." Tell me something I don't know.

She left and came back a while later with Lele, she was looking very beautiful in her long dusty Pink floral midi skirt with with a cream white dramatic top with big sleeves. She was really looking soooo damn good. I never thought she could really dress up and be this beautiful. Her beautiful thick body

wasn't doing justice to the outfit

Nthabeleng: "Close your mouth Mercy, I know she is looking so damn good."

Me: "Wow, friend look at you? Wow, Thando please doll her up on her face."

Palesa: "Oh no, you know me and make-up we are not friends."

Me: "Come on friend, just for today only. I mean look at you. I even feel jealous, I feel like everyone will be looking at you more than me."

Palesa: "Come on you are the bride, all the attention will be on you but if you really want me to put the make up, I will do it just for today only."

Me: "Thank you, Thando, do your thing. Sesi please help me with my dress."

Nathabeleng: "I called Lele to come and help me to help you, now she is doing her make-up."

Palesa: "Let's help her first and she will do my face when she is done."

They both helped me into my ball gown dress with off-shoulder sleeves, tight on my breast down my waist and all out on my waist downwards. I really did good.

Palesa: "Wow, you look beautiful..."

Oratile: "What is she doing here? I thought she was no longer part of the bridal crew."

Nthabeleng: "So? What are you doing here? Who goes and come in this room is none of your business, you guys must finish up, the grooms men are here and Wena behave." She pointed at Oratile. She can be pretty much dramatic.

The whole wedding was going to take place here at home, matrimonial service is in the garden and tomorrow they will be welcoming me at the Mofokeng house.

Palesa Ella Motaung

The lady finished doing my face, I must really say, I looked different, a good different. At least she didn't doll me up as I expected, just a natural look with popping eye shadows and lipstick.

Mercy: "Look at you. You look very beautiful."

Me: "All thanks to you. All the best with the celebration."

Mercy: "Thank you and thank you for coming, it means a lot to me."

Me: "You are welcome, let me go out, I don't want to delay you."

Mercy: "Will you still talk at the reception?"

Me: "Yah, sure I don't mind."

Mercy: "Thank you."

The bridesmaids walked in and I walked out to matrimonial side. I came with Nthabi, my mother refused to come and said she might lose her temper if she sees Ruth, but I know for sure that my father will force her to come. She said she will go to mall of the North with Naomi if they get bored, but she will not come to the wedding at all.

We sat in the middle, the groomsmen walked down the aisle. It was four guys, I only knew two, the other two, is the first time seeing them. They looked handsome though in their navy slim cut suits with no tie or bow tie. The groom also walked down the aisle, accompanied by his mother and his father was on the altar waiting for his son. If only the poor man knew how cheating his wife is. He wouldn't be having that smile plastered on his face.

Finally, the bridesmaid made their way down the aisle in their olive green long dresses with different design cut on top but they were all long. They were

beautiful. Mercy too walked down the isle with her parents, both her mom and dad.

Nthabi: "Today you must lend yourself a boyfriend. Those two guys are very handsome you, one of them must be your boyfriend."

Me: "I don't need any boyfriend, I'm good by myself."

Nthabi: "Say a 25 year old virgin? Come on Lele, you are beautiful, have a beautiful thick body, come on what's stopping? Girl live your life."

Me: "I'm already living it Nthabi and who said I'm a virgin?"

Nthabi: "Woah. Out with it. When did it happen? With who and how?"

Me: "Shuu, you are making noise, they are saying their vows."

Nthabi: "Like I care. But you still owe me news. I don't even know why we are."

Me: "She asked me to speak on behalf of friends."

Nthabi: "And tell me you refused."

Me: "I couldn't refuse. She was already sad that I'm not part of the bridal party."

Nthabi: "And who's fault is that? Lele you got to stop being Mother Theresa, this girl doesn't even deserve to be called a friend, not after everything she did to you."

Me: "You are making a noise Nthabiseng, it's fine, I'm not her friend and beside is not like I have anything to lose. I'm just doing this for myself so that I don't feel guilty."

Nthabi: "Actually let me shut up because it's obvious that you made up your mind."

She sat up straight and paid attention to the couple who were declaring their love to each other. When they were done they went to take pictures and we were left behind. There were serving us drinks in the VIP set up outside the gate.

Hours later they came back and danced around and the reception began. Speeches were said, I also said mine, nothing long, nothing fancy, I really had nothing to say, I just wished them well and this time around, I meant it. I let go of the anger I had towards Wisdom, one thing for sure his day will definitely come and it won't be nice.

Later on the bride and the groom went to change into their second attire and food was served. Above everything else the wedding was nice. I enjoy seeing my former classmates, seeing people happy and dancing, just the whole wedding vibe did me well.

Me and Nthabi decided to leave when we saw the second dress of Makoti, we all know how we always leave after we see what we wanted to see. But the party had just began in the tent.

The music changed and the whole vibe was beginning to be nice, not my type of music but it

was refreshing man

Nthabi: "Do we really have to leave though? Let's just chill for few minutes and I will call David to accompany you to your room. He won't mind."

Me: "As long as I will have transportation to go home then it's fine, but I want to pass at home to take Naomi, she is going to spend the night and we will go to the wedding tomorrow."

Nthabi: "Not a problem, let me go get drinks for us." She left me seated on the couch all by myself.

Guy: "What is a beautiful lady doing all by herself here." He sat next to me and spoke right into my ear, well the music was very loud, so I can't blame him.

Me: "I'm waiting for a friend of mine. Ain't you supposed to be dancing with the other bridal party?" Yes he is one of the groom's men. He was wearing their attire.

Guy: "Me and dancing are not friends. I can only dance what I have rehearsed, beyond that I can't do

anything." He smiled revealing his dimples. He is cute.

Me: "Okay..."My phone rang.

Me:" Excuse me I have to take this. " He nodded , but didn't move to give me privacy.

Me:"Mama is everything okay?"

Mama: "Yes, I was just checking what time you will pick up Nono, I want to go out with my friend Nora, she invited me for dinner."

Me: "Okay, I'm still waiting for Nthabiseng to come back, she went to get drinks for us, and I will come home with her, it's late I can't walk alone."

Mama: "Okay, not a problem. I will wait for you."

Me: "Okay sharp." I hanged up and called Nthabi and she said she went to buy ice with Shella, so I had to go home all by myself. "

Guy:" Is everything okay? "He startled me.

Me:" Yah, I have to go. "

Guy:" Where are you going? Isn't late for a lady to be

walking alone? "

Me:" Well, my friend just ditched me, so I really have to go home. "

Guy: "I can accompany you, I mean that's if you don't mind."

Me: "Okay, but I don't trust you. You are a total stranger nje."

Guy: "You can take a picture of my car registration and send it to your mother and friend, that's if it will make you feel better and you can also have my ID card."

Me: "Uhm, nah, I seriously don't mind walking, I mean home is just few houses away from here."

Guy: "I still insist, please. I won't bite you I swear."

Me: "Okay, fine bring your ID."

He took out his ID and driver's license and handed them to.

Me: "Kgosi Mankoe?"

Kgosi: "That's me, let's get going."

Me: "Right after you sir."

Kgosi: "Wow, from Kgosi to sir, okay, I didn't get your name."

Me: "Palesa Ella Motaung."

Kgosi: "Please to meet you. You are very beautiful I must say." He stopped and stood to look at me. I smiled.

Me: "Thanks, so how do you know the couple?" I was trying to avoid the beauty conversation.

Kgosi: "Wisdom is my colleague."

Me: "Oh, okay."

We got into his car and settled in perfect silence. I directed him to my house and he stopped at the corner, it was not even a long drive, the car was just unnecessary nje.

Kgosi: "Here we are."

Me: "Thank you so much Kgosi and it was nice meeting you."

Kgosi: "Likewise, so will you be at the groom's house tomorrow for the second wedding?"

Me: "Nope, I won't be around."

Kgosi: "Oh, okay then sharp."

Me: "Sharp." He opened the door for me and i got inside the gate and he drove off.

Mama's car wasn't in the driveway when I arrived, I rushed to the door and I heard voices arguing.

Papa: "What do you mean you can't tell her the truth Ruth. I want my daughter to know me and I want her to have relationship with me. How long are we going to run away from this? Oratile is my child, you have already robbed me 24 years of her life, 24 Ruth."

Ruth:" Willy you and both know that I can't just drop the bombshell on Mark, he will be very furious and things might not end well. I need time. "

Papa:" You need time? Time for what? You had 23

years to tell him, if you don't tell him by the end of next week, I will tell him myself.. "

What? So Oratile is my half sister? Earth please open up and swallow me.

[03/12, 15:20] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 14

Palesa Ella Motaung

Yesterday was very eventful, I can't even get out of bed. What I heard yesterday made me sick. How can my father be so cruel? Why then doesn't he allow my mother to move on? The whole 24 years? What assurance do I have that Wisdom is not his son too? I mean he has been protecting him ever since I told him about the rape? What if he is my brother? Meaning I had a child with my brother?

God please help me through this headache. Why can't this drama just end nje? Now I have to go to the wedding because I left with Kgosi's ID and driver's licence. I don't even know how I left with them. Why didn't he stop me or he also forgot them.

Mama last night came to pick Naomi up, she didn't stay long, actually I told her to come and pick her up because I wasn't in a good state of mind. I had too much going on in my mind. Does mama even know about this? This will just kill her. She stood by dad through thick and thin, she supported that man, I was even feeling sorry for him when mama was stealing money for him but now I feel like we should just take everything and see what he will leave for his precious child.

I just hope Wisdom is not brother, that's the only thing that is giving me chest pains now. I called Nthabi.

Nthabi: "Girl, where did you disappear to last night?"

Me: "Ain't you supposed to be having a hangover or something? And I told you Mos when I was leaving."

Nthabi: "Hai, girl me and hangover we are not friends. We don't co-exist. Was up?"

Me: "Can we go to the wedding later on?"

Nthabi: "So, it's you being a real friend to that fake friend of yours?"

Me: "No, it's not like that, trust me if I had a choice I wasn't even going to bother myself, I don't even wish to see that Mofekeng family, they all make me sick."

Nthabi: "Spoken like my friend. So why are we going to the wedding?"

Me: "I left with Kgosi's ID and driver's license, so I need to give them back."

Nthabi: "Whoa, who is Kgosi and why are you having his most important documents? Girl tell me."

Me: "He just a guy who accompanied me home when you decided to ditch me up and I didn't trust him, so he suggested that I take his particulars."

Nthabi: "Okay, okay. I think I need to meet this Kgosi guy. What time are we leaving?"

Me: "Maybe around about 12:00?"

Nthabi: "12:00 it is, I will ask my mom her car."

Me: "I pray that she doesn't kill you first."

Nthabi: "Trust me she won't, I'm the best daughter she ever had. Let me get up to clean. I will see exactly at 12:00."

Me: "Okay, sharp."

I got up and made the bed, good thing about staying in a room is there's nothing much to do. I just cleaned here and there and packed my stuff. I sent Nthabi a text to bring her make-up kit, I mean I need to look my best today, maybe for Kgosi but maybe for me.

I sent mama a text telling her that I'm going to the wedding, I took a bath and around 10:30 Nthabi came with her mother's car indeed. She dolled me up on my face and I wore my Pedi blue dress with a bit of some other colorful trims on the wrist and sleeves.

Nthabi: "Look at you, you see now ubrothers will never stop looking at you."

Me: "Yah thanks, I just wish the wedding wasn't in that twisted family. I really hate the Mofekeng shame."

Nthabi: "Is it that bad?"

Me: "Very bad, but anyway let's get going."

Nthabi: "Lele you know you can always talk to me about anything right? I got your back girl."

Me: "Thanks, but I really don't want to talk about it now, Maybe some other time."

Nthabi: "Alright, let's get going." She seemed guinely worried about me. We left to the wedding.

It was already buzzing with cars and Brass Band making the pots to be done. Everyone was just in the mood of a wedding.

We mingled around with our old classmates, I can attest that I was feeling a little bit jealous here then when some were showing off their achievements to us, but I didn't allow it to get to me that much. But girls made it for themselves, already driving, some engaged, yoh Hai.

Bontle: "You and Nthabi must come to my wedding. I'm getting married next month." Bontle is one of my old classmates.

Me: "Oh well, I will definitely come to the wedding, just give send me the invitation card."

Bontle: "I will send it. How do you feel that your high school crush is getting married to your best friend?"

Amanda: "Did he even know that she was his crush?"

I mean Lele doesn't look like Wisdom's type."

Me: "And what exactly looks like my type?"

Amanda: "Oh sorry, I was just saying but who can dare marry a fat woman like you?"

Nthabi: "Woah breaka net daar, what's wrong with Lele being fat? She is not fat for your information, she is a plus size queen, it seems like you also need to add something to diet because girl no man will ever want to marry someone thin like you. Stop starving yourself girly and last time I checked people who always try to mock other people because of their weight are very insecure about themselves. Lele let's go you don't need to be around this kind of negative people who are not happy with themselves. "

She pulled me with my hand and we walked away. I don't know why people are like this but I made my point and mission to not let their negative attitude to affect me. I'm slowly learning to adjust and accept my body. I'm not about to go on any diet to give

people that satisfaction.

Nthabi: "Don't ever allow people to walk over you like Lele, you need to learn to stand up for yourself."

Me: "I have no point to prove to anyone Nthabi, people are entitled to their own opinions about me and I'm not going to be going around fighting with people like Amanda."

Nthabi: "If you say so, but next time I'm going to kick their ass."

Me: "If it will make you sleep at night do it."

She laughed and we went to the other side where the whole ceremony will be taking place. We sat down in the VIP section because the tent was full of church people and mostly we're older.

The bridal party paraded their way into the tent with the Brass Band making the things to be done.

Mercy was wearing not the same white dress that

she was wearing yesterday. She was wearing a new mermaid white dress. She was looking good. Kgosi saw me and he winked at me. I just smiled.

Nthabi: "So, are you going to tell me who is the guy that made you to come here today."

Me: "There he is."

Nthabi: "Wait, you mean that handsome thing we saw yesterday?" I nodded and smiled.

Nthabi: "Wow, I approve of Him but wait, he is Wisdom's friend and you and Wisdom are not good friends."

Me: "So? How is that any of my business? Didn't he marry my best friend and made her to turn against me? So honey, what goes around does come back around."

Nthabi: "What? Wait, what happened to my friend, Lele? What did you do with her?"

Me: "I did nothing, I just decided to grow up."

We chilled around and later on the bridal party went

to change into their traditional outfits. Nthabi left me alone again, she was mingling with her friends from high school.

Kgosi: "You are a loner hey?" He sat next to me. I didn't expect him to be outside, I mean the program was still going on inside there tent.

Me: "I guess so. Why are you here?"

Kgosi: "I rather be here and listen to those long boring speeches. I rather be here with you."

Me: "Well you did well by showing up now. Yesterday you forgot this." I took his particulars in my handbag and handed them to him.

Kgosi: "Wow, I really forgot about them and tonight I have to drive back to Joburg. Thank you."

Me: "Oh, you are going back today." Ouch, I was hurt, just a little bit. I would really love to get to know him hey.

Kgosi: "Yes, but I can always come back, I mean that's if you want me to." He smiled, damn his

dimpled wow. He is not a Buffy guy but you can see on his arms that he does work out and he is fine man, so damn fine.

Me: "I wouldn't want to impose you hey, I'm sure that you are a busy guy back there in joburg."

Kgosi: "But i can always make time for you."

Me: "Nah, I'm sure even your pararents wouldn't want their child traveling al..." He unexpectedly kissed me in my lips. I literally went into shock mode for a minute before I could articulate what was happening, my mind literally went blank for a moment, but he didn't move his lips, he waited for me to reciprocate first.

I finally moved my lips and we kissed, damn... My first kiss with a guy I hardly know, he passionately kissed me making sure he quench my thrist...

He pulled away.

Me: "Damn.." I breathe out loud with my hands on

my chest. I mean did we just kiss right in front of everyone? I'm sure I'm going to be the topic the whole week if not weeks. I mean people were watching us.

Kgosi: "Are you okay?"

Me: "Yes, I am. I have to go." I stoop quickly but he pulled me before I could take another step forward.

Kgosi: "May I please have your numbers?" His eyes were locked with mine for some time.

Me: "Okay." He handed me his phone and I put in my numbers.

Kgosi: "Thank you, I will see you on Wednesday?"

Me: "Yeah sure." He kissed me on my cheek and walked back into the tent. What just happened?

"Mama I need to talk to you urgently. I'm coming home now." I send the message and left, calling Nthabi that she will find me at home.

Girl did you just kiss a guy you just met?

Those who sent me their numbers please bear with me for sometime, my phone is acting up, I need to get it fixed neh and then we will continue with our prayer session.

[03/12, 15:20] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 15

Kgosi Mankoe

Wow, I went back to the crew after that mind blowing kiss I shared with Palesa. I didn't know but this girl is going to be death to me. I haven't slept a wink yesterday thinking about him and there was no way I was even going to fall asleep after I saw such beauty. I left my ID and driver's license intentionally so that she can come and see me again.

I can't even wait to come back this side just to see her beautiful eyes.

Kuhle: "Where have you been dude?"

Me: "And since when do I report to you?"

Katlego: "He was with a girl this one."

Me: "And that is none of your business too. What have I missed? I'm exhausted, I still have a long drive to Joburg."

Kuhle: "You didn't miss anything special. Why don't you leave tomorrow morning? Do you really have to drive today?"

Me: "Yes I have to and stop sounding like my mom dude."

Speaking of my mom, yesterday she called and I didn't answer, I will never hear the end of it if I don't return her call today. I excused myself and went out, there was nothing fancy happening in the tent, just speeches from people I don't even know. I don't

even know why Wisdom asked me to be his groomsman, I mean yah, we are friends but this dancing things ain't really my thing. Or maybe this kind of weddings, I have never been to this kind of wedding where everything has to be a fuss.

Me: "Mamzo."

Mama: "Who is Mamzo? Kgosike tla ho bets a."(I will be beat you up.) it's so funny how she still sounds funny when she speak sotho/setswana because of her fluent Zulu language

Me: "Sorry, how is the queen of my heart doing?"

Mama: "Sorry what?" Yoh, yah hey.

Me: "I'm sorry mom, how are you doing?"

Mama: "That wasn't difficult was it? I'm good and how is my boy doing? When are you coming home? Did you find a girlfriend?"

Me: "Woah, Ma, girlfriend? I thought we agreed that you will stay out of my business and I don't think you will be the first person I tell about my love life."

Mama: "Oho, your loss then. How is the wedding?"

Me: "It's fine, please don't lock the front door, I'm coming back tonight, I should be there before midnight."

Mama: "Mara Kgosi you can't drive home today, you are still tired mfana ka Ma."

Me: "I would rather come and rest a at once at home because tomorrow I might not be able to wake up."

Mama: "Okay ke, I will ask Lethu to open for you. Your father and I are going to Pretoria today we will be back tomorrow."

Me: "Where is Lindo?"

Mama: "Angazi ukuthi ukuphi umfowenu, akakaze abuye ekhaya since Friday." (I don't where your brother is, he hasn't t been home since Friday)

Me: "He didn't call?"

Mama: "Nope, Lindo is a man of the house now. He does what pleases him a dn I'm not going to waste my breath with him. He will come back home when he feels like he want to be a child and respect my house rules."

Me: "Okay mama, I will talk to him. I will call you later. Greet your husband for me."

Mama: "Okay bhabha, thank you for the call. I love you."

Me: "I love you too. Bye."

Hai Lindo is something else, late adolescent is really messing him up if you ask me. But anyways, maybe he will grow up, I just need to convince him to come back home so that on Wednesday I can come back this side without being asked too many questions.

I went back inside and at least speeches were done people were just mingling around waiting for the bride and groom to change for the last time so that they can cut their cake. I'm over dancing, at least yesterday I didn't give up but today, I can't do it. This dancing thing ain't for me.

Later on..

Me: "My man, congrats once more."

Wisdom: "Thank you so much and thank you for coming."

Me: "It wasn't really a train smash, ma' am take care of this boy of mine and be a good boy to your wife."

Wisdom: "You know me very well brah."

Mercy: "If he doesn't take care of me, I will teach him a lesson."

Me: "Please do, or better yet call me, I will fire him"

We laughed, I said my goodbyes and I left.

Wisdom's mother made sure that she gives me a container full of biscuits and scones plus she filled my cooler box with cold drinks, I don't drink, I left alcohol few years ago, I decided to be a good PK and not to embarrass my parents.

"Hey baby cakes, I left your hood, I will call you once

I get home. Take care of yourself. Kgosi "

I sent Palesa a text before driving away... My name is Kgosi Mankoe and this is my story...

Palesa Ella Motaung

I got home and papa wasn't around. Mama was cooking. Indeed she was serious about not attending the Mofekeng's wedding, I thought maybe she would change her mind today. I mean she was bestie with mamfundi, well not really besties but they were talking and being niece to each. Funny enough she hasn't been to church in a very long time, she and I both, I seriously don't see myself going to that church, not anytime soon. I'm in the process of looking for another church around the neighborhood because seriously that church it's a shame to Christianity.

People are just fake, doing horrible things being the curtains yet ready to cast a stone on everyone.

Mama: "Your text sounded serious. What is it?"

Me: "I think you need to sit down for this one."

Mama: "You are scaring me Lele." She sat down on the kitchen high chair. Nono was somewhere in the house playing with her dolls.

Me: "I know, a skies. I don't mean to scare you."

Mama: "Ke eng?" (What is it?)

Me: "Mama, I overheard papa talking to Wisdom's mother yesterday. Apparently Oratile is papa's child and he was threatening mama Wisdom that if she doesn't come clean to her husband, he will tell him." She sat back on her chair and sigh.

Mama: "William is really dog. How could he do this to me? Whole 30 years of my life devoted to me and this is the thanks I get?" She walked to the door with her hands on her door. I knew this is going to break her but not on this level.

Me: "Askies mama..."

Mama: "What kind of a monster is this? Why am I even here? Why am I still with him? After everything, every shit he put me through, I stuck with him, I supported him, I stood with him, even when he gave me so many reasons to leave and I stayed and he goes around sleeping around, meaning I'm a laughing stock in this community? Wow, William you are so heartless, you are very cruel. " She was crying and I couldn't help it either.

Me:" He doesn't deserve your tears mama, sorry. "I walked to her and took her hand in mine. She was too broken to comprehend everything. Papa really messed up this time around.

Mama:" So our whole lives were just a lie? Wow. Please give me a moment. "

Me:" I'm here for you mama... "

Mama:" I know baby, I just need time to be alone for sometime. Please check the pots for me." I nodded and she went to her room. She banged the door and there was just painful silence, the heavy silences

and I didn't even know what to do.

I removed the pots from the stove because I seriously didn't have the strength or the energy to cook.

I sat down on the chair and waited for mama to calm down. She came out of the room about 30-40 minutes later. She was having a brown envelope.

Me: "What is that?"

Mama: "Your father's will and policies." She took out the documents and went through them.

Mama: "He left 60% of his assets to Oratile, 25% for Naomi and 15% for me." Nothing for me?

Me: "What about me?"

Mama: "Nothing, I will teach him a lesson, if he thinks he can cheat on me and get away with it then he probably doesn't know how crazy I can be. Take

this documents with you when you leave.

Tomorrow meet me in town. We are going to withdraw all the money in that account. I'm going to leave him penniless. "

Me:" Mama if he finds out he is going to kill you. "

Mama:" This time around I will kill him and trust me I won't regret going to jail. Your father messed with a wrong woman this time around. Can you please leave with Nono tonight. "

Me:" I'm not going anywhere mama, I can't leave you here when you are this angry. What if something bad happens?"

Mama:" Lele, I'm not asking you, I'm telling you. Go pack Nono's things."

Me: "Mama tomorrow I'm working, and I won't be able to take Nono to school."

Mama: "I will fetch her before you leave."

Meb "I'm not going anywhere. I'm not going to sit here and let you ruin your life because of dad, never. I lost you before and I'm not about to loose you

again, kill me first."

Mama: "LELE..."

Me: "No Mama, I'm not going anywhere!"

She got up and walk around the kitchen for some time.

Mama: "I'm sorry, is just that your father makes me so angry. I'm going to kill him Lele, and his mistress I'm going to kill them both I swear."

Me: "Calm down. Mama, we need to come up with a plan to get his card and phone, we really need to leave him penniless, he is going to pay for everything but slowly and painfully so."

Mama: "You are right, maybe let's take a walk so I can clear my head."

Me: "Now you are thinking like my mother. Let me call Nono."

I called Naomi and we all went out for a walk. This is too much to take in...

"Hey baby cakes, I left your hood, I will call you once I get home. Take care of yourself. Kgosi "

That was a message from Kgosi, I swear I didn't want to blush but I just did. Did he call me baby cakes?

Mama: "Hmm, who is that?" She tried to snoop into my phone but I hid it.

Me: "It's none of your business."

We laughed...

[03/12, 15:20] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 16

Kgosi Mankoe

As much as I arrived home late, I couldn't sleep until late. I mean my house is a mad house from morning till the next day probably. Even today I woke up to Lindo fighting with Lethu over dishes. My other sister Lesego stays with her aunt in Cape Town but she does come to visit from time to time.

I was playing music downstairs cleaning, trust my mother not to hire a maid. Ever since MaYeni retired, it had always been us and us alone. We do things for ourselves, you mess up you clean, just like that. It doesn't help that the house idls huge but my mom has it all under control. She makes things to happen and this morning since she is not here those two little rascals left the kitchen bit messy.

Lethu is doing her final year in Quantity Survey at UJ, she is doing her Btech actually and she is also doing an internship at some Company in Joburg and she travels. Lindo is doing his masters in Computer Science, he is not working though.

The only reason I'm cleaning after them is because I'm in a good mood. I spoke to my woman last night i got to know a little about herself, even though she is a hard nut to crack, the little she gave was good to me.

I still have to plan a lie that I'm going to tell my parents about going back to Polokwane on Wednesday. My mom seems like someone who understands than dad, that man doesn't even want me to move out, the only time he said he will allow me to move out is when I get a wife. How insane is that.

I called uncle Lwandle, he is the only person who will bail me out of this.

Lwandle: "Mchana, how are you?"

Me: "I'm good thanks and how are you malume?"

Lwandle: "I'm good, what do I owe this call?"

Me: "Erh, Malume, I need a favor please."

Lwandle: "Talk to malume. You got a girlfriend??"

Me: "Something like that."

Lwandle: "Then what is the problem?"

Me: "I want to go see her in Polokwane on Wednesday and you know how your sister and her husband can be."

Lwandle: "Hai, don't worry about those two, I got you covered, just tell them that you are coming to see me and I will sort them out but be careful out there, I don't need you impregnation women and running away, buy condoms and lots of them."

Me: "Ah, come on Malume, I know how to protect myself, there's no need to worry about me. Thank you so much and Greet aunt Lebo for me."

Lwandle: "I will do that Mchana, call me when you arrive safely so that your mother doesn't surprise me."

Me: "Okay, thank you."

We hanged up and I did a dap dance just a little bit. I mean who wouldn't be excited when your uncle just decided to cover up for you?

I finished up cleaning and later on the parents came back. Mom cooked lunch with daddy helping him. They are close like that. The intercom rang and I answered.

Mama: "Who is that?"

Me: "Tsobane family, something like that."

Mama: "Do you them Sugar?"

Dada: "I don't know, Kgosi are you sure you didn't impregnate a girl or something?"

Me: "Like really Dad?"

Dada: "You will never know with you guys phela."

The door bell rang and I went to get the door. It was two elder men and 3 women and Kgomotso,

innocent and beautiful. Well, she used to be my one night back in the days. I haven't see her in a while, maybe about 2 months if not 3 months now. What is she doing here with her family?

They greeted and I welcomed them in. I called the parents and we all sat down.

Elder1: "We are here because of this young lady." He pointed at Kgomots o who was looking down.

Mama: "Okay, we are listening."

Aunt1: "Kgomots o is pregnant and she claim that one of your children named Kgos i is responsible." I think they are not referring me, I mean we always used the rubber? Come on, not now.

You should've seen the look on my father's, at least mom is good in hiding her emotions, but not dad. I dont understand why he will be so angry, I mean is not like I'm a child.

Dada: "What do you have to say for yourself young man?"

Me: "Urh, I...i don't know.."

Mama: "Baba, we hear you and we won't stand here and defend our son because we were not there when they were doing their shameless deeds behind our backs. Kgosi, do you know this lad?"

Me: "Yes I do know her, but I'm not sure if the child she is carrying is mine."

Kgomotsi: "It is yours Kgosi, I have never slept with any other guy beside you. And that day you were drunk we didn't use a condom."

Mama: "You drink alcohol? Sugar what evil has posses your kids?"

Dada: "Calm down bear. Bagolo, we understand your frustrations as parents right now but can you please give us time to talk to our son maybe come back this coming Wednesday so that we can discuss this further."

Me: "But in Wednesday I have plans Dada, you can't do tha...."

Dada: "I wasn't asking you Kgosi, this is your mess

and on Wednesday you better be here with answers not statements."

Aunt2: "Thank you so much for hearing us out and for hearing us out, we will definitely come back on Wednesday."

Mama: "Thank you so much. I will see them out Sugar."

I was left with Dada... I was even scared to move

Palesa Ella Motaung

I woke up to a ringing phone in the morning of Monday, I'm supposed to be at work at 10:00 am today, I slept very late because I was studying. I really have to say, working and studying are most hardest thing ever. I mean you always need to make sacrifices that compromise neither of the two.

As much as I tried to ignore the phone ringing, it kept on ringing. Kgosi kept his promise early this morning, he called me around 01:30 in the morning telling me that he arrived and our conversation really took long because he ended up asking me questions about what I have studied and all that until we got cut by his battery. He sent me text afterwards telling me that I should continue studying, his battery is down.

I was really excited about our conversation, I mean it was flowing nje, and he told me a lot about himself, he works at his family law firm, his mother retired at the age of 45 and went full time into ministry, I mean like imagine. Having to retire at that age. He was one brother and two sisters and they are bunch of crazy souls. He seemed pretty close with his family.

Me: "This better be good fo you to wake me up so early in the morning."

Nthabi: "Lele, you better come quickly, Naomi has been screaming her lungs out and your mother too. The gate is locked and it seems like a lot is going on." I jumped out of bed quickly.

Me: "Are they okay? Is my father around?"

I wore my sleepers and ran out. I didn't have time to think about changing. Deep down in my heart I know that dad is beating up my mom. It's no secret.

I ran home, I didn't have time to wait for a taxi, it's not really far but if you are lazy to walk it's far. I ran.

Nthabi: "I don't know, just come home please."

Me: "I'm on my way."

I tried my best to run as fast as I can. I got home and people were already at the gate trying to figure out what was going on. My father was swearing and screaming at the top of his voice and Nono's painful crying couldn't be missed. I couldn't hear my mom's cry, but I know for sure that she was trying to hard

to be strong for Naomi.

Me: "MAMA BULA. NAOMI. PAPA." I was just screaming out hoping they will hear and open. But who am I fooling? How can someone who is killing my mother literally open a gate?

Nthabi: "I think you need to jump the gate Lele, what if vele Nono is getting hurt or something."

Me: "I can't even lift my foot to save my life Nthabi, I might hurt myself."

Nthabi: "Let's get a ladder for you. Mama, where is the step ladder?"

Mologadi: "In the garage, Nomsa bring the step ladder, phakisa." Nthabi's mom was dressed up for work you can, it was still early, I don't even know what time is it, but school kids were going up and down, some were standing with their parents at the gates trying to figure out what was going on.

Nthabi: "Come, let me help you." She helped me to

get in the ladder and I had to jump on the other side. I fell on my tummy because I lost balance, I quickly got up and ran to the door. I opened and luckily it opened and mama was on the floor slowly becoming unconscious. Papa was hitting her with a thick stick. He didn't even hear me come in because he was busy swearing at mama. Nono was no where in sight.

One thing I knew better, is that I was going to get beaten for trying to save mama. Luckily there was a broom behind the door. I took and targeted his head with the part we use to sweep with. I saw mama disapproving slowly but this is the only way we will go out of this place alive. I used all the strength I had and hit him so hard and I ran back to the kitchen and took a pan and I hit him until he fell down. And he was bleeding.

It only clicked when he was down what I did,

Me: "Mama is he dead?" I asked shaking.

She tried to say something but she couldn't even move an inch of her body.

Me: "Did I kill her?" I was already in tears, every part of me was literally shaking, Nono's cry was slowly fading away in my mind ears as my own scream began to fill my mind. What did I just do?

Naomi: "Sesi..." She ran into my arms but I couldn't comprehend the moment. Everything was just too much for me to take in.

Nthabi: "LELE O SHARP? CAN I COME IN? LELE?" She was banging the door but I was too shocked to even say a thing, I didn't even know what to say.

Nthabi: "I'm coming in." She got in within a second. She wanted to scream but she held her mouth.

Me: "I killed him, I killed a man Nthabi."

Nthabi: "Let me call the ambulance, your mother is unconscious. Nono, come baby. I will take her to Nomsa." I just nodded, I didn't have the strength in me.

Naomi: "But I want to be with Sesi."

Nthabi: "I know, but now Sesi is not in a right state of mind okay? We have to take mama and papa to the hospital, Sesi Nomsa will take care of you until we are back okay?" She nodded repeatedly. They walked out, I was just seated there, not moving, not doing anything but shaking and crying silently, well the tears were just coming out.

Nthabi came back and told me that the ambulance is on it way.

What did I just do....???

[03/12, 15:20] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 17

Kgosi Mankoe

Mama: "Care to explain to us what nonsense is

that?"

She asked calmly and collected, so unlike her when she is mad.

Me: "I also don't know mommy, I don't know when last did I see that girl. Yes I agree, I fooled around with her a couple of times but that doesn't mean I was careless. I'm sure that child is not mine."

Dada: "But the damage is done and she told her family that the baby is yours. And the fact that you agree that you fooled around with her sometime ago, doesn't make this situation easy. We both know that condoms are not 100% safe Kgosì, you of all people should know better. How many times should we have this talk until you guys get it Mara?"

Me:" I'm sorry, this thing just doesn't add up Dada, I mean as much I take full responsibility still it doesn't add up to me. "

Mama:" It is what is boy and you need to snap out of it and take full responsibility. Yes I'm disappointed but I won't allow my grand child to

suffer while he/she has a family. Do the right thing son. "

Me:" But I don't want to marry her mommy. I don't love her. "

Dada:" We never said marry her, just do right by your child. We are not going to make decisions for you. You are old enough to think for yourself and for your kids, just do the right thing. "

Mommy:" Your daddy is right. We raised you and you siblings to be better man in the society. Don't disappoint us but most importantly, don't disappoint yourself. Coming to church with us today? "

Me:" Yeah sure, but mommy about Wednesday, I can't be..."

Mama: "Fine Kgosi, go see her, she needs you now more than ever, just let us know what is your decision tomorrow."

Me: "How did you know about her?"

Mama: "I'm your mamma boy, I know everything."

Sugar let's go get ready. We are leaving in the next 40 minutes and call your brother to get his behind here before I go fetch him."

Dada: "Right after Snuggle Bear."

Mama: "Oh and Kgosi." She stopped on her tracks and turned back while dad went to their room

Me: "Yes ma'am."

Mama: "You know you won't be able to play any instrument at church until you sort yourself out right?"

Me: "Yes, I know. I'm sorry for disappointing you."
She smiled.

Mama: "I'm disappointed but I don't love you any less and I won't judge you. We all make mistakes in life and what is important is that you make a right decision that you will not regret later and put your life in order."

Me: "I will, thank you."

Mama: "You are welcome, come give mommy a hug." She open her arms with a wide smile.

Me: "You know I'm no longer a kid right?"

Mama: "Yeah I know but mommy's hugs are always the best, you can't deny that."

Me: "If you say so mommy dearest." We hugged and she kissed my forehead.

Me: "Geez, mom. I'm not your husband."

Mama: "I know, my husband kiss a lot better than you and a way lot better than I can kiss you. And boy no woman will ever kiss you like I do." She walked out while laughing. Damn, I'm grateful to have this woman in my life. Who could've thought that my stepmother will love me so much like her own child. She's indeed the best thing that's has ever happened to me. There are many times where she could've rejected me or even hated me but all she did was to show me unconditional love. Her heart is big if I may say.

I threw myself on the couch. "Where did I go wrong with this girl?" I'm trying to remember how she conceived but my mind is moving in circles. I guess

I just have to man up for this.

Lindo: "Hey big brother." He brought me back to reality.

Me: "Young blood, how are you?"

Lindo: "I'm good, I'm very good. Guess who I met earlier today?"

Me: "With you I can never win guessing games."

Lindo: "Okay, fine I will tell you. I met your girlfriend, Kgomotsi, dude she told me that she is pregnant. Congrats, at least you don't shoot blank."

Me: "Tell me something I don't know."

Lindo: "Oh, you knew? Well, she has been telling everyone at campus that she is carrying your son hey."

Lethu: "And you guys are trending on Instagram, she posted pictures of you two, well, most of them." She placed her bag on the coffee table before throwing herself next to me and laying in my chest to show me the pictures. Mostly they were old

pictures of us, some of them I wasn't even aware that we were taking pictures. Well, we kind of dated but it wasn't anything serious and I was honest with her that I don't want anything serious and she agreed but it seems like I was talking to myself. Some of the pictures I don't even remember them.

Me: "What, why could she do that? I mean we haven't even proven that the child she is carrying is mine. This girl is going to be a headache."

Lethu: "You sure know how to choose them big bro, still remember what happened to Vicky?"

Lindo: "Lethu stay in your lane, we both know she is an off topic." Vicky, well that's a story for another day.

Lethu: "Yeah yeah, askies."

Lindo: "Where is that friend of yours?"

Lethu: "Who? Kenzie?"

Lindo: "Yep."

Me: "Kenzie is off limit to you Lindo, if you want your parents to kick your butt, I dear you to go after

her and beside, Kenzie is a kid, to you."

Lethu: "Deal with your baby mama Jackie."

Lindo: "Shut up Lethu, Jackie is not my baby mama, and stay in your lane. Kenzie is over 18 dude and I believe she is capable of making her own decision, she is in varsity for crying out loud."

Me: "Ain't you tired of fooling around with girls? No, scratch that, ain't you tired of people always coming here complaining about you? To be honest Lindo how many babies do you have out there?"

Lindo: "Big bro, I might be many things, but a jerk? Never, I will never leave my kids to suffer out while their father is living the best life, never, is just that this bitches are too much, they just don't know when to back off. Jackie lied to me about her pregnancy why? Because she thought my mom is rich only to find that she is not, she is just a pastor, Mandisa? Same thing happened, so now I tap and go, no feelings attached. "

Me:" Wow, I'm out of here, I'm going to get ready for church." I helped Lethu to get off me

Lindo:" Tell Bra God to soften Kenzie's heart for me.
"

Mama:" No child of mine will stay home while we are all going to church, so I suggest that you my baby boy, go and get dressed and be out of your room in the next 10 minutes."

Lindo:" But mommy, I'm not feeling well. "

Mama:" That's more reason for you to go church my boy, Lethu are you done? "

Lethu:" But you didn't greet me njena? "She made a puppy face. Yes, she is the baby of the house.

Mama:" Askies my angel, this brother of yours is going to death to me, how are you? "They kissed.

Lethu:" I'm good mother and how is my favorite girl doing? "

Mama:" I'm also good sthandwa Sam', go and get ready and wear warm. "

Lethu:" Okay mommy. Lindo let's go. "

Lindo:" I'm your brother wena not your husband. Mommy please tell Lethubuhle that I'm her brother

and she must address me as brother like she does to Bhuti'Kgosi. "

Mama:" Lethu please address your brother as Bhuti, Lindo hamba tuu, go and get ready. "

Lindo: "I'm driving with my big bro."

Me: "We are all driving with the 'rents today, so let's go."

He sulked going up....

Palesa Ella Motaung

We have been waiting for the doctor for about an hour now. I don't know how I managed to snap out of everything. The police officers were expected to arrive at any moment from now on. I'm very scared for my life, I don't even know if I will be able to tell them what went down.

My mind seemed to be blank, I can't remember what really happened, I don't know if it's shock or what but my mind can't seem to reciprocate what went down.

Nthabi: "Have this." She handed me a paper glass with coffee.

Me: "Thanks"

Nthabi: "My mom will be here any minute from now."

Me: "There's no need for her to come here."

Nthabi: "I know but she has to bring Naomi, she is not coping at all. They say she hasn't stopped crying ever since. I think is best if she sees a doctor."

I nodded. God knows that I don't have the strength or the energy of everything.

Nthabi: "This is the reason why you left home right?"
I nodded again.

Nthabi: "I'm sorry."

We sat in silence until we were disturbed by the police officers. They asked to talk to me. We went bit far away from Nthabi. They asked couple of questions regarding what had happened and I told them what I know and what I did to my father. The other one was taking notes of everything I have been saying. They told me not to leave the town until my mother is conscious enough to tell her side of the story as well as my father. I asked them if they will be arresting me, they said not now.

They left and I went back to sit with Nthabi, I asked her to tell her mother to take Naomi to another doctor, I can't afford to see her now, I need to clear my mind first so that I can be able to be there for her.

Later on the doctor came and told me that my father is awake and he will be discharged as he didn't suffer any internal injuries or anything major. Who

cares? I don't care, I don't give a damn.

Ruth: "Where is she? What did you do to him?" I heard her voice down the corridor before she appeared and her yellow dress.

Me: "Please Ruth, I seriously don't have time for you right."

Ruth: "You even have the audacity to call me by my first name? What did you do to the father of my kids? You want my kids to be fatherless like you? Huh?"

Me: "What do you mean the father of your kids? Entleke wena are you not married to Pastor Bae? What is your story?"

We were both shouting out of anger and we were grabbing people's attention.

Ruth: "I said just that, tell that loose mother of yours to leave my man alone. Willy is the father of my children and you and your mother just want to milk him dry."

Me: "Woah, what exactly are you talking about?"

Wisdom can't be my brother, he can't be..."

My chest was slowly closing as I was trying to comprehend what she just said. Wisdom, can't be my brother, no, he can't be... That's impossible, she is lying...yes, she's lying....

[03/12, 15:21] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 18

Mercy M. Mofokeng

Me: "Babe, have you seen what's trending on Twitter?"

Wisdom: "Nope, what's going on?" I got up from the couch and handed him my phone. I don't know how he is going to react from this. I have been trying to hide this from him but one thing for sure is that it won't. His mother has been trending for the past two hours now.

Wisdom:" WTF, I hope this is not true. How can mom do this to dad? I mean...no this had to be a lie, my mother is a pastor's wife, this is not her, maybe she was angry."

Me: "Angry with what? There's no doubt that this person is your mother babe. The question now is why did she hide the truth and how could she do this to your father?"

He got up from the chair and drank some water and ran to and from in the house scratching his head.

I mean his mother just sired out her dirty laundry to everyone to see. The news were out there and people were grilling her on Twitter. I'm still shocked that she was dating Lele's father, no wonder she never liked Lele.

I never thought that this family could have so many deep buried secrets. I mean does this mean Pastor doesn't have children of his own?

Wisdom: "No, let's go home. I need to talk to mother. This can't be true. She has to be lying. I wonder how dad is, did he even see this?"

Me: "Let me get my shoes." "I didn't even know what to say. Poor Lele must have fainted. The poor girl has been through the most, now finding out that you have a brother and a sister out there that you didn't even know existed, this is too much. But how can Ruth do this? All her husband has ever done was to love her, that man would literally do anything and everything for his family. He is a family man. So many men were looking up to him, what will this do to him? How will he even take the fact that his wife was lying to him for almost 28 years now?"

We got into a car and drove to Mokopane. We have never been to honeymoon ever since we got married, we decided to go to honeymoon around June, and I will be 7 months pregnant by then. That will help me to relax and take it easy. Yes I found out

that I'm pregnant just few days before my wedding. Wisdom was excited. We were both excited to receive our bundle of joy...

Palesa Ella Motaung

Nthabi: "Do you want anything else?" I ket quiet. I haven't said anything eversince the whole world found out that Wisdom and Oratile are my siblings. I mean how do you react to such news? Your own brother being the father of your child? Is that even normal? Is that even right? How could Ruth do this to me? The fact that she knew that her son violated me and she knew that he is my brother yet she decided to keep quiet, yet she decided not say anything. Couldn't she have warned me to do an abortion then?

Nthabi: "Lele you need to eat something so you can take your meds."

Me: "I'm fine Nthabi, I just need to be alone please."

Nthabi: "Okay, I will come and check up on you tomorrow then."

She walked out and left. Naomi was still with Nthabi's mother. She said it's better if she takes care of her until at least I'm okay. I wasn't admitted, the doctor just checked me and said I'm free to go. We got home around 14:00, ever since we got back I haven't said a word to anyone. I mean what's there to say? What could I possibly say that will properly articulate what my heart feels? I feel numb, my heart is heavy, I want to cry but I don't have any tears in me to cry.

I don't have the heart and the energy to let this pain in me out, I can't even feel my whole body. I have been trying so hard to try to understand why my own father could do this, I mean is he even my father? Ruth said I'm fatherless. What is my mother hiding for me this time around? If Willy is not my

father then who is my father? Where is he?

I got out of bed and wore my shoes, I went to the kitchen and cleaned the mess that was in there including the broken glasses of the small coffee table that was in the lounge. I wore m hoody when I finished and I went to the hospital. I need answers, I can't just sit and pretend like I'm okay. Everything is too heavy for me. I didn't even realize that I was crying while in the taxi. Everyone was talking about Ruth, I mean everyone knew her, our church is one of the biggest churches around here.

I was lucky that most of them didn't recognize me because I was wearing a hoody. In my numbness I got off and went straight to my mother's ward, she was not yet about, the doctor said they had to sedate her because she was heavily injured and her ribcage was broken, with a little bit of internal bleeding. I sat down beside her bed. Maybe I hoped she could wake up and tgive me answers to my

questions.

I don't know what hurt me the most at this moment, the fact that I have been lied to for my whole entire life or the fact that I have a child with my own brother. I just don't know where to put my pain. It hurts, it hurts so bad, I wish I could feel a physical pain more than the emotional pain, because at least the physical pain, I will see where it hurts but right now? I don't even know which part of me hurts, I don't know how it hurts. I don't know why it should hurt like this but it does.

Me: "Mama, why? Why? Why me?" That's all I managed to say because it is the only question I had. I don't even know which question to ask her. I cried my balls out. But it wasn't helping, the fact that she was just laying there doing nothing but breathing in and out was not helping me.

I went back home, heavy as I felt inside me, I walked

home because I needed to think, I needed to clear my mind. Maybe I wanted to run away from reality but how do you run from such pain? How do you even get up one day and decide not to think about it anymore? What am I going to tell Naomi? What am I going to say to her? That her father is her uncle? God help me but this will break her, why did you bring me into this world knowing very well this will be my daily cross to carry?

How will the poor child even begin to fathom everything? How will she take it in? Is this a curse or what? God I don't want to live anymore, I just want to die.

I cried all the way to home, when I got on my street people were gossiping about me, I know everything on social media, there's no need for me to runaway from it.. Some were not even scared to point fingers at me to me that vele they are gossiping.

When I closed the door, Mercy blocked it.

Mercy: "Hey, I have been waiting for you." Not her.

Me: "Oh, can we please do this some other time? I'm not in a good mood right now."

Mercy: "I know, I just wanted to check up on you, and see if you are fine?"

Me: "Yeah I'm fine as you can see, you can go now."

Mercy: "Lele please, you don't have to push me, I just want to be there for you that's all."

Me: "Mercy please, I really appreciate it but right now I need to be alone. Please come back some other time."

Mercy: "Okay, Lele..."

Me: "Hmmm."

Mercy: "I'm sorry about this whole thing, but if you need me, I'm here for you, you can call me anytime."

Me: "Thanks but I think your husband will need you more than I do, but I will keep that in mind."

Mercy: "Okay, o be sharp." I nodded and she walked away. I locked the door and threw the keys on the couch and went to my mom's bathroom and I took out her toiletry bag. I searched through it and I found a pack of razor. I took it and I went to papa's wine store, yes he does drink but occasionally, do task me why. I took a bottle of wine and opened it. I poured a glass for myself and I galped it down. It was bittersweet, I poured another glass, followed by another one until the bottle was half empty.

I was feeling tipsy, but the pain was there, I think I cried the most. It was my first time drinking alcohol I went to the bathroom and filled the bathtub with water.

Me: "Lele girl, we are ending all this pain today, you will be free from everything, even that useless father of yours will cry for you." I laughed.

Me: "Yes, I wonder if he will miss me, nah he won't, but he will I mean he won't have anyone to beat

after all." The alcohol was deep in my system.

I filled the bathtub and I took off my clothes and took the razor pack and opened it. I cut myself on my wrist first, it was painful but worth it.

Me:" This pain is much better."I said to myself as I began to cut my right wrist and my waist. The blood was coloring the water now and I sat back.

Me:" I'm sorry Nono, but I can't do this, I can't afford to see the pain in your eyes when you find out that your father is your uncle or your uncle is your father. I hope you will live to forgive me baby, but mommy can't take the pain anymore, it's too deep for me, it's too much for me. "

I sank deep into the water with my face and held my breath....

Goodbye pain, I'm sorry I couldn't be strong enough to carry you. I tried but you continue to cut me deeper than I couldn't handle, and this is me saying

you won...

[03/12, 15:21] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 19

Kgosi Mankoe

It's Tuesday morning, Kgomots'o's family said they will be here tomorrow but I won't be available. I asked my mom to tell them that we will be doing the DNA test when the baby is born, in the mean time I will take the responsibility of paying hospital bills until the baby is born. There wasn't much I could do because I seriously don't believe that child is mine. Maybe if I could remember the times of when s/he was conceived maybe that will be much better. I finished packing my back, packing my things, I'm going to Mokopane, I tried to call Palesa the whole of last night and she wasn't answering her phone. So I decided to go and surprise her today instead of

tomorrow.

I rolled my bag downstairs, mom was in the kitchen making breakfast for everyone as usual. I don't know what will we be without this woman.

Mama: "And then?"

Me: "I'm going to Polokwane today. I will come back on Thursday."

Mama: "This girl really got your balls neh?"

Me: "What? Come in on mom, you can't say that."

Mama: "Well I just did boy, go and call your brother and sister before I come and pull them with their ears."

Me: "What if they don't want to eat breakfast vele?"

Mama: "In who's house again?"

Me: "Yours."

Mama: "Thank you, so go and call them before I

change my mind about this trip of yours."

Me: "Yoh, okay fine." I went to call Lindo and Lethu, dada was already settled in the table, mom said the grace and we ate over a light conversation. I said goodbye to the family and my mom accompanied me to the car.

Me: "Mommy you know I'm not a little boy right?"

Mama: "I know boy, I wanted to talk to you before you leave."

Me: "About what? If it's Kgomots'o's issue, I'm not going to change my mind about the DNA.."

Mama: "It's not about her, it's about this girl you are going to see. Please be careful out there. I don't want another family coming here and saying you impregnated their daughter."

Me: "Really Londiwe? Is that what got you all worked out now?"

Mama: "Ke serious Kgosi

Me: "I know mommy, I will be safe I promise."

Mama: "That's all I needed to hear. Travel mercies

baby. I love you and May God protect you on the road. Drive safely."

Me: "Thank you mommy, I love you too and I will call you when I arrive."

She literally forced me to kiss her, imagine, a grown up man like me still kissing his mama, Hai.

I got in the car and drove out, I tried to call Palesa again but her phone rang answered. I wonder what is she doing, or maybe she found herself a new boyfriend but that can't happen, I saw her like a day ago. But what if my presence there will overwhelm her? I mean I should've at least warned her that I'm coming.

I sent her a message and drove away...

Mark Mofokeng

Since the break out of the news that Wisdom and Oratile are not my kids, I don't even know how to feel about this whole ordeal. I haven't even said a word to my wife, I don't know what to say to her. She decided upon herself last night to move out of our room to sleep in the guest room. Wisdom came here with his wife fuming with anger and I didn't want to respond out of anger, I wanted everything to sink in first.

I love my wife very much, that's no lie, I married her because I love her, no one ever put a gun on my head to force me to marry her. The only person who never liked her is my mother but she too because she loves me, she just had to tolerate her for my sake. I have never given her any reason to cheat, I gave her everything she needed. Yearly trips across the world with our kids, vacations, listening to her, being there for her, supporting her. Through all her pregnancies, I was there since day one. Fed all her cravings, endured all her hormones, prayed for her more than I prayed for myself.

I don't know where I went wrong with Ruth. I don't know why was I never enough for her, to ligle to me for full 28 years? 28 years, that's basically 2 years after we got married, and a year after I was ordained a pastor. Before I even want to think about what people, I just want to know what was she thinking. I'm hurting so bad, I just don't want to act because of anger. I swear I will kill her but I'm too good to do that.

I made the bed and went downstairs to make breakfast. Oratile is supposed to be home today, she was fuming last night when she called.

I finished preparing breakfast and Ruth came down in her gown. She looked very terrible.

Ruth: "Morning."

Me: "Good morning, I made breakfast."

Ruth: "Thank you." She sat down and ate like

nothing is wrong, wow.

Me: "Care to explain to me about the rumours I hear about you and William?"

Ruth: "Like you said, it's just rumours."

Me: "Okay, so why didn't you sleep in our bed last night?"

Ruth; "What's with so many questions Mark?"

Me: "I'm just trying to understand what's going on Ruth. Right now a video of you is trending on social meadinh with you saying Willy is the father of your kids. Or do you perhaps have other kids that I don't know of?"

Ruth: "I'm full thanks for the breakfast." She pushed the plate..

Me: "I dare you to walk out on me without explaining to me exactly what happen." she turned

Ruth: "Or what Mark? What will you possibly do? You are weak, you don't even know how to handle a woman in bed, all you care about is you cumming and leaving me hanging and Willy on the other hand,

he makes sure that he satisfies me. He fucks me so good that i even forget my name, and we do it everywhere, in the kitchen, bathroom, sitting room, in his office and what about you? Always missionary, on the bed, and you think this what I want? I want to feel appreciated, I want to feel loved on every possible way."

Wow

Me:" Okay, I'm out of here. "I took my car keys and drove out. I have never felt this disrespected in my whole entire life. If she didn't want all that, why wasn't she upfront with me from the get go??

Nthabiseng Ragophala

I have been worried sick about Lele, I have been calling and texting her since last night but her phone ring answered, I thought aybe she needed space, I mean everything happened all at once. She

is going through the most, having to find out that you have siblings out of the blue? Wow, I would literally die.

Naomi: "Sesi Nthabi, I want my sister. I want to go home."

Me: "I know baby but Ella is not feeling well right now, I'm going to check up on her and later when after bathing we both go and see her neh?" She nodded, poor her, I asked my mother not to take her to school just for today. She is very traumatized about everything.

Me:" Let me take you to sesi Nomsa neh, I WI be right back and we can watch anything you want and also do your homework okay? "

Naomi: "Okay, can I watch cartoons?"

Me: "Yes you can."

Naomi: "Yeah." I switched on the TV for her and went to call Nomsa to watch on her while I go check on Lele.

I got to the door and knocked a couple of times but no one was answering the door. I called her and her phone rang inside the house, which means she is still in the house. I knocked again. I went to her bedroom window and knocked a couple of times but still no one was answering. I could literally feel my heart beat out of my chest. Where could she possibly be, I hope she didn't do anything stupid.

I went all over the windows trying to knock to see if she won't open but dololo.

Me: "Think Nthabiseng, think." I went at the back and opened the back door luckily it opened but the buckler door was locked from the inside. I screamed out her name and still there was no response.

Me: "Lele, what the did you do? The garage door." I ran to the garage door and opened it. I was in tears with my heart pounding.

I opened the other door connecting to the kitchen.

Me: "Lele, where are you?" I was met by half empty bottle of wine.

Me: "Oh nooooo, Lele, I ran door to door of every room, but the rooms were empty and nicely packed as if no one has been in them. I opened the bathroom door...

Me:" LELE NOOOOO, SOMEBODY HELP... LELE WAKE Up, YOU CAN'T DO THIS TO ME, COME." she was laying on the floor with her clothes wet, her skin pale, she was bleeding on her wrist. Her mouth slightly opened. She was very cold. I tried to feel her pulse but it was very faint.

Me:" Lele what did you do? Come on, stay with me. "I couldn't stop crying.

Me:" Stay with me, I'm calling for help." I took off my jacket and put it over her. I went out and called my mother.

Me:" Mama it's Lele, she is dying, please help. "

Mama:" Nthabi calm down, what are you talking

about? "

Me:" I found her passed out on the floor, her skin is very pale, and her pulse is very weak, please come."

Mama: "Okay, I'm calling an ambulance, I will be right there, breath baby, mommy is on her way, stay calm, put something warm on her try to take off her wet clothes and something warm on her."

Me: "Okay, hurry up mama, she is dying, please..." I hanged up and went around the house looking for clothes for her. I swear I couldnt feel myself run around, I have never been this scared in my whole entire life.

Lele please pull through for Naomi sake, the poor child is already traumatized... God please save her.

[03/12, 15:21] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 20

Nthabiseng Ragophala

We arrived here about 3 hours ago and not a single person has said anything to us. I can't say I'm not nervous, I'm scared for her life because everything seemed to be out of place. I still don't understand why would she try to commit suicide, why would she decided to take an easy out of everything?

I know I may not understand her pain but still she has no right to do what she did. She had no right to just forget about people who cares about her and be this selfish. What she did was very selfish, very selfish.

Mama: "Nthabiseng sit down, you are driving me crazy."

Me: "I'm scared what if someone forces himself in the house and tried to kill her? Mama her clothes were out of place, I mean her skirt was outside

inside and she was not wearing her underwears
mama, her panties and bra was on the floor."

Mama: "But you said you found a bottle of an empty
wine, maybe she was drunk, I don't know
Nthabiseng let's just wait for the doctor before we
drive ourselves crazy."

Me: "I'm sorry, I'm just trying to make sense why
would she kill herself just like that, it's so unlike
her."

Mama: "Pain can make you do things baby, some
people can't handle pain and as much as they try,
they are not strong enough to handle it. Maybe Lele
has a better explanation of everything."

Me: "I hope so mama, I really hope so. Maybe we
should go and check up on her mother in the mean
time."

Mama: "I don't think that's a good idea, let's wait for
the doctor first and hear what they say about Lele
and we will ask Lele permission to see her mother."

Me: "Okay."

We waited for the doctor for another hour and finally she came to out.

Me: "Dr is she okay?"

Dr: "Can I kindly speak to the family please?"

Mama: "We are the only people closest to the fimly that she has right now."

Dr: "Okay, please come this way." We followed her to her office.

She asked asked us to sit down.

Me: "Dr is Lele okay? Will she be okay?"

Dr: "Yes, she is fine for now..."

Me: "What do you mean for now?"

Mama: "Nthabiseng give her time to explain."

Me: "I'm sorry."

Dr: "It's okay, she is out of danger for now as I was saying. According to my observations, Miss

Motaung might be danger to herself, I have notice fresh cuts on her wrist and her waist and luckily we managed to drain the little water that was in her lungs, but there's more. "

Mama:" What is it? "

Dr:" There was semen on her thighs, it seems like she was raped, and there's a small cut on her virgina that might prove that someone forcefully forced himself in her."

I didn't even know how to react to everything being said. This is too much.

Dr:" I have called the police in the meantime and opened a rape kit on her behalf, did you perhaps find anything when you found her in the house? "

My mother looked at me, she was trying very hard to be strong for me but you can literally see that was breaking for Lele like I was. I was in tears.

Me:" If I can remember properly I saw her underwear of the floor but I didn't take it to the head, I only remembered now when in the corridor."

Dr: "Were they wet?"

Me: "I don't know, I didn't check."

Dr: "Okay, Miss Motaung is going to need psychological help and not only that, she will need emotional support too. This might be a huge turn in her life, she might not be able to be herself after this. The hospital can provide her with a therapy, but the journey to recovery is going to be hard and very long. This can lead to depression... "

Me:" Doctor can I at least see her? "

Dr:" Not now, the police will want to see her first and they might also want to talk to you."

I nodded, my mom was brushing my back. Why does bad things happen to good people? What has Lele done to deserve such pain? Both her parents are hospitalized, now Naomi is all by herself.

Dr:" I will give two a moment, please excuse me. "

Mama:" Thank you Dr."

She walked out.

Mama: "You will have to be strong for Lele baby, she needs you now more than ever."

Me: "I know mama, how are we going to break the news to her parents? They will have to know one way or the other."

Mama: "I will figure that one out, stop stressing yourself. Let's go, maybe the police are done with her."

Me: "I wonder who raped her. Who could've possible went inside the house? I mean the doors were locked and the only door that was left unlocked was the back door and the garage door."

Mama: "I also don't know, maybe someone who has access to the house."

Me: "But who?"

Mama: "I don't know too." There are so many loopholes in this thing. Who could've went to her house? I mean both the parents are hospitalized, MmaNakedi doesn't have boy child that we know of, then who?

Mark Mofokeng

We gather on the table, the kids and Ruth, what hurt me the most in this whole situation is that Ruth doesn't even look or sound remorseful. She has been acting like she did nothing wrong and she seriously sees nothing wrong with what she did.

Oratile: "Mama, care to explain to us what is this nonsense?"

Ruth: "Oratil you will not talk to me like I'm your friend, I'm still your mother."

Oratile: "Oh so you still remember that you are my mind but when you were out there opening legs to another man you forgot that and now you want me to respect you?"

She stood up to slap her and I stopped.

Me: "Truth is bitter right? Don't take your bitchiness out of the child. We are in this mess because of your behavior and now when the children need to understand why you did what you did you want to

bit them? For what? You can't handle the fact that you are a whore?"

Ruth:" I don't know why I'm sitting here because it's clear that we are not here to look for solutions but to judge me. You forget that you are the reason why everything happened. You pushed me I to his arms and now you want to act all holy holy on me. "

Wisdom:" How did dad push you into that man's arms? Did he hold a gun on your head and force you to sleep with him? "

Ruth:" Hold your horse wena because that man you are referring to is your father, your own flesh and blood. "

Wisdom:" I don't have any other father beside this man standing here."

Ruth:" That's what you tell yourself but between you and I we know the truth."

Wisdom:" Aren't you even ashamed of yourself?"

Ruth:" Ashamed of what? That my husband couldn't fuck me the way I wanted and I went to help myself

outside my marriage? Unfortunately son, I'm not ashamed. "

Wisdom hit the table with a fist. He was frustrated. If there's one thing I don't want to do was to be angry in front of this lose Jezabel, I will never give her the benefit of a doubt.

Wisdom:" Mother do you even know that I could possibly have a child with my own sister? And yet you sit and you act like you don't care?"

Mercy: "Whoa, what? What do you mean you could possibly have a child with your own sister?"

Ruth: "What are you talking about?"

Wisdom: "I slept with Palesa ages ago, and wena you are sitting here being proud of what you did? Are you being for real now? Like for real?"

Mercy jumped on Wisdom and began to hitting him.

Me: "Woah stop it, fighting won't solve anything and you might hurt the baby."

Mercy: "You slept with my best friend? My best friend Wizzy and you didn't tell me? Wow, all those

years Lele was gone it wasn't cancer and you knew it damn it."

Me: "Calm down Mercy. You see what your actions have caused us? Are you still proud of yourself? Look now, your son has a baby with his own sister, are you happy?"

She sat down on the floor with tearing down.

Ruth: "I didn't mean for all of this. I promise. Why didn't you tell me Wizzy?"

Wisdom: "Why? Why didn't I tell you mother? I'm sure your boyfriend told you. You knew but you decided to turn a blind eye on it. I hate you." He threw the dishes on the floor and walked out.

Oratile: "I hope you will rot in hell one day." She threw the table cloth on her and also walked out. Things shouldn't have went like this, but what did I expect, I bet more secret are yet to be out them.

Me: "Let me take you home, this is not a conjucive

place for a pregnant woman." She followed me without any hesitation....

Kgosi Mankoe

I have arrived in Mokapne about an hour ago, I have tried to get hold of Palesa but still her phone is off, I tried to call Wisdom too but his phone has been off.

Me:" Palesa where are you? Why are you not answering your phone?"

I sat in the car, I was parked on two houses away from hers, I was scared to go in, what if her parents are around? What if her parents are around? I don't want to lend her in trouble...

I saw a man getting out of the gate, he was wearing a cap I couldn't properly see his face, maybe is her

father...maybe she is alone, finding her mother is better than her father. I driver bit forward and parked on the gate after the man had turned to the next street. I got out of the car, the gate was n't locked, I went in. The front doors were opened. I knocked a couple of times with no one answering, I got in and the whole house was mess.

Things were broken on the floor.

What the hell happened here?

[03/12, 15:21] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 21

Mercy M. Mofokeng

Daddy dropped me at home. I was very furious, so angry to a point where I just wanted to squeeze the

life out of Wisdom. I doubt I would want to see him right because of what he did to me. Daddy didn't stay long, he just dropped me and greeted my mother. The poor man was strained. I don't even know how he will look at the congregation tomorrow during the Wednesday service.

I'm sure he feeler judged by everyone on the street, the pity he will receive from everyone. What kind of family did I get married into? Ruth is not even ashamed of herself, she has done too much damage and this doesn't only affect her, but it affect all of us now. How does she sleep at night with everything she has done? Not even being ashamed of acknowledging it. Now our lives are messed up, how do I live with my husband knowing that he impregnated my best friend, not only my best friend his sister, this whole thing is messed up.

Mama: "Drink this, it will help you to calm down." I have been pacing up and down the room. I haven't

told my mother anything but I know that news flies in Kasi, she knows for sure what went down. I mean we have noisy neighbors who don't know how to keep things to themselves, and they will make sure that they turn you into the topic for a while. They will always remember you with something bad/ embarrassing you did.

Me: "Thank you."

Mama: "You need to relax, stressing is not good for the baby."

Me: "How do I relax after everything, how can Lele keep this from me? I thought she was my best friend but no, she didn't trust me enough to tell me."

Mama: "What are you talking about?"

Me: "Can you believe that Wisdom slept with Palesa? He impregnated his own sister mama, his own sister all because of his mother's lies. What kind of a mother does this? Ruth is so evil, I swear she doesn't have a heart that woman." Mama gasped and sat down after a huge sigh. I'm not surprised by her actions.

Mama:" I thought bomakhelwa ba a swaswa Mercy wena. Iyoh Modimo wa Israele." (I thought our neighbors were lying.)

Mama:" Yah, Ruth is a disgrace to womanhood I tell you."

Me: "She doesn't deserve to be a mother at all, look now? How are we going to get over this? Wisdom too just walked out on me. How do I look at Lele now? Why didn't she tell me?"

Mama: "What if Wisdom raped her? Where is the child if she was indeed pregnant?"

Exactly, where is the child?

Kgosi Mankoe

O walked out the yard and I saw a little girl with an older lady playing next door.

Me: "Excuse me, hello." The older one came to the fence.

Nomsa: "Hi."

Me: "There's a lady that stays in this house, her name is Palesa, do you perhaps know where she is?"

Nomsa: "Buti ke mang ka lebitso? I can't just tell a stranger about my neighbor's whereabouts."

Me: "Oh sorry, I'm Kgosi, she is my friend. I have been trying to get hold of her for some time now and she is not answering her phone and she is not responding to my texts either."

Nomsa: "I'm sorry Buti, but I just can't disclose her whereabouts, I still don't trust you." I took out my phone and showed her our whatsapp conversation and lucky for me she believed me.

Nomsa: "She is at the hospital..."

Me: "What, what happened to her? Which hospital?"

Nomsa: "She tried to commit suicide, and lucky enough it all went wrong."

Me: "Which hospital is she at? Please tell me." I swear I felt my heart slowly failing me. Why will she try to kill herself?

She told me the name of the hospital and gave me the directions. I thanked her and quickly drove off. I kept asking myself why will she want to kill herself. Why didn't she try to reach out to me?

I arrived at the hospital and asked about her, they told me where she was but they said she was still with the police.

I was directed to the waiting area and there was a lady she loved posting on her WhatsApp statuses on most of her statuses. She might not know me but Palesa told me about her, she said she is her sister like. She was with another woman leaning on her shoulder. She was bit distrustful. The other woman kept on brushing her back.

Me: "Dumelang." (Greetings)

Naledi(Nthabi's mom): "Ashe papa, le kae?" (How are you?)

Me: "Ke teng le kae Mama?" (I'm good thanks and how are you?)

Naledi: "Re Gona." (I'm good.)

Me: "I'm here to see Palesa, do you perhaps know her ward?"

Nthabi: "Are you that guy from Wisdom's wedding?"

Me: "Yes, and you must be Nthabiseng."

Nthabi: "How do you know me?"

Me: "Palesa told me about you."

Nthabi: "Oh, okay, we are also waiting for the doctor to give us feedback. What is your name? I have never heard her talking about you."

Me: "I'm Kgosi, her friend."

Naledi: "Sit down child. I'm sure she will be delighted to see you."

Me: "Thank you." I sat down and we were all silent.

After an hour or so the doctor came with two police officers. We all stood in anticipation.

Dr: "Ms Motaung is fine and a case is going to be opened and the investigation begins now, now the police wants to see the house and ask you few questions."

Nthabi: "Okay, as long as you will arrest the culprit that did this to my friend."

Officer: "We will sure do everything in our power to arrest him."

Naledi: "Dr, what about her parents? They were also admitted here a day before yesterday. How are they doing?"

Dr: "The father was discharged on the very Monday he came here and the mother is stable now, but she still in an induced comma until the swelling on her ribs goes down."

Nthabi: "Her father was discharged? Then where is he? I mean if he was discharged, Palesa would have never been raped because he will be home with her."

Me: "When I was by the house I saw a man figure getting out of the gate, he looked like someone who was running away."

Officer: "Can you describe the person you saw?"

Me: "Yes, he is tall, broad structure, and dark in complexion, with Grey beard. He was wearing black trousers and red hoody and a cap."

Nthabi: "A red hoody with some prints in front?"

Me: "I'm not quite sure, I can't remember."

Nthabi: "Palesa was also wearing a red hoody on Monday night and it belongs to his father."

Me: "And the house was messy. I think he was looking for something."

Officer: "Did you touch anything in the house?"

Me: "No, I didn't touch anything, I knew that it might mess up the evidence if I do."

Officer: "But what were you doing at Miss Motaung's home?"

I explained my story to them and I even showed them the text messages between me and Palesa that we agreed that I will come and see her on Wednesday and when she was not answering her cell phone I took it upon myself to come and check if she was okay.

They took Nthabiseng to question her, and they went to Palesa's house, the officers took my numbers and told me not to leave town until they find something solid regarding the case.

I sat down and waited for the visiting hours to see Palesa. I called my mother to tell that I arrived safely.

Me: "Mommy dearest."

Mama: "Kgosi, where are you? I have been worried sick about you and you were not answering your cell phone."

Me: "I know, I'm sorry. I arrived safely and Palesa is in the hospital."

Mama: "Why? What happened? Is she okay?"

Me: "I don't really know what happened but she is not good at all and the situation seems bad. Now the police says I shouldn't leave t..."

Mama: "Kgosi what did you do? What did you get yourself into?"

Me: "I did nothing wrong. It is just a procedure mommy, and you of all people knows the law mother anyone. I was at the crime scene before the police arrived and I had to tell them before someone told them because I could have ended up in trouble with the law. "

Mama:" I'm coming there right away, I will see you later on. Which B&B did you book yourself into?"

Me:" Mommy no, you know Kgomots o's family is coming tomorrow, you can't leave. "

Mama:" The baby is not running away mos? I can't let you be there all by yourself, your father will handle them and you said the baby might not be yours, so I'm saving myself to sit down and pretend like I'm happy with whatever they want. "

Me:" Okay fine, but promise me that you will behave. "

Mama:" What are you trying to say? I will beat your ass in front of that girlfriend of yours. " There's no need fighting her because whether I like it or not, she will come nje.

Me:" I know you will. But mother, tomorrow is church service nje, and.. "

Mama:" Kgosi, am I God? If people come to church to see me than they must just stay home. I'm not God and when my children needs me, I will travel to the end of the earth to be with them. Your father is around. Sharp, let me pack. I love you. "

Me:" Okay, I love you too. "

She hung up.

*

I went to her ward shown by the nurse. She was facing the ceiling with tears running down her face. She looked shuttered and broken. She looked disconnected from reality. She didn't even raise her head to check who was there.

Me:" Hey. " She didn't say anything, she didn't even look at me, she just cried.

I rushed to her and tried to hold but she shifted uncomfortably.

What's wrong? What have I done? Does she hate me?

.

[03/12, 15:21] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 22

William Motaung

Earlier on..

Me: "I have been waiting for you for a long time now. Where the hell where you?"

Tim: "Hai, stop shouting, I'm not your puppet and you think I can just come straight here? What if someone is following me?"

Me: "Fine, so, did you get it? And why are you even wearing my jersey? Are you crazy?"

Tim: "Hey, chill what's wrong with you kante?"

Me: "Don't fucken tell me to chill when you know that if they saw you you, I will be the fact suspect. Did you get the key or not?"

He threw a bunch of keys at me, I fumbled with them trying to search for one specific key I'm looking for but there was non.

Me:" Wtf, there's no key here. Did you really check properly where I directed? "

Tim:" Yes those were the only keys in there and beside, your daughter distracted me a bit?."

Me: "Damn, she saw you?"

Tim: "No, I saw her, she was trying to kill herself in a bath tube, I got her out and damn her pussy was so inviting anf I just had to help myself with. She was so tight and warm."

Me: "You raped my daughter? Timothy, you forced yourself in my child?" I swear my heart was on my throat, my anger was getting better of me and his grin made things worse. I found myself punching him couple of times, releasing all the anger I have in me in him. I could see the face if Ella crying out for helping but this basturd was enjoying himself.

How could he rape her? How could he do this? To me?

Me: "Next time when you decide to take advantage

of another woman you will think of this." I took out a small knife in my pocket and cut through his trousers, I cut his penis, just a small piece of it. He was groaning in pain.

I know I haven't been a good father to her, but I would never allow another man to violate my daughter like that, it has been hard for me coming to terms in accepting that his Wisdom raped her simply because he is my girlfriend son, but that doesn't mean he is off the hook. I'm going to kill him one day, I want to show him that real man don't rape women....

I left him bleeding in the ground and went home....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I don't know how I should feel. When I found out that I'm still alive, I was really angry with myself and

with God. How can he allow me to live? How do I live through this pain? How do I go on like nothing is hurting me? Why is the world so cruel. That guy who raped why didn't he just strangle me to death? Maybe everything could've been all better. I don't have any reason to live. I will never be any good to my daughter, let alone, who will ever want to marry a loose woman like me?

The pain in my heart is throbbing through my throat. It is too much to take it all in. I can't go through like this. I need an escape, I need somewhere to run away from reality. I don't think I will ever be able to come out of this whole. Everything is too much to take it in.

When Kgosi walked in, I thought he came to finish me off. He scared me so much, as much as I saw pain in his eyes when I refused him to touch me, I also didn't want to have a panic attack. Everything from Wisdom to that stranger that came to have his

way in me played vividly in my mind for a good minute. He was taken off, and I seriously didn't mean for all of that to happen, but I just can't bring myself to be comfortable around him.

He has been sitting done in the chair for about two hours now, with no single word said. I could hardly close my eyes because I don't trust him, I hate men. All of them are cut from the same cloth, starting with my very own father. I don't think I will ever be comfortable around them.

The doctor came in few minutes later to check up on me. They stitched me up on my virgina because it was cut, but she assured me that it is nothing major I will be fine. They ran all sort of test and gave me morning after pill, I will be on it for the next 72 hours.

Dr: "Mr..."

Kgosi: "Just Kgosi."

Dr: "Kgosi, may you kindly give us privacy you will be back afterwards?"

Kgosi: "Okay." He walked out and the Dr turned to me.

Dr: "Your results are back, I asked them to look at them quickly, and they are all negative but you will still be on the pill and all other medication we have prescribed for you."

Me: "Okay, thank you."

Dr: "I know what you went through is very traumatizing and I have spoke to the hospital psychologist, Dr Travis."

Me: "Is he a guy?" I knew he is a guy, but I just wanted to be sure. I don't think I will survive.

Dr: "Yes he is, but I promise you that he will never do you any harm, he is just here to assist you nothing much. If you don't feel comfortable with him, you can bring a friend or your mother, someone you will be safe with."

I guess I didn't have much of a choice.

Me:" Okay. "

Dr:" I promise you that you will be okay. This will pass and you are a very strong woman and you are not a victim in this okay? You didn't ask to be raped and it wasn't your fault. " Tears escaped my eyes. She squeezed my shoulder for assurance.

Dr:" I will come back again later to check up on you and introduce you to Dr Travis. "

Me:" Okay, thank you. "

She walked out, leaving me all by myself to drown in my loneliness again. A door opened up and Kgosi walked in with a woman who looked older, thick and very beautiful. Her skin is so smooth and cute small pouted lips.

Kgosi;" Hey, I'm not here to scare you off, I promise."He threw his hands in the air in surrendering.

I shifted uncomfortably, and sat down with my back on the pillows.

Londi: "He won't hurt you, that I promise you. I'm here. "

Her aura was inviting, but I couldn't let my gut off. I nodded and she sat on the chair next me and Kgosi stood by her side.

Kgosi: "How are you?" I kept quiet, I have no time to lie about how I am, how I'm feeling, I feel dirty, I feel broken, I feel hurt, I'm disturbed, I'm broken, I don't trust anyone. Yes how is that?

Londi: "I'm his mother, Londiwe. I know what happened to you is very horrible and trust me I won't wish that to happen even to my worst enemy. I have been through that, I know the pain of being violated, I know the pain of someone penetrating deep inside you without your consent, and baby trust me it wasn't any of your fault, you didn't ask for this to happen. Don't bottle it up inside you, don't give that rapist a chance to rape you each and everyday of your life by letting him take the joy away from you.

You are fearfully and wonderfully made, you are the chosen of God. God loves you so much, hence you are still here and alive today, he has a great purpose about your life..."

Why is she saying all the right words? How did she even find out what happened to me? How does she know all of that? My pain is unbearable, I can't take it in, I wish to sleep and never wake up again. Why is she telling me all this? Where was God when everything happened to me? Why did God let that monster have his way on me? I can't, I can't, I just can't continue like this. God take me and take away this pain.

Kgosi was in tears, he held his mother's shoulder and his mother too was crying. She got up and sat of the edge of the bed. She opened her arms for me and I went in, she cupped me like a little baby in her arms and I let it all out. I cried for my mother, I cried for my daughter and I also cried for myself.

Londi: "It's okay baby, let it all out, it won't be that easy but first step to healing is acknowledging that you are hurt, the road to recovery and discovery is never easy, but you need to let go, allow yourself to deal with the past first and focus on the future. "

She continued to brush my back, I finally I managed to calm down, and I found Kgosi's hand on my shoulder, I gently moved it away from me. He got the message and stepped back.

Londi:" You need to give her some space baby, she is not in the right state of mind but be there for her." She said to Kgosi and he nodded and sat down on the chair near the door. "

Londi:" Are you okay? "She smiled.

I just nodded.

Londi:" Okay, I will come and see you tomorrow

before I leave okay? You are going to be fine. These things takes time but allow yourself to feel each and every process and be very present in each one. Don't be too hard on yourself and remember, it is okay to cry, it also okay to just stop and shut the world out, it okay not to be okay at all. We all have our own way of healing and dealing with things. What is more important is for you to be present always okay? "

I nodded.

Londi:" Come on let me pray for you." She held out her hand to Kgosi and the other one to me, I just obliged but I didn't allow Kgosi to touch me, he just placed his hand on the bed. I guess he is not much of talker sometimes.

Londi:" God of the universe, God of all creation, I humbly come before you in the name of Jesus to pray for healing and restoration of your daughter

here who is a victim of rape and sexual assaults. I call upon you the God of mercy and grace. Lord, she need you. I ask you to give ear to her cry for she is broken and hurting. Let her feel the warmth and truth of your love. Break all hindrances to her healing.

God , I ask you to reach the very depths of her pains, to the core of her sorrow and hurt. Heal, mend and restore her soul. Draw her out of the depths of darkness, draw them out of the nightmares of trauma into your peace, warmth and light. Restore what has been stolen. Restore her virtue. Restore physical, mental, emotional and spiritual health. Restore the mind to comprehend, reason, understand and think once again. Restore the heart to feel the warmth of love again, to embrace the good in life. Take her through this journey to the other side of health and restoration. Give her the strength and hope to endure. Carry her through this season to your time of deliverance into a new life.

Hear her cry out to you day and night. See the invisible tears in her eyes, feel the pain in her souls.

Deliver her from the evils in her life. Heal the child that is now an adult but still a child in pain and torment inside.

God , I ask you to give hope where there is no hope. Bring peace where there is no peace. Restore joy where there is no joy. Where there is depression, sadness, emptiness, hopelessness, darkness and voids fill with your love, hope, peace, joy and life. Connect her with others who have hearts of compassion and empathy for victims of rape, and sexual assaults. Connect with her with those who have taken this journey and understand the traumas, torments, trails and triumphs. . Give voice to the voiceless, strength to the strengthless. Help those who are strong to carry the weak until they too become strong.

God I thank you for healing and restoration. Your Word says ” Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened” (Matt 7:7-8) . I ask these things in

the mighty name of J esus Christ and we thank you for giving us our petition. In J esus name. Amen!"

[03/12, 15:22] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 23

Mercy M. Mofokeng

Few days later

Being home and not being able to see nor talk to Wisdom was slowly driving me crazy, where the hell is he? Every since he left me that day, he never showed up not spoke to me. I know he is hurting and as much as he is hurting, I'm also hurting, I need answers, I need to know why he hid the fact that he slept with my own friend. How is that normal, how is that possible, his own sister? This is very insane.

I went to Palesa's house a couple of times but she wasn't around, I asked Nthabiseng but she never liked me, so she didn't tell me where she is. Plus her house was locked up.

Me: "Mama, I'm leaving."

Mama: "Where are you going?"

Me: "I'm going back to my house, if I stay another minute, I will go crazy, I need answers, and the only person who will give me answers is my husband."

Mama: "Don't you think you are overreacting? I mean like you said, he slept with Palesa before you guys started dating. So how did he cheat on you?"

Me: "How did he cheat on me? Are you seriously asking me that question? He slept with my best friend, my best friend mama and you are asking me how did he cheat on me? Please don't drive me crazy mama, don't you dare."

Mama: "Okay fine, then how will knowing the truth

help you? Are you going to pack your back and leave him? Look here Mercy, I never liked this boy, nor his family for that matter, I just tolerated him and seriously I'm not going to start liking him now, but marriage is not a walk in a park girly, if you think that every time when you are having problems with your husband, you are always going to jump high and low, then you are not solving anything. This attitude of yours it won't take you anywhere. So I suggest you better chill before you say something you will live to regret it. "

I yanked my hand and sat down.

Me:" But mama I just want to know the truth is that too much to ask? "

Mama:" It's not, but how will you find the truth while you are angry? Okay, ke, go, go and push him further because that's exactly what you want right?"

Me: "Fine, I'm going to my room." She shook her head as I passed her to my room. I dialed Wisdom's number one more time but it went straight to

voicemail. I threw my phone across the room frustrated and it hit the mirror.

Mama: "Don't break my furniture phulis i, if you want to vent, go and vent outside, not in my house especially on my furniture." She screamed her lungs out on me. What's wrong with her? It's more like she is the one who is pregnant not me. Her moods are really killing my vibe, well maybe she is not moody but I find her moody or maybe grumpy.

Palesa Ella Motaung

I came home yesterday, but I didn't sleep in the house, I went to my room with Naomi. She was very clingy, she didn't even want me to leave her side. Can you blame her though. She has been through a lot and now it's affecting her mentally and emotionally.

We were cuddling on the bed, she hasn't been to school ever since the fall out that happened at home, she is attending therapy all thanks to Nthabi's mother but she said she hasn't made any progress yet, she isn't talking or saying anything just yet.

Me: "Do you want food?" She shook her head no.

Me: "Baby you have to eat something, for me please?"

Naomi: "I want mommy." She cried.

Me: "Okay, we will go and see mama only if you agree to eat and finish your food."

Naomi: "Do you promise?"

Me: "Pinky promise?"

She smiled. I made food for her and she ate quickly and I changed her clothes and we left. I met Kgosi outside, I thought he left, I asked him to leave. I'm not in a good space to be around him but it seems like ugwu here doesn't want to hear it. He has been

calling me for the past few days and it's seriously getting on my last nerve. I have so many things to deal with not mention that I also have Dr Travis to deal with. I only attend therapy with him once and it didn't go pretty well, he is not much of a Doctor. We just kept quiet the whole session. He never said a single word beside asking me if I'm really to talk and that was it from there, he kept quiet and studied my mind I guess? He just kept on writing in the file.

Kgosi: "Where are you two going?" He got out of his red Ranger Rover sport.

Me: "Kgosi please, I asked you to leave me alone, can you kindly do that for me?"

Kgosi: "Palesa please, I don't want anything from you, I just want to be your friend. Is that too much to ask?"

Me: "Do you also want to have your way with me?"

Kgosi: "I will never do that to you. I just want to be there for you. I don't want anything in return, no funny business I swear."

Me: "Okay fine, but can you please leave me alone? I will call you."

Kgosi: "Damn Palesa, is being there for you really that annoying? Hop in, let me take you guys to wherever you are going."

Me: "We will use a taxi thank you. Bye."

I pulled Naomi and we left. I was pissed, why doesn't he get the message that I'm not comfortable around any man? I got a taxi to the hospital and we went to mama's ward. She was up, her face was now much better, only her eye was still red and purple on the side but she was doing better than the other days.

Naomi: "Mama." She jumped on her bed and mama flinched in pain.

Me: "Take it easy on her Nana, she is still in pain."

Naomi: "Sorry mama, are you okay?" She placed her tiny hand on her face looking in her eyes.

Mama: "I'm good baby, how are you?" She perked her lips.

Naomi: "I'm fine. Mama I missed you. I thought you were not going to come back to me."

Mama: "Mama is not going anywhere baby, she will forever be here okay?"

She nodded rapidly.

Mama: "How are you baby?" She opened her arm for me and I crouched down to give her a side.

Me: "Now that you are awake I'm much better."

She stared deep into my eyes like she was searching deep into my soul, I couldn't continue looking at her.

Mama: "What's wrong? You are not okay."

Me: "I'm okay mama, not need to worry about me."

Mama: "You know I'm your mother right?" I nodded with tears already betraying me. I could feel my heart literally breaking again. I can't keep on like this, I thought I will bury this pain like I did with Wisdom but I can't its too much for me. I can't even sleep at night because of nightmares.

I'm scared to be alone, I'm scared of the dark, I'm scared to just be me. Everytime I walk I feel like people see right through me.

Mama: "It's okay baby, mama is here now. I'm sorry I wasn't there to protect you." She made me sit on the bed and cupped me in her arms. My mom is not that thick but she is a plus size woman just like I am, but she is bigger than me.

Me: "Mama it hurts.."

Mama: "I'm sorry, baby".

Naomi: "I'm sorry Ella, is it my fault?" Her tiny voice made me laugh through the tears.

Me: "No baby, it's not your fault, thank you." I kissed her forehead.

Mama: "Where is your father?" She looked at me and I looked at Naomi, I don't think Naomi is ready to relive those memories now, she seems happy to see mama, so I don't want to break her again, so is better we don't talk about papa now.

Me: "I don't think we should talk about him, a lot has happened that you need to know."

She looked at me with pleading eyes and we were disturbed by a familiar voice

Voice: "Hey Lele girl" I hope you are not deceiving me, I hope and I pray my ears hears properly.

Me: "Sesi Nyeleti?" She was standing at the door with a beautiful smile. It's been a while since I spoke to her, and I don't when last did I see her. She looks so cute and very much pregnant. Whaaaa.

Nyeleti; "Hey stranger."

Me: "What are you doing here?" I ran to her and hugged.

Nyeleti: "You thought you can run away from me andithi? Now I found you. I missed you."

Me; "I missed you too, look at you, you look very..."

Nyeleti: "Very pregnant."

Me: "Very beautiful I was going to say and very

pregnant of course. What are you doing here?"

Nyeleti: "I was in the neighborhood for work and I saw you earlier on walking in at the reception so I asked around if they you knew and it seems like you are very famous around here. "

Me:" Okay... So, are you married? "She nodded and smiled... Wow

Me:" Wow, you and Buti Thabiso were goals I tell you. "

Nyeleti:" Thank you, so is that the little Naomi? "I nodded and smiled.

Nyeleti:" She is all groaned up and beautiful. "

Me:" And very naughty. "

Nyeleti:" Le kae Ma? " She walked in holding my hand like she used to do in the olden days, she was the best thing that has ever happened to me.

Mama:" Re Gona le kae sesi?"

Nyeleti: "Re Gona mama, hey baby how are you?"

Naomi: "I'm good auntie how are You?"

Nyeleti: "Wow, she is so cute, I'm good."

Me: "Mama do you still remember sesi Nyeleti?"

Mama: "How can I forget her when she was so kind to you. Is good to see you again."

Nyeleti: "Likewise, can I take this little one out for ice cream? Seems like I walked on a serious conversation."

Mama: "Please do, Nono, please go with aunti to buy ice cream and bring mama and sesi some neh?"

Naomi: "Auntie, I only eat Mcflurry oreo, and Ella only likes plain ice cream and mama never eats ice cream so I buy her my favorite."

Nyeleti: "Wow, okay, I guess Mc'IDonald it is then, after you young lady."

She rushed out and Nyeleti asked me to give her my numbers so that she can call me when they are done.

Mama: "So, where is your father?" She couldn't even

wait for them to leave I guess

Me: "I don't know, I have never seen him but they say they discharged him."

Mama: "So, what has been going on?"

Me: "Nothing much, you just need to get better and come home, we miss you."

Mama: "I know, but what are you hiding from me?"

Me: "Nothing mama."

Mama: "Lele I hope for your own sake you are telling the truth." I nodded and looked down.

Mama: "I need you to do me a favor."

Me: "What is it?"

Mama: "In Nonovs bedroom, in her toy basket, there are keys for the safe, the safe in in the garage, behind the red electricity box, just pull it and you will see another small door open it and there's money there, I'm sure your father is looking for it, and go to the back and look for Nora there and tell her to bank the money into 'Nono's account' she knows what is that and please be careful it's a lot of money."

Me: "Mah, is that the reason papa was beating you up for the other day?"

Mama: "Stop asking too many questions Lele and do as I say, if your father thinks I'm stupid and I will let him divorce me without anything, then he sure doesn't know me."

Me: "He wants a divorce?"

She looked at me and tears escaped her eye.

Mama: "After everything I have through because of him, after turning my back on my own family for him and now he wants to leave me, with nothing Palesa, with nothing, nothing at all, your father is very selfish, very selfish. He even accuses me of cheating, me cheating? He claims that you are not his child, after he let his friends rape me, 6 of them, and he stood there and did nothing, he did nothing Lele afterwards he also got on top of me and had his way on me too, he didn't even think about the pain I was feeling, I cried for him to stop, to stop his friends but he stood there and did nothing, he laughed at me instead, told me how useless I am

because I couldn't bear a child for him, he insulted me and called me all sorts of names and when he was done, he left me there helplessly, on the cold floor with nothing, he gave me wet blanket and put it on me, I didn't have the strength to fight him... "

I can't take this in, I can't...

[03/12, 15:22] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 24

Kgosi Mankoe

I finished dressing up, thank God mommy left because I couldn't breath with her taking all my space. She refused to book a room for herself and decided to crush with but it was just for a day, and she left the following day after the predicament dad had with Kgomots'o's family. Apparently they

wanted me to be there and all the drama and they also want Khomots'o to move in with us as they can't take care of her because of her medical conditions. I don't know where I fit there but I asked mommy to deal with it as I didn't have the energy and strength to be entertaining them.

I have enough on my plate already. Palesa doesn't want to talk to me, not to mention she doesn't even want to see me. I'm trying so hard not to snap or be angry but it's hard when she is pushing me away. I was called at the station to clear my name yesterday after I saw her with her baby sister. There no finger prints that were matching mine and what was more intriguing is that they said that the finger prints don't match those of Palesa's father, but if some guy who has been arrested a couple of times for couple of crimes and so they are currently looking for him.

"I'm running late." I said to myself as I took my

watch from the sideboard along with my keys. I'm meeting up with Wisdom for late lunch at some hotel. He gave me coordinates. It's been a while since I have been trying to get hold of him with no luck but yesterday when he called he I answered. He was supposed to be back at work but it seems like his leave days were extended.

I drove to the destination and I found already waiting drinking whiskey. "Okay, I didn't know that he drinks alcohol, but from what I know and what he told me, he doesn't drink." Anyway, it's none of my business.

He got up to greet me with a shoulder hug when he saw me and I settled on a chair opposite him. The waiter didn't take time to bring menu and to take my drink order, I went with water and lemon, I didn't feel like drinking anything to be honest.

Me: "You don't look like a guy who got married

about a week ago." I sat back to look at him as he was about to lie to me.

Wisdom: "It's been rough days, but I'm all good and my wife is good too." Lies, well, I just know when a person lies, I don't know if it's because of law part of it but I tend to just know when a person is not being honest with me but funny enough, I never confront them, unless of course we are in court and I'm forced to get the truth out of you.

Me: "I can tell that, but I guess is not anything you won't be able to solve (he looked at me with a questioning look), I mean with your wife of course."

He gulped the rest of the whiskey in his glass and raised his hand for a waiter to come and fill it up. The place wasn't that full but there were people.

Wisdom: "I messed up really bad, I actually fucked up. "

The waiter brought our drinks both his whisky and my water and he gulped it down again and handed the glass back to the waiter.

Me: "Please bring him water with lemon and coffee,

make it strong." I objected him as he was about to order another glass of whiskey.

Waiter: "Come in right up." I nodded and he walked away.

Me: "Drinking won't solve your problems dude, be a man and face them head on. Sitting here will only make you depressed."

Wisdom: "I wish it was that easy, I mean how do get over the fact that you might have a child with your own sister? I mean is that normal? Is that even right?" He buried his hand into his hands.

Me: "Woah, what are you talking about? What do you mean having a child with your own sister?"

Wisdom: "Exactly, my wife's own friend, I mean how messed up is this?"

Wow, I didn't even know what to say, this is really bad.

I thought I had problems but this guy sitting next to me, has a lot. I mean how does the parents feel?

About his wife?

Me: "Wow, you didn't know that she was your own sister?"

Wisdom: "Nope, I didn't know, and it happened way before I even dated my own wife and she is very furious and it's not only that, I also found out that the man who raised me for the past 27 years, is not my biological father."

Eh?

Me: "What? Bra Mark is not your real dad? Woah, this is too messed but drinking is not solving anything don't you think?"

Wisdom: "Don't you think I know? I won't be sitting here if I didn't know that drinking won't solve my problem, but what should I do? I'm scared to be sober because this shit is too much for me. The pain and shame I put the poor girl for the past 10 years? Only to find that she is my sister? This is karma man, it's dealing with me for what I did. I'm my own father's son. I did exactly what he did to my

mother. I don't even know the child is alive or dead."

Wow....

Palesa Ella Motaung

Lately I haven't been coping at all. After what mama told me, I don't know how I should feel. Everything is too much for me and I'm falling behind on my school work, I can't even concentrate to begin with.

She told me that they had done a DNA test and it proved that Motaung is my father but he has been having a hard time admitting that hence he always act bad with me.

Today I dropped off Naomi at Nthabi's house in the morning, Nthabi's mother offered to take her to school and come back with everyday, her school is

not far from Naomi's school.

I'm going to fetch mama, she is being discharged, I haven't seen my father since that fateful day, I haven't been at the house because I'm scared to be alone in the house. I went to pass by home to take fresh clothes for her.

There was no one when I arrived. I went to her room and packed clothes for her when I was searching for underwears for her, I mistakenly opened papa's drawer I saw a gun, I nearly fainted. I mean I only see guns in TV, I have never seen one in real life this close unless from police officers which is almost not near. I took it out and it was bit heavy.

"Why does he have a gun?" I asked my self as I held it out. I thought we were a Christian family but lately I doubt we are. My family is messed up to the core. I don't even know why we go to church, with so much secrets. I wonder what did the Mofokeng family see in appointing them church leaders, or maybe Ruth

just wanted to have my father closer to her. I mean they used to have so many secret meeting alone discussing "church matters" but now that I see it, it was never church meetings related. They just wanted to have time to do their shameful things.

I packed the bag and placed the gun where I found it and left to the hospital.. My mother had already signed the discharge forms, she was waiting for me. She dressed up and we took a meter taxi, it was the only sensible transportation we could use because going to the taxi in her state wasn't safe. She is fine but I'm just trying to be cautious with her. If only I could drive I could have used her car but I can't drive.

We arrived home and the door was wide opened.

Mama: "He is back."

Me: "Maybe we should go to my place."

Mama: "No, if there's one person who must live is him. We are not going anywhere."

Me: "But mama, I don't want to fight, especially with him."

Mama: "I will protect you, he won't do anything to you."

Me: "You can't even walk properly for your own life, how are you going to protect me?" I eyed her and she smiled.

Mama: "I'm your mother child, I will do everything and anything to protect you, whether I'm sick or not. I will risk my life for you."

Me: "Hmmm, one wrong move, we are leaving."

Mama: "Deal."

We walked in and we found him seated on the couch drinking coffee with no care in the world. The TV was on playing softly.

My mother greeted him and he greeted back, I wasn't even going to bother myself because my heart was pumping out of my chest, I'm scared of him adm it's no secret. Seeing him makes me want to puke or struggle him to death. He is a monster and he doesn't deserve to live with people. I don't even know why mama didn't lie charges on him. What does he have in her that makes her stay on so many accounts.

Papa: "How are you Lele." He stood up and I moved to the other side of mama.

Papa: "I won't hurt you." His smile wasn't even convincing. I just kept quiet because I didn't trust what could come out of my mouth.

Papa: "Nomzamo, where is the keys to the safe?" He walked closer to mama and she shifted a bit with me behind me.

Mama: "I didn't know, it's only you who always keep them mos."

Papa; "They are not where I always put them and it

is just the two of us in this house. So if I didn't take them it means you took them." His voice was bit firm and anger was vivid in it.

Mama: "How can I take the keys while I was at the hospital? I just came back now."

Papa: "Don't make me a fool, I know you send this little brat of yours to take the keys and steal for me."

Me: "I didn't do anything."

Papa: "Don't you dare lie to me because ei saw you when you were carrying a red bag the other day going to the bank. Nomzamo are you stealing for me?" He was no closer to mama, he looked calm but sounded very angry.

Mama: "No.." He slapped her across her face and she felt back on me but I managed to push her up again that she doesn't fall.

Papa; "I'm going to ask you for the last time. Are you stealing for me?"

Mama: "I said no, I'm not..." another slapped followed by another and another and before I knew

it he was choking her I screaming asking him to stop but he wasn't hearing any of it.

I ran to his room and took the gun, I wasn't thinking straight but this man is not going to leave us until someone permanently stops him.

Me: "Leave her or I will shoot you." He slowly let her go when he realised that I had a gun.

Papa: "You don't even know how to shoot put that gun down now."

Me: "I won't put it down. I'm sick and tired of you. I'm tired of you abusing us. Don't you get tired of being a monster? Did I ask to be born? Did I ask you to rape mama? Why are you so heartless?"

Papa: "You didn't know what you are talking about? Put that gun down before I slap you too."

He was walking slowly towards me.

Me: "Don't you dare come any closer."

Mama: "Lele please put the gun down baby please."

Me: "I hate him mama, I hate him so much."

Mama: "I know baby, but put the gun down my love please."

Before I could respond Papa was trying to take the gun from me and we were fighting for it, I used every strength in me to fight him he stepped on my foot and I pulled the trigger and I just heard mama screaming from the top of her voice.....

[03/12, 15:22] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 25

Nthabiseng Ragophala

We heard a gun shot, i was sitting with Nimsa in the

kitchen. She was cooking and also telling me about her new boyfriend. My sister and i aren't that close as sisters should be but we are nice to each and we do talk about our personal lives from time to time. She is more free spirited person more than i am and she calls a spade a spade, as much as i want to call a spade a spade, sometimes i pull back nje because i hate drama and pretendors.

I have never liked Mercy as Lele's friend simply because she is a chameleon, she used to talk bad about Lele so many times that i even wondered what kind of a friend she is.

We ran out of the house quickly because it was clear that was a sound of a gun coming from our neighbors. All our neighbors were out of their houses. I saw Mercy's mother at the gate as me and my sister rushed out to Lele's house. The gate was open and it indicated that there was someone.

Mathapelo(Mercy's mother) : "What's going on?" Is she being for real now? I didnt answer inside the compound. I heard Lele's mother screaming her laungs out. What the hell is going on?

Nomsa: "Maybe we shohld call the police, its not safe to just go inside." Somw of the neighbors were at Lele's gate looking at us. If there people who will never help you are this people. It's do funny how they call themselves our neighbors but they are veey useless.

Me:" You go and call the police, i will go inside. "

Nomsa:" Nthabi is not safe in there, what if they shoot you too?" She was petrified, well, i was too but trying so hard to hide it.

Me: "I will take care of myself Noms a, what if Lele is dying or her mother even? Can you hear how much she is screaming? Come on, work with me here, go back home and call mom first. I will take care of myself, i promise." I cupped her face in mh hands and wiped her tears with my tumb. I perked her lips

and she rushed back to the house. You literally see by how she was sprinting towards the gate that fear crippled her.

People were just looking at her as she was crying going to the house.

I walked to the door and I slowly opened it and Lele's mother was lying down on her tummy, trying to get up but you could see that she was in a lot of pain. Lele's father was lying down too in a pool of blood with Lele on top of him.

Nomzamo: "Help, please help.." Her voice was fading away slowly and tears clouded her big eyes. I could literally see that all she wanted to see if her daughter was fine but she couldn't get up.

I rushed to where Lele is and pushed her off her father, heavy as she is, I used all my strength to pull

her until she was laying flat on the tummy, her clothes were covered with her father's blood. Yes, her father was shot on the tummy.

Lele passed out, I'm sure that it is shock. I checked his pulse but it was very weak.

Me: "He is still alive, but his pulse is weak." I said looking at Lele's mother.

Nomzamo: "Call the ambulance." I didn't waste any time I too the phone on the table and dialed the emergency number and gave them all information that is needed.

Nomzamo: "Please help me up."

I helped her up and she couldn't walk properly. She took the gun that was in Lele's hands and wiped with the table cloth and touched with her hands.

Me: "What are you doing?"

Nomzamo: "No child of mine will go to jail because of this monster Nthabi. Lele won't survive jail, please help me to help her up so we can change her

clothes quickly."

I just nodded, my mind was freezed, I didn't have time to think about anything. I just did as she asked and we pulled Lele to the bedroom, I was actually pulling her by myself since her mother didn't have enough strength to pull her. I changed her clothes quickly and threw the bloody clothes in the washing basket.

As I was busy trying to dress her up, I found a wound on her abdomen, it was bleeding. The bullet passed through her left side on the abdomen but it wasn't there, it just pierced the flesh, from my observation.

Me: "Maaaaaah," I called out for her screaming with my hands shaking.

Me: "Maaah, she is bleeding. She is shot." She literally walked in limping with her hand on her side.

Nomzamo: "Yini? What's wrong?"

Me: "Look?" She crouches down beside her.

Nomzamo: "Oh nooooo, Lele, no no no no, Ella baby, it's mommy please wake up please..."

We heard the siren of the ambulance ringing outside.

Me: "The are here."

I rushed out and two paramedics walked in and quickly rushed to Ntate'Motaung who was still laying down unconscious.

Paramedic1: "What happened here?"

Me: "I didn't know, I just heard the sound of the gun and I came rushing, the other one is the bedroom." the other guy rushed to the bedroom. I was shocked to see the gun was in Ntante'Motaung's hand.

I wiped my tears and followed the other guy to the bedroom and he called the other one to come with a stretcher, Lele's mother was on the floor, she was trying to catch her breath, you could see that she was in lot of pain but trying so hard to be strilonh

for her daughter. This is just too much.

Lately Lele has been going through a lot, I feel like I could just take some of her worries and troubles for her. This is too much.

*

*

*

We followed them to the hospital, I was with mama and Nomsa was at home with Naomi.

Mama: "She is going to be fine." Her hand on my thigh brought me back to life.

Me: "I know."....

Kgosi Mankoe

After hanging out with Wisdom and I went to drop him at his home. He was too drunk to drive and as a responsibility citizen I won't allow him to drive in that state. I didn't stay long at his house, his wife was there to help. I drove past by Lele's house and there were police officers there surround the place with a red tape. I stopped at some neighbors who were standing outside and asked them what is going on.

They told me that there was a shooting. I turned the car and drove to the hospital as they told me that the ambulance was here. I went to the hospital that she was admitted at. My mind was racing. I pray she doesn't die on me.

I got there in less than 15 minutes, I rushed inside and I found Nthabiseng at the reception, the poor girl has been through a lot with Lele. She was filling in the admission forms with her mother by her side, also filling in the other one.

Me: "Hey, how is she? Is she okay?"

Nthabi: "Kgosi, no, I thought you left. They just admitted them now. They are all with the doctor."

Me: "They?"

Nthabi: "Yes, Lele and her parents, her mother was in pain, I don't know what's wrong but Lele is shot along with her father."

Me: "I pray she is fine. Who could have done this?"

Just when she was about to answer the police officers arrived, the very same one who was handling her late case.

Officer1: "It seems like trouble loves you young man. What have you done this time around?"

Me: "I did nothing sir." I said calmly.

Officer1: "I hope for your sake you are right. Ms Ragophala may we please have a word with you?"

Nthabi: "I did nothing wrong officer's I was just trying to help."

Officer1: "I didn't say you did anything wrong. I just want to talk to you. In private."

Naledi: "You can go baby, tell the truth." She nodded and they walked away with the officers.

I sat down on the couch in the waiting areas with Nthabi's mother. She is not much of a talker. She is gentle and soft spoken we sat quickly and I decided to call my mother.

Mommy: "Son. " She is always bubbly

Me: "Mommy."

Mommy: "What's wrong? You don't sound okay."

Me: "It's Lele, she has been shot mommy, what if she doesn't make it?"

Mommy: "She has been shot? By who? Where is she?"

Me: "I also don't know mommy, I'm at the hospital."

Mommy: "She will be okay son, worry not. Maybe

you should take a break after you see her and come home for few days and you will go back."

Me: "I can't leave her all by herself. She needs me."

Mommy: "I know, but you also need to be clear minded before you see her. Or else you always pushing her will drive her to the edge. She has been through the most baby, she will need you to be emotionally, spiritually and physically strong for her. And trust me right now you are just vulnerable. "

Me:" I know, but I'm not coming home, at least not now." There were noises in the background.

Mommy:" Okay, maybe you should call your daddy to come that side, for emotional support. "

Me:" Yah maybe, who is making noise there? "

Mommy:" Your other girlfriend is here. "

Me:" Who? Kgomotso? What is she doing there?"

Mommy: "Her family left here the other day."

Me: "Mommy, what? Why did you allow them to

leave her there?"

Mommy: "What was I supposed to do Kgosi? We are all in this mess because of you and I'm trying my best not to be mad. You will have to come back and sort this whole mess out because this girl will send me to an early grave."

Me: "But you should have not allowed her to stay there. Her family shouldn't have left her behind."

Mommy: "Son, you better come home and fix this mess that's all I'm going to say. Palesa won't be happy with you with this whole mess. So you better fix it because this Kgomotso girl is nothing but trouble."

Me: "Fine we will talk later."

I nearly threw my phone across when I hanged up but Nthabi's mother was looking at me.

Damn why is my life so complicated Mara?

[03/12, 15:22] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 26

Wisdom Mofokeng

Things at home were very tense. So, tense that no one has ever said anything to anyone. That once good, loving and kind family is gone, all is left now is strangers living in the same house.

My wife came back, I don't know how she is managing to keep up but she is. Considering the fact that she is pregnant is not easy for her to just pretend like everything is okay. I don't know if dad, I mean Mark has ever went to church, I don't how he manages to keep calm after everything that mother has done. She has been miserable for days now and I seriously couldn't care less because I'm also miserable. The pain I feel deep down and the shame

won't amount to anything she is feeling right now. I haven't seen Oratile is a while, I don't even know where she is and I seriously don't care, well I do care but right now we are all drowning in our own sorrows.

I don't know which one hurt the most at the moment, the fact that I impregnated my own sister or the fact that the only man I knew as my father my whole entire life is not my real father. I mean how do you acknowledge all that and allow your mind to process it and your heart to accept it.

I found comfort in alcohol, it is the only thing that makes me sane. It is the only thing that makes me run away from the reality a bit and be my own person.

Mercy and I haven't spoken about anything and it is my prayer that she doesn't say anything until nje I don't know how I'm going to deal with her and

explain to her what really went down.

Mercy: "Your food is ready." She was standing beside the bed. This pregnancy really loves her, we haven't dealt with any sicknesses as people usually says and her cravings are low and she is glowing.

Me: "Thanks." I got up from the bed and she sat down as I walked out but she stopped me on my tracks.

Mercy: "For how long are we going to keep going like this Wisdom?" I get hold of the door handle and leaned on the door with my forehead.

Me: "Not now please Mercy. I'm also still trying to get my head in this whole thing."

Mercy: "Then what about me? What about us? What am I supposed to do in the meantime? I mean you don't even bother to explain to me what really went down. You keep things to yourself, we left our house, our home to be here and this place is draining me, no one is talking...everything is driving me crazy Wisdom. I'm going crazy with this silent

treatment. "

Me:" Do you really think we are all this silent purposely? Things are bad Mercy, we are all hurt, we are all trying to adjust to this new truth we just found out. Can't you at least not be selfish? " I turned to face her.

Mercy:" Selfish? Me selfish? Wow, I can't believe you right now. I have been here for you this whole time but have you ever asked me how am I feeling? You slept with my best friend for crying out, don't you think I'm hurt too? Wow, so typical of your." She pushed me from the door and walked out.

I seriously don't have the strength and energy to fight her, she will cool down and come around when she is more calm because right now we all have our own demons that are haunting us, I can't be dealing with other people's demons.

I walked downstairs and I found Oratile eating Oats, no make that playing with Oats. Her mind was far

away from here. Dad, I mean Mark was in the kitchen holding a cup of tea, looking outside. His eyes were fixed outside gazing at nothing. I wonder how is he feeling with this whole dilemma

Me: "Morning." I took my food in the microwave.

Dad: "Wisdom. How are you?"

Me: "I'm good and how are you da...?"

Dad: "I'm good. How are you feeling today?" I shrugged my shoulders and he nodded.

Dad: "If you want to have a relationship with him, you can, he is your father after all." He was still staring at nothing outside the window.

Me: "I'm sorry but you are the only father I know and I will ever have. I don't know that man and I don't need to have any relationship with him."

Dad: "You need to calm down, anger is not going to solve anything. Anger can break things further and hurt you more. It's not your fault how things turned out to be, and don't blame yourself."

He sat down on the kitchen highchair opposite me. Across us on the dining hall was Oratile still lost in her own world.

Me:" How do you do it? I mean how do you remain so calm when you were so wronged?"

Dad:" What will being angry or mad do for me? It won't change anything, after being angry and sad and broken things will still be the same, Truth will still remain truth. Of course I'm hurt, shattered but I'm trying so hard to remain calm for you and your sister sake. "

I nodded

Me:" Will you ever forgive her? I mean mama? "

He sighed and took a sip of his tea which I think is cold now.

Dad:" Who am I not to forgive? I'm not God to judge people. Even if I haven completely forgiven her but I'm praying about it, I'm asking God to give me a forgive heart right now and I'm not doing it for her but for myself."

Me: "You still love her neh?"

Dad: "Very much, she is my first true love, well according to me. The first time I laid my eyes on her I knew then that I will marry her."

Me: "So, what now?"

He shrugged his left shoulder.

Dad: "I don't know, wherever God leads me I will follow. Enough about me, how are you feeling?"

I looked him and wiped my mouth with a napkin before I thought long and hard about how I really feel.

Words fail to describe the feeling. I'm trying to put it across but no one will understand, I'm feeling everything all at once. I'm sinking deeper and deeper in pain, but no one is there to help me. I'm angry, very angry with myself and my mother. I haven't seen her ever since that day and I'm scared to see her because of what I will do to her. She

makes me sick to the core.

And sitting here makes me realise that indeed I'm just my mother's son, a liar and a cheater. I'm scared that I will channel all my anger on her and do th unthinkable...

Nomzamo Anna Motaung

Naledi brought Naomi after she picked me up from the hospital this morning. She has been clingy ever since she saw me. At least I wasn't in any pain anymore, the medication they gave me are stronger to suppress the pain. Lele is in an induced coma, that's what the doctor told me, they haven't said anything more about her condition beside we will see when she wakes up because the bullet is stuck right in her womb and might cause more damage. Apparently the bullets shot were two, the other one was still stuck in his father's stomach.

How everything happened is a mystery to me. I don't know, I can't tell, my mind is blank about that scene.

I finished cleaning up with Naledi's help. She hasn't said anything since she got here. She is a very quiet woman who always mind her business. I have never heard her arguing with anyone but everyday she will go to work and come back and on week3she is always in her house. She has never came to our church.

Me: "Late me make us food."

Naledi: "I will make them, you need to take it easy on yourself." I nodded and she took the bucket and the cloves with her to the kitchen. Naomi was sleeping. She has been very busy today helping us clean the house. Naledi said that it is her first time seeing her smile eversince everything happened.

Naledi: "I'm done." She handed me a cup of tea and placed the sandwich on the chair, since the coffee table is broken.

Me: "Thank you, thank you for taking care of my kids while I was gone."

Naledi: "It's all good. I'm sure you will do the same for my kids." I smiled weakly and we continued to eat in silence.

Naledi: "Mma'Motaung not to pry but for how long will you stay in this loveless marriage?"

Me: "I don't know, one thing I know is that if I leave, I will walk out with nothing and how will I feed my children?"

Naledi: "But you will rather die? I'm sorry but that's no excuse to stay in this toxic relationship. I'm sure the day you walk out, you will make means to provide. Look at me, my husband used to beat me, and one day I woke up on the hospital bed, with a broken body and a broken heart. If it didn't come to that point, maybe I would've stayed, but look at me? I

walked out of my marriage with nothing not even clothes. I had nothing but 2 mouth to feed because I couldn't continue to hurt my children like that. I have no family but with the little I got I went back to school to finish my degree, I worked and studied because going back was not an option. My ex husband is a very rich man, he owns companies but he doesn't give a shit about his children and right now, I don't care, I can take care of my own children, they lack nothing because I'm there for them. You better walk out before is too late. Lele is too young to loose you and to go through everything she is going through in the name of love. I don't know how she will survive everything because she has been raped too, right in this house and yet you still want to stay. Don't continue to kill your child because of money.

Money is not worth her life. Look at me now,(She got up and took of her dress, her body was full of awful scars.) Everyday when I look at myself, I hate myself even more. This scars always remind me

how much of a better person I could've been. I'm ashamed to look at myself, I regret more because I knew I should've walked away when he first laid his hand on me. Nthabiseng is affected the most in this whole ordeal. She was traumatized, at least Nimsa was still young to understand but right now what you are teaching Lele is to stay in abusive relationships because you don't want to walk out. Save yourself and your children from this trauma. Your husband has showed you that hile his a shame of a man. He had an affair with a married woman and they both have children, what more do you need to walk away? Do you want to get out of this relationship in a coffin? Please sesi, this is not healthy. Yes, people will talk, that's why they are people after all, but they don't know the pain you are going through until the day you die and they will be saying aw shame skepsel sa Modimo. She should have walked away.... Do right by your children sesi, I'm not going to judge you for staying because I was there too and no one told me to walk away, I had to be close to death experience for me to know better, and now I'm not going to allow you to do the same

mistakes I did back then..."She was in tears and so was I. Gosh I didn't know how deep this is. My child being raped without my own knowledge, she didn't say anything to me... Gosh this is too much...

Akies beloved for not posting, I'm trying to catch up on work, plus last night I slept while typing, forgive me. This week is the most hectic one for me and I can't see properly † ♀

[03/12, 15:22] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 27

Kgosi Mankoe

I got home in the early hours of the morning, I sat in the car for a very long time thinking about how things got out of hands so fast and quick, everything just went south and it's stressing me.

Kgomots'o being here, and causing havoc in parent's house is also something I wish not to deal with.

And also not being able to see Palesa, not knowing how her condition is is frustrating me

I must have slept in the car, I woke up from Mommy banging the window with her husband. Why are they up so early in the morning? Did they really have to bang the window? Mxm. Opened the door and got out and mommy attacked me with a bear hug.

Me: "You are queezing me."

Mama: "I know but we have be knocking on the window of a long time, we thought maybe somwthing happened to you."

Me: "I'm fine, I'm good. How are you." I kissed her cheek.

Mama: "I'm good baby, what time did you arrive and why did you sleep in the car?"

Me: "I arrived around 03:00, and I didn't want to wake you up hence I slept here. Dada, how are you?" I hugged my dad.

Dada: "I'm good son and how are you?"

Me: "I'm good. It's freezing out here can we go inside?"

Dada: "Right after you. Did you have a safe journey?"

Me: "Yes I did thank you, I just need to sleep now and maybe I will be much better than how I'm feeling now."

I opened the door with them following behind me.

Dada: "Take a shower first, you will thank me later."

Me: "I will."

Mommy: "We will leave you to reset then."

I thanked them and walked to my room only to find Kgomots'o sleeping on my bed. What? What kind of nonsense is this? I furiously went downstairs where I found my parents all lovey dovey but I couldn't care less, how can they allow her to sleep in my

room? We are not married for crying out loud. J eez.

Me: "Mommy, why did you allow her to sleep in my room?"

Dada: "Geez Kgosi, I'm trying to have me time with my wife here."

Me: "This is not your room but a public space."

Dada: "But it is still my house, so next time you want to make demands, let it be in your house."

Me: "Fine, I'm sorry, but how can you guys allow her to sleep in my bed? We are not even married."

Mommy: "But you slept with her."

Me: "Mommy come on, you know I didn't mean for all of that to happen."

Mommy: "We know, but that girl is very disrespectful, she listen to no one and she does what pleases her. I warned her about sleeping in your bedroom but does she listen? No she doesn't and I can't be arguing with a lousy girl like her everyday. I was just waiting for you to come, so you

can tell her to move out of my house. This house knows no peace ever since she got here. She is forever fighting with Lindo. "

Wow, why am I not surprised?

Me:" Can I sleep in the guest room just for now, I really need to rest before I deal with her. "

Dada:" As long as you will tell her where to get off because I can't tolerate her behavior. "

Me:" Thanks. "

I went to sleep in the guest room and woke up hours later, I'm glad they allowed me to rest because I needed to be fresh to deal with everything that is happening in this house.

I went to take a shower in my room, luckily she was nowhere in sight. I took a long deserved shower and wore comfortable clothes. I went downstairs and I found Mommy cooking lunch. She always always

cook lunch and dinner each and every day, Sundays she makes sure that she cooks in the morning before church and when we come back we just warm up and eat.

There was no one in expect her in the kitchen listening to sermons, as always.

Me: "Where is everyone?"

Mama: "Lindo went to the office with daddy, Lwthu went to work and madam in the garden, waiting for juice from me." The juice was indeed in a glass on the table.

Me: "Tell me you are not going to take that to her?"

Mama: "Unfortunately I'm going to take it to her, she demanded it since she is carrying" my first grandchild". Kgosi, please promise me that you will find a good wife like your mother."

Me:" I'm sorry mommy, let me take this to her and sort this mess out and for all. "

She nodded and got back to her job and I went to Khomots o in the garden she was taking selfies on her phone.

Kgomots o:" Babe. "She ran to me and hugged me from the side.

Kgomots o:" It's so good to see you. I have missed you." He kissed me my cheek and placed her juice on the table.

Me:" We need to talk. "

Kgomots o:" Yes, we need to talk, can I go first? "

I nodded and we sat down around the table.

Kgomots o: "Babe your family has been so mean to mea. Especially your brother and sister, your mother just ignores me and she wants me to clean, and make my own bed while I told her to hire a maid for me because I'm pregnant with your first child. This morning she refused to make breakfast for me, well I had my own preferences but she didn't even

care to consider them. Baby we really need to move out of this house because it's obvious that they hate me. " Tears rolled down her cheeks. Wow, the nerve of this girl? How dare she lie about my family?

Me:" Now is my turn to talk and I want you to listen and to listen very carefully. You are going to go upstairs now and pack your things and get out of my parents house. This is not my house, and when you stay in here you will respect my family whether you like it or not. Now there's nothing that is tying us. You are carrying my baby and I acknowledge that, but that doesn't give you any right to move in here. You are not sick or anything, the only thing that is binding us is this child and I will only see you when we have a doctor's appointment and when the child is born, beside that, you will stay with your parents or whoever you want to stay with and we will make arrangements when the baby is born. "

Kgomots'o:" Kgosi, no you can't do that to me, my

parents chased me out of the house because of this child, where will I go? "

Me:" I will rent you an apartment but when the child is born you will move out. And don't call me unless is regarding the baby, stop posting my pictures on Instagram, I'm not your boyfriend, I don't love you and I don't like you either. "

Kgomots o:" Kgosi? Why are you doing this to us? Kgosi please don't chase me out, I will respect your parents and your siblings please Kgosi. "

Me:" I'm done, I hope you will be done packing your things in the next 30 minutes and I will arrange an apartment for you in the mean time."

I walked out on her while she was still screaming and throwing tantrums that she will abort the baby, I just ignored her and went to back to mommy. She

was in the lounge, obviously heard our conversation because she was standing by the door. She might have heard Khomots'o screaming and thought maybe I'm doing something to her.

Mama: "What was all that about?"

Me: "She is moving out. Is Dada's apartment is vacant?"

Mama: "No, the new tenants moved in last week."

Me: "Is there any apartment that is available she can move in until she gives birth?"

Mama: "You will have to check with daddy, the one that was available last week is the one in Fourways, I'm not sure if there are any tenants yet."

Me: "Okay, let me call him."

Mama: "You know you don't have to do this if you don't want to right?"

Me: "I have to do this mommy or else she will continue acting like a beat on your house. She needs to go and fend for herself."

Mama: "Okay, let me call daddy for you. I will arrange the one that is fully furnished."

Me; "Thank you mommy, I know it is going to cost us, especially because the apartments are meant for business not leisure, I will pay rent for it if I have to."

Mama:"Don't worry boy, one apartment won't hurt us financially and besides it's only for a couple of months."

Me:"Thank you."

Mama: "Come here." She opened her arms for me. I have to say, my mommy gives the best hugs ever and she always smells nice.

Mama: "Don't deny yourself some love, you know very well that you need your momma's hugs and love, come on now."

I smiled and went right into her arms.

Kgomotso: "Kgosi please..." She passed us by and stood by the TV stand.

Me: "Khomotso please, you have 20 minutes left."

She walked away and mommy went to her room to talk to Dada for me.

Palesa Ella Motaung

The pain I was feeling on my abdomen was too much. The doctors have given me some pain meds but they were not helping. Today mama came to see me, she was seated just next to me telling me stories about her family. She missed them dearly.

Me: "What did the police say?"

Mama: "They are waiting for your father to wake up so that they can take his statement, but I don't want you to worry about that, for now, let's focus you and getting better."

Me: "What if he lays charges against me?"

Mama: "He will never do that."

Me: "But he hates me with passion. Nothing will stop him from making sure that I rot in hell where he will never see me again."

Mama: "No, no Lele, stop it, he won't do such thing. I promise. I will protect you."

Me: "But you can't protect me from the law."

Mama: "Lele please."

Me: "Fine. How is Naomi?"

Mama: "She is getting better, she miss you."

Me: "I miss her too, can't they allow her to come and see me?"

Mama: "No, not now, you are still in lot of pain and beside kids are not allowed in here."

Me: "Okay, what did the doctor say?"

She looked down trying to avoid eye contact.

Mama: "Nothing major, you will be fine."

Me: "Please don't lie to me..."

Mama: "Lets just focus on you for now baby, please."

Me: "Okay fine."

Mama: "Thank you, you want somwthing to eat?"

I shook my head no.

The police officers knocked at the door and walked in following each other. They were three of them

My heart rate went up, I could literally heart it pumping out of my chest...

Why is there 3 of them? Are they here to arrest me?

[03/12, 15:23] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 28

Palesa Ella Motaung

Officer: "Palesa Ella Motaung, you are under arrest of attempted murder of William Motaung and the possession of illegal fire arm, anything you say now will be used against you in the court of law and you have a right to attorney, if you cannot afford one the state will provide with one."

Think I saw my life flashing right before me before it even began. How can dad lay charges of murder againsts me? Does he really hates me that much? He is not even remorsefull of whatever he did to mama?

Me:" Mama? "I said with teary eyes. I didn't even know how to react to everything that is happening. The other police officers hanged cuffed my hand on the hospital bed like I'm sort of some criminal. I think mama was also trying to compreheveeything because she was too quiet and taken back.

Me: "Mama please, I didn't do anything, I swear,

please."

Mama: "She didn't shoot him, how can he shoot while she is also shot and laying here? My child will not be able to have kids in the future because of that man. Did you even take the finger prints of the gun? Palesa doesn't own any gun, she doesn't own any gun if there's one person you should arrest is that monster of a man." She stood up and took off her dress. There were few fresh scars on her body from the beating.

Mama: "And you are you want to arrest a man who is a woman beater? He did all of this and you are standing here to defend a man who nearly killed me and my daughter? Aren't you ashamed of yourself? My own daughter might not even be able to conceive in the future yet you are shamelessly wearing a uniform yet failing to defend women like us? We laid charges against this very same man last week and yet nothing has been done, now you want to arrest my daughter? Then leave my daughter and arrest me because you are not going

to arrest her if you haven't done anything about the charges we pressed. "

Officer1:" Ma'am please let us do our job and come the station to complain about your case, right now there is a citizen that is crying about his safety and all we are doing is to protect him. "

Mama:" Protect what? How can you protect a rapist? A man who beat up his wife and child? This law of us is failing us and I promise you the 3 of you will pay for this. "

She croached down to me and wiped my tears, she was also crying.

Mama:" Stay strong baby, mama is going to fix these, okay, don't say anything to anyone. I will be back. Okay? "

I nodded repeatedly and she handed me my phone and dressed up and walked out with two police officers leaving one outside the door.

I was literally shocked by this whole thing. How can my dad do this to me? Does he even love me?

I went through my phone with my other free hand. There were so many messages, from Nthabi, Kgosi and the one that really caught my eye was the one from Mercy, she was demanding to talk to me. I wonder why?

It sounded so serious, I texted her back and told her that I'm at the hospital and she responded immediately saying she will be there now now. I didn't respond back, I texted Kgosi and he called about 19 minutes later.

Kgosi: "Hey, how are you? Are you up?" I wouldn't

have answered this phone if I wasn't up duhh

Me: "Hi, I'm good and how are you? Yes I'm up."

Kgosi: "I'm good tmnow that you are up, I'm sorry that I wasn't there when you woke up, I had things to sort back here in Gauteng."

Me: "It's okay Kgosi, you don't have to explain. You also have a life."

Kgosi: "I know, but it's my duty to take care of you."

Me: "Oh, your duty? Who are you to me again?" I laughed a little.

Kgosi: "Soon to be your husband." He laughed.

Me: "Not even close to my boyfriend?"

Kgosi: "I don't do boyfriends, those are for small kids, I'm an adult, I know what I want."

Me: "You are feeling yourself too much Mr."

Mercy bulge in making noise.

Mercy: "Excuse me police officer, I really need to talk to her please."

Kgosi: "What's that noise?"

Me: "It's my friend, Mercy fighting with a policeman outside my ward, look we will talk later."

Kgosi: "Palesa what the hell is a policeman doing outside your ward?"

Me: "We will talk later Kgosi, bye."

Kgosi: "Baby cakes don't hang up..."I cut the line.

Me:" It's okay officer, let her in." He raised his hands in the air surrendering and let Mercy walk in. Her baby bumb was showing a little in her green tight dress and flat yellow shoes.

She marched over my bed, I sat up straight waiting for her to release the fire that is in her heart, I as I could clearly see that she is very upset and very angry.

Mercy: "How could you Lele? How could?" She slapped me hard across my face. I didn't slap her back because I seriously don't have the energy to be fighting with Mercy for unnecessary things, the officer walked back in but I stopped him. Let her

release this bitterness in her maybe she will become a better person afterwards.

Me: "What did I do?" My phone kept flashing Kgosi's name on the screen as it was on silent.

Mercy: "You know exactly what you did, you can't just come here and act all holy holy on me. How can you sleep with my husband?"

Me: "Your husband? You mean my brother? Come on Mercy, you guys weren't even dating that time."

Mercy: "Don't tell me that nonsense, then why didn't you tell me? Why didn't you trust me enough as your friend to tell me?"

Me: "You are showing your true colors of why I shouldn't trust you and I think I made the right decision for not telling you then because maybe you could've turned to be exactly like this."

Mercy: "Lele, I was your friend, couldn't you have at least warned me before I got married to him? And what about the child you two claim to have?"

Me: "I seriously don't wish to talk about this right

now, I have a lot on my plate. Maybe is best if you go, when I'm ready to talk, I will call you and your husband."

Mercy: "No one is talking to me at home Lele and it's driving me crazy."

Me: "I'm sorry about that but I'm also about to go crazy Mercy. Life doesn't revolve around you, we all have our demons that we are dealing with and if you really think everyone will have time to help you deal with your demons, then unfortunately you have come to a wrong place, I don't have time for that. "

Mercy:" I'm sorry. "

Me:" It's okay, go home and be happy, just be glad that you are not me. If you will excuse me I will like to rest. "

I turned to face the other way, leaving her all alone until she decided to leave. They are so many things I'm dealing with and Mercy and her husband, are the least of my worries for now. I might go to jail for crying out loud. I have never been there before but

stories that I heard about that place are not good. I can't even begin to imagine my life there. Never. I closed my eyes and my phone again continued to flash. He was not going to give up until I answer my damn phone.

Me: "Hello."

Kgosi: "Palesa don't ever hang up the phone like that."

Me: "I was busy."

Kgosi: "Fine, what I'd the police officer doing outside your ward?" I sighed

Me: "My father laid charges against me."

Kgosi: "What? I'm on my way coming there and please don't say anything to anyone, don't even give out your statement without me, am I clear?"

Me: "Kgosi, you don't have to.."

Kgosi: "I said am I clear Palesa."

Me: "Yes."

Kgosi: "Sharp, I love you." I didn't say anything the line was quiet for few second as if he was expecting me to say it back, he seriously caught me off guard.

Kgosi: " I will be there before 19:00 okay? "

Me: " Okay sharp."

He ganged up...

Few hours later my mother came back, she didn't look good at all. She looked very drained and tired.

Mama: "Baby."

Me: "Hello Ma. How did it go?"

Mama: "Can you believe the nerve if your father? He refused to drop the charges. I swear, I'm going to kill him."

Me: "Let it go mama, it's clear that he doesn't consider me as his child. If I have to go to jail I will go."

Mama: "You will never go there, no child if mine will

go there. Those useless police officers he bought he will wish he never bought them."

Me: "He bought police officers?"

Mama: "How do you explain all this? Why didn't they come and take your side of the story before they made this arrest? There were two people shot here, not him only and where is the gun? The gun had his finger prints but it is missing." How can the gun have his finger prints? I mean I am the one who was having that gun last time I checked? How did it end up with his finger prints?

Something is not right here and if indeed it had his finger prints where is the gun? The only evidence we have of the crime committed now is missing. What is he playing at?

[03/12, 15:23] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 29

Kgosi Mankoe

Mama: "Kgosi you can't just up and go. Where the hell are you going?"

I closed the bag and wen to the bathroom to take my toiletries with mommy following me around like a headless chicken asking me million questions that I didn't have answers to.

Me: "I have to go to Mokopane as soon as yesterday."

Mama: "You are still making no sense to me, what are you going to do in Mokopane? You just arrived today and you are going back again? Come on Kgosi you are not even married to this lady or you also want to get her pregnant?"

Me: "Mommy, geez, stop it. Palesa is in trouble with the law and I seriously need to help her."

Mama: "Sit down." She pointed the bed and she say down, o looked at her, I seriously don't have time to chit chat with her right. Her advice will do me no

good. Palesa needs me, why is she failing to understand that?

Mama: "Please." Ahhhh, I hate it when she does this. I sat down next to her and she took my hands into hers.

Mama: "Kgosi, I know how much you love this girl, and I understand how much you want to help her, but you have to be careful. Some of the battles son they don't need your wisdom. Some of the battles don't need you to interfere, you have to know when to draw a barricade line, yes this girl is going through too much but have you tried to pray for her? Have you tried God with this whole situation she is going through? Look, you are not a superman, I know you went to school and studied law just like your mama, but there are times when you need to go to heaven school of law and go into the portal of the Father in heaven to seek wisdom. Not all battles are going to be won the way you think.

This is not just a battle but its a war between two

powers and the lesser power must bow, but the question that you need to find answers to is, who's power is lesser. Be careful not to get burnt while trying to help in battles that don't need you. If you really need to help this girl, son you have to start helping her in seeking God first, you need to start helping her in acknowledging God first and God will take care of everything. Travel mercies and be careful on the way. I love you."

She kissed both my hands and walked out, leaving me all confused. What do I do now? She really needs me and I can't just let her go through this whole thing by herself.

I took my bags and went down with them. I found her in the kitchen with Lethu who just walked in by the looks of things. She was hugging mommy from behind telling her how exhausted she is.

Lethu: "And then wena with the bags?"

Mama: "Leave my baby alone wena and go take off those clothes and bath."

Lethu: "I didn't say anything ooo, yes I will bath when I go to sleep."

Kgosi: "I have never seen a girl who doesn't like bathing like you shame."

Lethu: "Hai suka, I'm saving water. But on a serious note, where are you going?"

Kgosi: "I'm going to polokwane."

Lethu: "I hope you won't get hurt this time around bro, I really hope so, this up and down you are doing I don't like one bit." The way she loves Nigerian accent you would swear she is one.

Me: "Mind your own business Lethu."

Lethu: "I'm just saying, you are hardly home because of her remember Vicky? You are doing exactly the same thing. You were always out and about with her, going through thick and thin with until she came with a big stomach and a ring here. Do you still remember what that did to you? Do you

really want to go back there? I hope for your own sake history will never repeat itself because I will hate to see you being a walking zombie again...."

Lindo:" Who is becoming a walking zombie?" Lindo walked in throwing the keys on the counter and hugging mommy.

Mama:" None of your business Lindo, how was your day. "

Lindo:" I'm just asking, nkere I want to be informed so that I don't jump to conclusion. My day was good, Dada said he will come in later, I left him at the office."

Mama: "He already called, you want food?"

Lethu: "Why didn't you ask me if I want food?"

Mama: "Because you are going to bath first, you smell sweat Lethu Haibo."

Lethu: "Fine."

Lindo: "And then wena with bags? Where is he going?"

Lethu: "Polokwane."

Lindo: "Really? Are you being for real now? You want me to remind you of what happened in the past?"

Me: "Give me a break geez, Palesa is not like her."

Lindo: "How sure are you about that? You sang the very same song with that old skank of yours who left you and now you really want to go back there again? Playing Mr hero? When will you ever learn? I will hate to be the one who will pick up the pieces again, mommy please talk to this son of yours because this time around I'm going beat the stupidity out of him if he doesn't listen to me. "

Me:" I'm your elder brother Lindo. "

Lindo:" But you don't act like one, yoh act like an immature teenager in love and this will end up sour like the last time. "

Lethu:" Thank you for being honest Lindo, I hope he heard you, the work of God says let those who have ears hear, I hope you have ears ooo, I pray ooo, I'm out of here. "She kissed my chick and walked out leaving Lindo and mommy looking at me. Lindo was

pissed, mommy didn't show any reaction as always.

She is the one who always pick us up when we are down and she never judges us, as much as she advices us, she also allow us to make our own mistakes, smae goes to Dada, he is a man of few words and his words are full of wisdom, and he is very slwo to get angry unlike mommy, she gets angry fast and cools down within seconds. At time like this I miss Gogo, even though she is old but her wise counsel is needed now. She always makes fun of every situation but she will give sound advice.

Mama: "Baby, go and change I will make you food in the mean time and I want to talk to your brother." He gave me one dead stare before kissing mommy on her cheek and walking out.

Mama: "Come here." She opened her arms for me, and i dived right into them and settled on her shoulders. I'm bit taller than her but she always makes sure that she gives me best hugs.

Mama: "Whatever you decide, I will be right here for you. Your siblings cares for you, hence they react like that. But if you want to go, you can go but do as I asked you earlier on. And always remember that it is not everything that you are going to be able to fix, some of the things needs God. Some needs wisdom from above, some they just need God to intervine. I told you that before you are a lawyer, you are a child of God, God becomes a counselor to your first, and when God becomes a counselor to you, He also becomes a counselor in the court of law for all your clients. Don't ever forget that.

Remember not to lean on your own understanding, Seek God's will in all you do, and He will show you which path to take. And don't forget to also pray for Wisdom. Don't lose sight of common sense and discernment, hang on them for they will refresh your soul. They are like jewels on a necklace. They will keep you safe on your way and your feet will not stumble, Pro... "

Both: " Proverbs 3: 21-22." We said simultaneously and laughed. This has always been our favorite scripture when she discipline us. She will. Make sure that you sink it deep in you until you believe it yourself.

I remember how she used to make us apologize to Daddy Jesus everytime we were naughty. We will never eat until we say sorry to Daddy Jesus. This woman has indeed done her part in raising us in the ways of the Lord.

Me: "Thank you mommy."

Mama: "You are welcome my boy. Don't mind your siblings, they care about you and I understand where they are coming from. This time around, take your time to know this girl, pray about it and ask God if indeed she is the one suitable you."

Me: "I will do so. I have to go. Please talk to Dada for me."

Mama: "I will, but also give him a call when you arrive and let him know."

Me: "Okay, I love you."

Mama: "I love you too baby. Drive safely and May the grace of God be with you, don't forget to pray. Did you take your Bible?"

Me: "Thank you mommy, I have the app on my phone."

Mama: "Okay."

Lethu: "Wee mah? Mommy you are letting him go just like that? I won't be there when he falls apart, I don't want to be part of it."

Mama: "Wee Lethu, did you even bath?"

Lethu: "Yes I did, kante I how long should I stay in the shower? I don't want to waste water. Big bro, I hope you know what you are getting yourself into."

Kgosi: "I seriously don't have time for this Lethu, I have to go."

Lethu: "Fine, hamba ke, but don't come back here crying."

Mama: "Lethubuhle thula tuu."

Lethu: "Sorry. I love you big bro. And take care."
This is just how over protective she is. You will swear that she is older than me..

Me: "I love you too and stop being a chatter box."
We hugged and she walked me out after hitting mommy goodbye, I guess Lindo is too angry to even come down.

Lethu: "Please buy me data?"

Me: "I knew it, what did you do with your money, You are working for crying out loud."

Lethu: "I'm not working, I'm doing an internship, internship big bro, I don't even earn half the money you earn, not even quarter of it."

God give me strength on this journey because it seems like it won't be an easy one...

[03/12, 15:23] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 30

Wisdom Mofokeng

Few weeks later

Things has turned from bas to worse. The house was very cold and dull. No one is talking, no one is saying thing. Everyone is just minding their business like nothing is happening and you will wonder when are we going to be able to address the big fish in the house.

Dad hasn't said anything, but you can see that he is gradually dying deep inside. He is trying to put a brave face for everyone but I'm sure he is unable to sleep at night. Yesterday I went to Palesa's house but there was no one. Actually I jave been there a couple of times but there was no one. It's about time I man up and face the music.. My wife needs

me, she is pregnant and neglecting her is not part of the plan.

I need to be there for her and the sooner I deal with my demons the better for everyone.

I wked into the dining room and everyone was seated excluding my mother. My wife has prepared food for all of us. I greeted everyone and she served me food.

Dad: "Oratile, please go call your mother. I want to talk to all of you."

She nodded and walked out, I ate my food until mama came in and sat next to my wife, closer to dad.

Dad: "I think we had time to think and deal with the ball that's has been thrown at us lately and now we need to find a way forward."

We just kept quiet and let him continue.

Dad: "Ruth, you and I have been married for a very long time and believe you me, I loved you and I still do. I saw a wife in you, perfect for me, but I guess the feeling wasn't mutual. I think it's only right and fair that you introduce the kids to their family. Do right by them and they will then decide what they want but from me, I think it's only fair I do this..." He stood up and went to the room divider and took out a brown envelope in a drawer and gave it to her. She slowly opened it.

Ruth:" Divorce papers? "

Dad:" I can't keep on like this. You don't love me and I'm not going to sit and hope that you will change. You failed to change when you got Wisdom and fooled me for 28 years that he is my child, and yet you still went back again and fooled me again and got Oratile. You made me believe that they are my children for the whole time. So, I'm freeing you. I see that you never loved me. You don't do this to people you love... "

Ruth:" Daddy, I'm sorry, I loved you, I still do. The devil just used me to get his way with me. But I love

you. Where will I go if you divorce me? "

Dad:" I meant it when I said I love you, read the divorce settlement at the back. I will leave everything, the house and the cars for you. I'm leaving the province to go and start afresh, hopefully you will find yourself. Wisdom, Oratile and Mercy, you will forever remain my children but right now, I need space away from this place, away from the church, I need to find myself again. "

Me:" What about the church papa? What will happen to it? "

Dad:" I spoke to Pastor Moloko, he will take over until I come back. I just need strength away from here and talk to God in a different location. I already made arrangements to move, so I'm leaving soon after this lunch. "

Oratile:" But daddy what about us? Why are you leaving us with this cold hearted person? "Oratile was in tears. Daddy took her hands into his.

Dad:" I know this not deal, but I need time by myself,

I will just be a phone call away if you need me.
Maybe after weeks you can come and visit me. "

Oratile:" You are jot aboundening us? "

Dad:" I will never do that, you will always be my
baby girl. I love you. Daddy just need time by herself.
"She nodded repeatedly.

Ruth:" Look what you are doing to the kids.
Mofokeng please don't do this to us. Please. "

Dad:" Are you being for real now? I shouldn't do this
to us? Who started this whole mess? Who got us in
this whole thing? Please, I don't want to argue with
you please. Mercy please take care of him, I know
this whole thing it's hard for you, but he needs you
more. Son, please don't be too hard on yourself,
things will fall into places. When I come back we
will try to sort this whole mess out. J ust don't do
anything stupid and be there for your wife, she is
pregnant she needs you now more too."

Me:" Thank you dad, please come back sooner. "

We stood up and hugged him, Oratile was in tears, I really do understand her but yah, daddy needs time too deal with everything. Indeed this whole thing, hit us where it hurts the most.

Ruth was also seated there in her fake tears...

Palesa Ella Motaung

Things moved from bad to worse in a short space of time. I moved to a cell and I was discharged from the hospital. My rape docket went missing, so we literally have no case and the doctor who was helping me with the rape kit disappeared within the air just like that. I'm still in a holding cell waiting for my bail hearing. Kgosi has been trying his best to help me but with a docket missing and the doctor disappeared we are moving in circles. I no longer have it in me to fight. My life is over, this is where I'm going to die and I'm sure that my father will make sure of that without doubt.

I'm just waiting to be sentence for attempted murder and possession of illegal gun, I don't know what more the police added and all those nonsense.

I was told that I have a visitor, this is very straining, I told my mother not to visit me because I seriously don't wish to see anyone, my life is over and I have come to terms with the fact that I'm here to stay..

I followed the wardener to where he was taking me. I was slowly walking as I haven't fully recovered. There are so many things that I decided to not deal with in my mind. I blocked them because I don't have enough energy 4 time to deal with them nor feel sorry for myself.

The rape issue, having a child with my brother, my father hating me, the list goes on, I don't want to deal with them. I don't want to wallow in them again because I doubt i will be able to come out of that pit. I doubt I will be able to recover.

I found Kgosi seated with my mother. What are they doing here? Asked them to not come here. I don't wish to see them until maybe I get out of here.

Me: "What are you two doing here?"

Kgosi: "We need to prepare for your case."

Me: "Prepare for what?"

Mama: "Baby please Kgosi is only trying to help you."

Me: "Mama, please we both know that your husband made sure that the evidence we had disappear, so what's there to prepare?"

Kgosi: "Please please, let's just try the bail hearing is on Friday we only have two days to prepare for it. God will be on our side."

Me: "Please stop wasting my time because I don't think your God exist in my life. I guess we are done here." I stoop up and mama stood in front of me.

Mama: "Baby please fight, at least for Naomi if not you please baby. She needs you. Do this for her."

Tear dropped in my eye.

Me: "Now is better off me. She has you please take care of her. I have acknowledged that my life is finished. I don't have anything to live for. He has taken my sanity, he has take my joy, my peace. I'm empty deep inside me. I don't even recognize myself anymore because of this pain I carry in me. So, it's better like this. It's better when I'm here because I will never be ready to face the world ever again.

Maybe this is a better place for people like me who don't deserve peace and happiness."

Her tears dropped as I walked to the door and asked the wardener to open for me. The moment I was out of sight I let the tears fall out. My chest was slowly closing out. The pain I held on my chest was tooo much. The wardener didn't see me when I fell down

struggling to breath. I held my chest as I slowly rolling on the floor with tears blinding my vision.

I think I saw my life flash right before my eyes. I have never wanted tk die before, death has never been on option even there death was never in my mind but then I was scared to release the only breath I had as I was scared it will be last one.

The wardener kept walking further and further away as I saw him with my blurry. I tried to call him but my voice fell in a deaf ear.

I was slowly loosing my breath and I was passing out...

[03/12, 15:24] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 31

Palesa Ella Motaung

I woke up on hospital bed, with my hand chained on the bed on the side. My whole body was sore and very exhausted from everything. I thought maybe I have died hey, I wished I could have died. Killing myself will be the most painful thing ever rather maybe it happen in my sleep or the time I have fainted, maybe that could have been so much easier for me.

My mother and Kgosi were in the ward. I don't know why they are fussing about me so bad. If they really think that I'm going to change my mind about the case, they sure don't know me, and they don't know how my mind is made up right now. I want nothing to do with everything. My father ruined me, he ruined even my chances of finding myself and being happy without him.

Mama: "Lele, the magistrate has given us a new

date for your appearance at court. All thanks to Kgosi." She proudly looked at Kgosi with a smile. He was wearing formal today, i haven't seen him in formal in a very long time and he was looking and smelling good.

Me:" Mama, your husband ruined me, he ruined every chance of me getting a good life that he failed to provide me with and if you really think going to court will save me then you are wrong. I will have a criminal record attached and glued to my name forever. How will I go back to school and work with a criminal record? Who will ever trust a girl with a criminal record? Please spare me the humiliation. I will die in prison and I have made peace with it. "

Kgosi:" But Ella you can't just give up just like that. God will see you through everything. Who knows maybe your dad will drop the charges. J ust give it a short. J ust try please, if not for me but do it for your mother and your little sister please. "

Me: "Kgosi please, do you know a pain of being raped? A pain of being punished for things you didn't do? A pain of being arrested for defending

yourself? No, you don't know anything, you grew up with a golden spoon already feeding you mos, you mother and father had it all figured it out. "

Kgosi:" Don't say that, is not you alone who is going through rough patch in life, my mother suffered almost everything you are going through, but she has never expected people to feel sorry for her, she has been raped by 12 men 1w guys, yet she still standing, she had to fight tooth and nail to be where she is. She lost both her parents a month apart and you are still here, with your mother still trying to hold your hand and carry you through. You are very ungrateful Ella, very ungrateful. Call. Me when you are ready to stop being this selfish.

Ma, I will wait for you outside. " Mama nodded and Kgosi walked out without looking back.

Mama:" Lele, I wish i could take the pain away from you. All of this is my fault. I should have walked away the first he hit me, but you were all I could

think of. He did everything to separate me from my family and when he succeeded in making me resent my family for all his actions he brought me to abuse me. I couldn't leave with nothing. I couldn't just pack and go without having a plan but I endured everything because I wanted you to have a better life, but now I know better. And I'm terribly sorry for putting you through all this, I'm sorry for not being brave enough to walk away when I still had chance. Now you are in this whole mess because of me. But please allow me, just give me a chance to fix everything. Please baby, that's all I'm asking for. I wish I can take away your pain but I can't but at least allow me to be there for you. "Her tears rolled down her cheeks. If there's one thing I hate is seeing my mother cry, she has been through the most and yet she still stand up for her mistakes. She is not ashamed to acknowledge her mistakes and her wrongs.

Mama:" Please baby, allow me to fix this." I nodded and let go of my tears, I was trying so hard to hold

them back and keep it together but couldn't. She sat on the bed and hugged me.

Mama: "It's going to be alright. I promise you. I'm going to fix this whole mess." I nodded. After some time she left saying she will be back.

She organized therapy for me that I will be attending in the next couple of days, I don't think I'm ready to talk about what I feel yet...my mind hasn't dealt with anything yet, it is still fresh wounds in me that I wish to deal with them by myself, but I guess I'm not capable of doing that.

Nthabiseng came to see me. She bought me some goodies.

Nthabi: "Is it really necessary for them to handcuff you like some old criminal though?"

Me: "It is what it is girl."

Nthabi: "Mxm, they can't even go out there to catch

really criminals, thesw fools."

Me: "Relax, I'm fine."

Nthabi: "I'm sorry, is just that they make me very angry, how have you been?"

Me: "I can't complain, I just can't wait to get out of this bed."

Nthabi: "You need to take care of yourself Lele, your health is important, don't just let things get to you."

Me: "I'm trying, is just not easy to deal with everything that is going on."

Nthabi: "I know, and I'm very sorry. Enough about the sob stories. I have good news to share with you."

Me: "I could use some good news for now. You and David are getting married?"

Nthabi: "What? Hell nooo, I'm not and will never get married to David even in my wildest dream."

Me: "Haibo, but I thought you two were in a good space nje?"

Nthabi: "Of course we are, but he is not a husband material. His Polo is still driving him crazy. He is cheating."

Me: "And how do you know that?"

Nthabi: "All guys and their Polos cheat, and I found earnings and make up in his car the other day but I never really confronted him about it and I'm not going to be that stupid. I will just lead him on until I have recovered and then dump him."

Me: "Wow, ain't you so evil though?"

Nthabi: "Good evil, so the good news is that I got a job at Mei-clinic, as an administrative officer and I'm starting beginning of the month."

Me: "Wow, Nthabi, I'm so happy for you girl. You deserve. Wow.." I was truly happy for her, if there is one person who deserves good things is her. Nthabi is a keeper in a girl's life and I'm truly and honestly happy for her.

Nthabi: "Yes, now I can plan our first vacation to Durban."

Me: "Yes girl, but you haven't even received your first pay yet."

Nthabi: "It doesn't matter, what matters is December this year we are going to Durban I'm going to save."

Me: "If only I wouldn't be in prison by then."

Nthabi: "Hai suka, Kgosi will make sure that you don't go there. I trust him." She smiled and I returned the smile.

Nthabi: "You are going to be fine."

Me: "I'm going to be fine."

Nomzamo Anna Motaung

Kgosi dropped me home, he is such a good boy. He didn't stay long, he said he had a meeting with one of the officer who is in charge of Lele's case. I got inside the house and changed. I have changed the house locks for my safety's sake.

Yesterday I went to the bank and opened a another fixed account for all the money I took from my husband, I have been withdrawing it ever since he left, he doesn't know me this one. I want to milk him until he runs out of money to pay for the lawyers. I asked Naledi to help me withdraw the money, to make sure that it doesn't trace back to me. So, I opened an account using Naledi's details, she didn't have a problem with that.

I changed into tracksuits and kicks. I took my car keys and drove to the Mofokeng household. If helping my daughter means asking help from the enemy then so be it.

Its not far, but I was just lazy to drive and beside I have to pick up Naomi from Mma Naledi's house afterwards. She and Naledi have been really helping me with her and I'm very grateful for that. I still pay Mma Naledi her full salary, but she no longer comes to the house, she just pick up Naomi from the

transport if Naledi is not available.

I parked outside the yard and went through the small gate. I knocked on the front door for couple of minutes until Ruth opened the door looking all messed up. Not so mighty anymore but I'm not here for that.

Me: "Can I come in?"

Ruth: "What do you want Nomzamo? I'm not in the mood for whatever you want to tell me."

Me: "Well, you don't have to be in the mood to listen but you can just listen, actually I don't care if you are in the mood or not Ruth, it's none of my business." I. Push the door and walked in. The house was clean though.

Me: "Listen here and listen very carefully, we are all in this mess because of you. You couldn't keep your lousy legs closed. So here is the thing. My daughter is arrested because of your selfish reason and that

bustard you call your boyfriend. So, you are going to call him and ask him to drop the charges..."

Ruth:" He hehe, hahaha, mxm and you think you can come into my house and told me that nonsense? Isn't he your husband? "

Me:" You really think I'm joking right? Pity I'm not joking, if there's one thing I have ever been serious with is this one and you are going to do as I say or else, your kids will never inherit what William left them. I'm the one who has the key to everything he owns and you thought you had everything, but girly, he was just using like all the other women he used before. Ask Dikeledi, Phumla and Mmamokoena. They are left with nothing but kids from that thing you called a boyfriend and you really thing he was stupid enough to leave everything to you while he didn't have any assurance that you will leave your husband for him? So, take this? Watch it and think carefully before you do anything and before I take this to the police because we know it won't end well. All your fraud businesses, the money you and him stole from the church to build you lousy farm legacy,

it's all in her. Don't worry I have a copy, you have only 24 hours to think this through, my phone will be on the speed dial with the police number. Make a right choice. You were not loved but used, funny enough, he was telling all your secrets when he is drunk and me being a good girl, I recorded each and everything he was saying because I knew that one it will come very handy for me.

The clock is ticking, toodles. "I blew a kiss to her. Some of the things I was just lying, I don't know anything about their fraud business but I know that they stole the church money to start the farm business and not only that they stole for Mark and they robbed people around to start the business. William was always telling me all those things when he is drunk. How I knew about his other legitimate children, it was easy, my husband can't keep his zip up, the only reason I'm sure he dated her because Mark is well off. He is one of those pastors that have businesses and they are rich as well, he was just exhorting money from or maybe he loved her, I

don't care at this point as long as they drop the charges against my daughter, I will tell Mark everything if they don't and he can maybe help me, it's a win-win situation for me.....

[03/12, 15:24] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 32

Ruth Mofokeng.

Me: "Damn it why is your phone off." I tried his numbers again and again and they kept sending me straight to voicemail. I was getting very frustrated with each passing second. How can this man be so stupid? I'm not going to sit and allow that woman to take what I have worked so hard for. That farm is my children's legacy. I had to steal and sweat for it and yena she was just being a trophy sitting home doing nothing. I can't sit and watch her take what belongs to me, she will have to kiss my ass first.

I changed into more decent clothes and tied my head with a doek. I didn't have time to deal with my mercy hair. I took my bag and Cara keys, rushed down. I met Oratile on the stairs. I slowed down I bit. I know I have hurt my children but it wasn't intentional. Everything happened so fast and it was all out of control. I couldn't control what was happening then, I wish I had a remote to rewind all the events but I didn't. This is a new reality that we all need to suck up and deal with and the sooner they all do that fast and accept that Mark is not their father the better for everyone.

Me: "I will be back later." She didn't say anything, she just walked passed me. Anyway, she will be fine, maybe after they realise that it's not only Mark who has money, I also worked hard for them then they will forgive me.

I got in the car and drove to the farm house, yes we

have a farm house that no one knows about, we bought it years ago and this where I was always coming when I lie that I went to women conference and all those church boring stuff, I will come here and spend time with Willy.

When I got there, there was no sign of a car outside. I opened the door, there was sign of him being here but the lights were on.

Me: "Babe? Willy?" I placed my bag and keys on the kitchen counter and went around the house and he was in our bedroom sleeping. I sat down next to him and gently shook him.

Me: "Willy wake up."

Willy: "Hmm." He slowly got up and held his tummy in the process.

Willy: "What are you doing here?"

Me: "It's your wife, she found out about the money stole from church and Mark and about the farm, she

is on us and she is claiming that if you don't drop the charges she will do anything and everything to make sure that her daughter doesn't go to jail."

Willy:" Stop worrying about that one, she won't do anything, she doesn't have any proof, come to daddy, I missed you so much. "He tried to kiss me but I pulled away.

Me:" Willy she has proof, akere when you are drunk you have a loose mouth, she recorded everything single thing. Do you really think she is just stupid? And what about the other kids that you have with all your girlfriends? You didn't even bother to tell me about them."

Willy:" Same thing you did, you failed to tell me about my kids, for 28 years Ruth. 28 years and you want me to tell you about all the kids with my concubines? What's the use? " He got up from the bed and fixed his trouser.

Me:" This is not time to fight Willy, your wife might

tell Mark about all the money we stole from him and things might not end well for us. "

Willy:" Maybe is about time we finish her off, she is becoming to annoying for my liking."

Me: "We can't do that, we already killed so many people. Her family is no because of us, we stole money from her family, we lied to her brother that she died and left a child, and that money we used to it to buy this house and also to buy the dealership. We cant afford to spill more blood. We need to think of something else. "

Willy:" There's no better way of dealing with Nomzamo, Ruth, the only way is to finish her off. If she finds out that we are responsible for her parent's death the time they came here to make peace with her, we are dead, and not to mention when his brother finds out that she is not really dead. Remember how rich and influential her brother is, just one word from him, we are dead. So,

let's not put our lives at risk, now that we have a chance to have good life with that useless husband of yours gone. "

Me:" Stop it, Mark is not useless, so how are we going to do this? "

Willy:" Play our cards right and trap her right into our hands and strike when she least expect us and we take what belong to us. "

Me:" Okay that can work, what about our money? Is it still safe? "

Willy:" I don't know, I lost my gadgets and I'm unable to access my banking app, but I will go to he bank soon to check it out and make sure that I leave that stupid blind woman broke and dead with her child in pris on. "

Me:" What about the little baby? "

Willy:" Naomi is our grandchild and we can't let her suffer while we are still alive and as much as we can try to run away from this, it is your fault that she

was conceived, had you told Wisdom that Palesa is my daughter this whole rape issue wouldn't have happened, so the best way to deal with the situation now is to take care of that poor baby, she doesn't deserve all of this. "

I nodded.

Willy: " Now come to daddy and give him some sugar, I missed you. " He pulled me closer to him and kissed and threw me on top of the bed smiling mischievously and with lust written all over his face.

Our sex life is rough, but exciting and I love it so bad. He is very naughty and I enjoy every little bit and piece of it. He is not scared to try new things.

Willy: "Take off your clothes." He said with a husky sexy voice and I didn't waste any minute. I got up and took off my clothes and when I was about to take off my bra he stopped me.

Willy: "I didn't say take off your under garments, lie down with your legs up and rub your self on top of your underwear..."

I obeyed...

Me: "Ah..." I was getting wet and his manhood was getting hard, his pants were half zipped, he unzipped them fully and he was left with his boxer shorts which were up in front.

Willy: "Yes, that's my girl, more faster." He was looking at me while massaging himself too, I couldn't take it anymore as I needed more than he was giving me, I need him here not my hand.

Me: "Please come..." He didn't waste any time, he got on top of me and kissed me all over my face down to my neck until he landed on my virgina, he liked it over my underwe6, sending shivers all over my body, he ate me out over my lacy underwear making me cry for more of him, he pushed my panties to one side with one of his hand and massaged my clit while eating me out...

Palesa Ella Motaung

Nthabi left and I was all by myself bored. Being at the hospital is no fun I must say and with Kgosi mad at me, he will normally keep me busy everyday but today he left very mad with me. I don't even know how to start with him, maybe I should call him. I kinda miss him. I dialed his number and ring it rang unanswered, maybe he is angry with him.

After few minutes a call came through, it was him.

Me: "Hello."

Kgosi: "Hi." Wow, he was being cold.

Me: "How are you?"

Kgosi: "I'm good thank you." Tjoo, why is he not asking me how I am doing?

Silence.

I didn't even know what to say to him

Kgosi: "Is there anything that I can help you with? I'm busy, sooo..."

Me: "No, I was just checking up on you." Tears formed in my eyes and I felt a lump trying to block my throat. Why is he being so mean and rude to me?

Kgosi: "Okay, thanks for checking up on me, we will talk."

Me: "Kgosi?" I said quickly before he cut the line.

Kgosi: "Yes?" He sigh, and tears dropped down my cheeks.

Me: "I'm sorry."

Kgosi: "Yah sure, I really have to go now. Cheers." He cut the line, just like that. I felt my heart breaking into pieces. I never meant to hurt him, God knows that I never really did, I was just going through a rough patch and why is he being so mean?

I turned on the bed and toss for the whole night, I logged on Whatsapp and he was online but not talking to me. Why is he doing this to me? Why is he

being so mean to me? He uploaded two pictures on whatsapp of himself, he was at some hotel eating and he captioned them "Time out" on both of them.

On normal bases he spend his nights here with me, to bring me lucj for the past 3 days that I have been admitted, even though we had nothing to talk about, I was slowly getting used to him being here. My mind and heart were warming up to spending time with him.

But today he decided otherwise. I kept on checking if he is online and on most cases when u check, he will be online then go off and back again. I wonder who is he talking to. I decided to text him but he never checked my WhatsApp, it just greyed me but he was online. I replied to his status commenting on how he looked nice still dololo, Nix.

Maybe I should just sleep, he is probably angry with me and he won't be talking to me anytime soon....

[03/12, 15:24] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 33

Nomzamo Anna Motaung

I woke up in a good mood today, finally my baby will be free from all this mess. What kind of man is Motaung though? How did I end up with such an evil character in my life? So, conniving, cheating and liar. He made me turn away from my own family only to bring here to abuse and use me. I left a comfortable home, filled with warmth and everything you could possibly think of only to come here and suffer in the hands of man.

My parents were not rich but they provided for me and my brother Nhlanhla. We had everything we need as children. When my brother went to varsity, I was still in High school, after matric I ran away with

Willy because he promised me heaven, and all the glitz and glamor.

My mother was a Nurse, no actually Quality Assurance Manager some hospital back home, and my father was a manager at an IT company back home and he was later promoted to work in one of the head offices of the very same company, they were doing well for themselves and for us as their children. They later started their own business but that's after I left home, I just heard people talking about but I have never looked back because William convinced me that my parents hates me and I believed him because my parents never liked him.

My mother couldn't even hide the fact that she doesn't like William, she even told him occasionally that she doesn't like him, I guess that angered him, my father never really voiced out his hate for Willy but he told me to be careful around him because there's something about him that doesn't

add up. Did I listen? I was drunk and blind in love, I thought everyone didn't want me to be happy, I thought they were against my happiness but look now? Where'd the happiness?

I remember my mother's words now saying when he shows you his true colors, you know where home is, but I didn't have guards to go back there, I didn't have the courage to go and face my mother. She only gave me her blessing to marry him because she didn't want to lose me, but now she is gone and I'm left all by myself, no one to see me through. I don't even know where my brother is. The last we spoke was on my mother's funeral and that was it. Even today we never spoke.

I finished dressing up, I'm meeting up with Nora at the bank for the last transaction that will leave Motaung's bank account empty, zero balance. I don't even wish to leave a single cent in that account for a mere fact that he made me and my

daughter suffer. Even if I die now, I know my daughter and granddaughter won't suffer. The whole 6 million will be theirs. Motaung will have to die first to access his insurance monies I guess, because all my insurance I have changed them recently. He is no longer the beneficiary on them he asked me to take 2 million life cover for myself and he was the sole beneficiary and I recently went to change all of that Palesa is my sole beneficiary on the covers I have.

I went to make lunch for Naomi as I will be dropping her off at school, she is doing quiet well this days, I guess the therapy is helping her. She is doing well as school and I received a letter to come to the award ceremony at her school next week.

Me: "Nono, come on we are running late baby."

Naomi: "I'm coming mama, I'm taking my bag."

Me: "Hurry up." She appeared with her bag.

Me: "Did you get all your books?"

Naomi: "Yes, can I go to my friend's house today after school, her mother will drop me off afterwards pretty please."

Me: "I will have to talk to Vanessa's mother first."

Naomi: "Okay, thank you."

Me: "Let's get going."

We went out with her telling me about the project that she has and how she wants to do it. She is such a bubbly loving child.

I dropped her off and went straight to the bank, I didn't stay that long as I had anticipated, she managed to transfer all the money and I signed documents that I had to sign and I left. I got a call from Ruth as I was about to drive out.

Me: "I thought you will never call me back, I hope

you have good news for me."

Ruth: "I'm not a coward, and for sure not stupid either, so yes I called back to but you good bye."

Me: "I'm not going anywhere Ruth, I'm here to stay, you can't get rid of me, not that easy tiger."

Ruth: "You think so? I clearly see that you are more stupid than I thought anyway, the same way I got rid of your parents coming to see you, is the same way I will get rid of you. Unfortunately your daughter will suffer the loss more. I don't deal so well with threats my darling, hence I have to do this. Goodbye Bitch, I guess I won again, 2-0, greet your parents for me. "

She hung up the line, and left me confused and puzzled, what is she on about? She is responsible for the death of my parents? But how? How does she know my parents? I heard a very funny sound of a count down at the back of the car, I turned to look and there was some red light flashing on something at the back, it didn't dawn to me what it

could be, after few minutes when if finally came to my mind what I could me, I opened the door and then.....

Ruth Mofokeng.

I cut the line and smiled. Willy walked in on me smiling too.

Willy: "And then?"

Me: "She is ashes as we speak. Mission accomplished."

Willy: "That's my babe, now let's go to the bank to take our money."

Me: "Before we go, are you sure that this will never link back to us?"

Willy: "Who am I?"

Me: "William aka Willy my Willy."

Willy: "That's my baby, this will never come back to us even if they try..."

Me: "I trust you."

Willy: "But we first need to destroy this phone of yours before it get us in trouble."

I handed him the phone and he dropped it on the floor and crushed it with his feet.

We packed our bags, we slept at a hotel in town. It was easy planting that bomb in her car, we followed her movement to the town today in the morning after dropping Naomi at school and when she parked at the bank that was it. Willy hid behind her car and when she locked the car Willy already opened the back seat door and he placed the bomb inside. You see Willy was a mafia back then, so it's easy for him to organize weapons, and killing Nomzamo with a gun was not easy. We had to make sure that she is totally out. I was supposed to call her yesterday about my decision but hey, we were still planning to kill her. I only sent her a

message asking her to give me more time and she told me that I only have today little did she know that I'm coming for her with everything in me.

We checked out and drove back to town, it's not far, just 10 minutes drive....

Kgosi Mankoe

Today is Palesa's bail hearing and since she didn't want to me to budge in I decided to step back, her mother said I should pick her up later to accompany her to court. I don't know who will be representing her, I mean the state needs to be notified first if you don't have a lawyer but who am I to stuff my nose in her business.

I will let her be until she let me help her. The court was scheduled to be at 11:00, so I dressed up and finished. I called her mother but her phone was

going straight to voicemail, maybe she forgot to charge it.

I drove to her house only to find that she was not there, Nthabi said she saw her driving out in the morning taking Naomi to school and she never returned.

I decided to drive with Nathabi to court hoping to find her there. On our way there, traffic was hectic i think there was an accident an the route to town. There were lots and lots of emergency cars driving to the there and we had to make a way for them to pass through.

Nthabi: "I wonder what's going on."

Me: "Maybe some drunkards caused this havoc."

Nthabi: "It must be very serious, with this many emergency cars?"

Me:" Yah it seems, I hope we don't get late. "

Nthabi:" Are you sure that you won't represent Ella today? "

Me:" She doesn't want anyone to do so, so I will respect her wishes. "

Nthabi:" I don't think that's what she meant hey, she is going through a lot and she just doesn't know how to deal with everything please don't give up on her!"

Me:" I'm trying not to give up on her but she is making it difficult for me to be there. "

Nthabi:" Come on Kgosi, we both know that we don't deal with pain the same way. Please represent her, just this time around so that she can get a bail, her little sister miss her and I also miss her. "

Kgosi:" We will see what happened when we get there."

Nthabi:" Okay. "

We drive in silence until we arrived, her mother was not there, I tried her phone again and it was off. We

went inside and procedures were followed, she didn't have any lawyer so I had to step in for her. The prosecutor stated their case. I don't get why this case was even here because there is no case without any evidence.

Me: "Your worship, I believe there is no case here, number the very same gun that was used at the crime scene was found with the fingerprints of Mr Motaung, and suddenly it disappeared, and my client become the accused. How can that be possible? For my client to be charged with anything, there must be an evidence provided that indeed the gun was in her hands. And to make this case even more questionable, she was also shot in the scene.

My Lord, I believe that everyone deserve a fair judgment and my client here is not responsible for any of the charge pressed against her since there's nothing to prove that indeed she was there at the crime scene. I resr my case. Thank you. "

Lele was looking me, her eyes were glowing fkr the first time after the whole hour arguing with this fool of the lawyer who just came to court unprepared. She whispered thank you as I sat down.

Later during the day the verdict was given and the charges were dropped since there was no evidence pointing at Lele and the medical report that I submitted worked in our favor and the bullet was pointing right at the gun that was purchased by Enos Lukhele, but there was no identification of that person that I found already.

At least she is a free woman for now, and she will value me because I'm definitely here to stay...

[03/12, 15:24] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 34

Wisdom Mofokeng

I parked few houses away from hers hoping to see. I have been struggling to sleep the past few days. The dream of that particular day when I stole her innocence is haunting me. Her cries when he asked me to stop yet I continued to please myself with her is haunting me. I so wish I could erase it from my mind but I can't.

My words haunt me. I'm as evil as my own mother. Indeed an apple doesn't fall far from the tree. She fed me this evil when I was still young and now it's manifesting. I should have known better. I shouldn't have went ahead and took her innocence. What kind of a man am I?

What if someone rapes my daughter? I don't think I will spare that person. I don't even deserve to be

around humans being. What I did is inhuman. I don't even know if I'm feeling like this because Palesa is my sister. What if she wasn't my sister? Was I going to feel this bad about it?

I don't know either. I let out a heavy sigh, as I watch a red range river spot park outside her gate. It's the same one that normally drops off her mother in regular basis. My heart is very heavy, I don't even have guts to face Palesa. If she hates me then that will be nothing compares to what I did to her.

Damn what is Kgosi doing here? I never really thought that red car was his. What is she doing with my sister? I jumped out of the car and marched to the gate, it was quiet a little distance because I was furious. I caught up with them at the gate.

Nthabiseng was among them and is no lie the girl has never liked me, she hates me with passion. I once asked her out, because we were in the same glass. She is beautiful but not the kind that I would

date, me and my friends we made a bet with her and the girl told me where to get off and how she doesn't date pastors' kids.

I thought she was bluffing but she never backed down. And since that day we never really got along, she told me that I'm split rich brat that doesn't care about anyone else but myself and looking back, she was right. I never cared about anyone else. My ego was my pride. I got every girl that I wanted at church, I might have slept with half of my classmates and those in the grade lower than mine.

Me: "What are you doing here with my sister?" I pulled him with his black blazer.

Nthabi: "And then wena? What are you doing here?"

Me: "Fuck off wena, I'm not talking to you. Kgosi what the hell are doing with my sister?"

Palesa: "Your sister? Who is your sister?"

I let go off him and looked her, you couldn't even

miss the annoyance in her eyes, not to mention how disgusted she was.

Me: "Palesa, I thought..."

Palesa: "You thought? You thought he will take advantage of me like you did ten years ago? You think he will rape me like you did and left me all alone to shamefully walk away? Kgosi is two times a better man than you will ever, you will never be my brother, I hate you, I hate you so much that I would kill you. You made my father to hate, my father hated my own mother and abused her all because of you, you got me pregnant and denied it, and now you come and claim to be my brother? What kind of brother does that? I wish one day your wife will go through the same pain you caused me, I wish you can suffer all the pain you have caused me. And please do me a favor, don't ever show your face here. Monster. "

She roughly wiped her tears and left. Leaving everyone in awe... The hatred and anger that

echoed in her voices. It was crystal clear that she hates me with everything in her and honesty didn't expect her to love me either, I didn't expect her to welcome me with warm arms...

Palesa Ella Motaung

I didn't realise how much I hate Wisdom until he tried to talk me. Everything just flashed back in my mind. His cologne, the very same he was wearing that very day he took my innocence, I could literally smell it and it made me so angry.

To even think I said everything that he did to me in front of Kgosi and Nthabi. What are they even thinking of me right now? Where is mama? She should have been at court today and she is not here either. I took out my frustration on the cupboards, I opened and closing them not knowing what I'm looking for.

Nthabi: "Lele?" Her voice came out as a whisper but I heard her, it filled with pain and concern, she was close to crying and when I turned to look at her, her eyes were teary, and that triggered my own tears, everything just came back all over again, that night I was raped in the bathroom, I was weak, very weak to fight him off, he kept thrusting his huge penis deeper and deeper in me mercilessly so, I tried so hard to fight him but I didn't have strength to do so. My vagina was throbbing with pain, my mind was screaming for help, my heart was echoing but did that help me? Nothing helped me. He kept going, same as Wisdom, I told him countless times that he is hurting me, but those words fell on a deaf ear.

I had to live and survive with the pain for 10 years, I didn't want to revisit it, I learnt to live with it. I learned to survive with, but I have never dealt with it, I had a baby to think of, I was expected to snap out of it so quickly, but look at me now? I can't move on from it, I can't continue like this, my heart is very

painful, I beating out of my chest.

Nthabi: "I'm so sorry." She rushed to my side and hugged me as I sank down on the floor with her by my side. We were both crying.

Nthabi: "I'm sorry babes, I didn't you you had to go through so much, Palesa I'm sorry..."

She kept saying as if this whole thing it was her fault.

She let me cry all the pain I was feeling deep down inside me. I hoped and pray that my tears will wipe away all the pain I was feeling but who am I fooling?

This is a pain I don't think I will ever get over, sometimes when I look at Naomi the pain comes back again to haunt yet I love her so much that I wish I can protect her to all the men like her father. Sometimes burying it deep in is much better than opening it because I become all weak and vulnerable over and over again.

Kgosi was still not inside, I don't even know where he is. My phone rang, it was an unfamiliar number. Nthabi let go of me and I wiped my tears to answer.

Me: "Hello." It came out as a whisper but the person on behind the line heard me because he responded back and my voice was shaking.

Voice: "Am I speaking to Ms Palesa Motaung?"

Me: "Speaking."

Voice: "You are speaking to Anele from Netcare Pholoso Hospital, I'm calling in regard of your Mother Mrs Nomzamo Motaung."

I felt imaginary sweat escaping my head and at my back. What the hell is my mother doing at the hospital?

Me: "Yes she is my mother, is she okay?" I spoke very fast.

Anele: "Your mother has been admitted here, you are the next of kin on her files. Please do come by

to sign the admission forms and all the necessary documents."

Me: "Is my mother okay?" I was trembling in fear.

Anele: "Ma'am please just come by and the doctor will update you."

Me: "Okay thank you."

I cut the line without waiting for to respond, tears were like a well of water in eyes, my eyeballs were burning with tears and I couldn't hold them any longer. Why is everything happening so fast. Why can't I catch a breather?

Nthabi: "Lele what's wrong?"

That question triggered so many emotions deep inside me, I just cried until I was able to breath and I told her what Anele just told me. Pholoso hospital is far, it's in pololwane.

Me: "I have to go, please take care of Noni just for me, maybe I wi come back tomorrow."

Nthabi: "Are you crazy? Do you really think I will let go to the hospital all by yourself? Never I'm coming with you. Just go and change and I will call my mother to pick Nono up and pack her things we will drop them at home."

I nodded and ran around the house like a headless chicken. I packed Naomi's things and also for lunch tomorrow I wore warm clothes and when I was done, I was met by Kgosi and Nthabi by the door. She also changed into warm clothes. Nthabi took Naomi's bags and rushed to her house. I was left standing with Kgosi there with his eyes blood red. He must have been crying. He opened his arms for me for a hug.. I dived right into them, there were so many fears in my mind yet I felt so safe in her arms.

Kgosi: "I'm so sorry I wasn't there to protect from that monster." He whispered over my head and kissed my head.

I didn't have tears to cry anymore.

Kgosi:" It's going to be okay, I'm here now. " His voice sounded unsure but yet I believed him and yet I feared more and more.

He let go of me when Nthabi got back and e kisses my forehead.

Kgosi: "Let's get going."

He opened the car doors for all of us, I tried to block my mind from what lies ahead of me but I couldn't ignore the harshness of reality that I need to come to terms with...

[03/12, 15:24] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 35

Palesa Ella Motaung

We arrived about an hour ago and no one has given us any feedback or said anything about my mother. Anele is a receptionist, all she did was to be kind to us and offered us coffee as we have been waiting for a long time with no response to doctors.

Seeing the explosion on the internet broke my heart, I don't know how she survived the pain. I don't even if she was already out of the car when it exploded or not, I just don't know, how it happened and why it happened. Who could be so heartless? What did my mother do to deserve this kind of pain? What did I do to deserve this kind of pain?

Are we really hated that much?

Honestly, I was very drained, emotionally, physically and mentally. I don't have the energy to deal with everything that is going on now. How do I deal with this whole thing. How do I tell Naomi everything and how do I help her to deal with this while I'm failing

to accept and keep on.

Kgosi was lost in his own thoughts in the corner there while Nthabi was sleeping on the couch. It has been a very long day, it's almost midnight but nothing has been said. I fear talking to Kgosi because don't know how is this whole thing affecting him. Maybe he is just trying to pull a strong face but this whole thing he will leave.

No man can stand a woman who comes with so many baggage. This will just be too much for him. And I lso don't want to be his burden, I will understand if he doesn't want to see me ever again after this.

The door from theater where they have been busy with my mother opened up and stoop up and the nurse half away.

Me: "Sorry sister, how is my mother doing? Is she okay?"

Nurse: "Calm down sisi, the doctor will come shortly and he will give you an update."

She brushed my shoulder and walked away. Kgosi was standing behind me. He gave me a weak smile when I turned to face him. We went back to sit where we were sitting. I couldn't even force a smile.

Voice: "Palesa? "I heard a familiar voice behind me standing near me.

Me: "Ma'Shirley? "I couldn't believe my eyes. What is she doing here?"

Shirley: "What are you doing here this late? "She was wearing her uniform.

Me: "I came to see my mother, what are you doing here? "

Shirley: "I work here now, I moved here 5 years ago, my husband and I divorced. "

She broke the hug and I held onto my hands.

Me: "I'm sorry to hear that."

Shirley: "Ah, it was bound to happen my dear, after so many years of trying to have children with no luck, my husband resorted to cheating and his mistress couldn't stop throwing it at my face that she is pregnant and she got my husband, so yeah."

Me: "Yoh, wow, I still don't understand why other women find pleasure in hurting their fellow women. I know for sure that God will answer your prayers."

Shirley: "Amen, so wena? What are you doing here?"

Me: "I have been here since 19:00, my mother has been in theater ever since."

Shirley: "What happened to her?"

Me: "Car explosion."

Shirley: "O my God, is that accident that we had to prepare for my goodness. I will go and check who is in theater and update you. Have you eaten?"

I shook my head no.

Shirley: "Who are you with?"

I looked behind me, Nthabi was dead sleep, she was indeed exhausted, Kgosi was sitting on the floor with his head buried in his thighs.

Shirley: "I will bring you food and blankets, just sit down. I will be right back."

Me: "Thank you."

She walked away and I sat down next to Nthabi, I put my head in her shoulder for a bit of support and rest. Can't they just come and tell us anything. Waiting is killing me, I'm very anxious right now...

Wisdom Mofokeng

I kept turning and tossing the whole night, everytime I try to close my eyes, my past haunts me. Everytime I try to rest, what I did back then come back to haunt me.

We were back in our house and Mercy was sleeping, I slowly got out of bed, limping my way to the kitchen, Kgosi, did quite a number one on my stomach, he punched me so bad.

I went to the kitchen to have some water...

Kgosi Mankoe

Finally the doctors came out of the theater room followed by nurses willing Palesa's mother, with machines connected to her, her skin was dark, very dark that I didn't recognize her, she must have got burned.

Palesa: "Doctor, how is she? Mama, mama are you okay?" The other nurse pulled her away as they continue to will her mother to the ward.

Dr: "There are so many damages done to your mother, right now we are just hoping for the best. We did everything we can to help her, now the rest is in her to fight. If you know how to pray, I suggest you do so now. I suggest you all go home and get rest, maybe come back during the day. "

He took one glance at us and pat my shoulder before walking away. The last hope left in Palesa's eyes, I watched as it slowly vanish, her eyes were changing slowly, fear was overcoming her and I'm here but not knowing what to do to help her, what do I do now?

She sat on the couch and Nthabi held her closer to her as she let out a painful sob.

Me: "Please excuse me." Nthabi nodded.

This is just too much for me, I don't really know what to think or say anymore. I have to deal with the

fact that she has a child, a ten year old child with her own brother. What kind of evil is that? How does one even recover from all that? How does one even begin to be there for her? How do i be there for without scarring her off, how do I be there for her without pitting her?

I'm scared of this whole thing. It's too much for me to take in. It's too much for me to believe it.

I went out side and screamed, luckily there were no people there. I just needed to release this bitterness in me, I needed to realese this heaviness in me. I took out my phone and dialed my mommy's number, maybe her voice will sooth me.

Her phone rang unanswered. I forgot that it's way passed her sleeping time.

I sat down on the follow, allowing the cold breeze to

hit me hard on my face.

Just when I was lost in my thoughts my phone rang, it was my mom.

Me: "Hello."

Mama: "Kgosi are you okay?" She sounded sleepy yet so concerned.

Me: "Everything is messed up, everything is a mess. I don't know what to do."

Mama: "Where are you? What's wrong, you are scaring me baby, talk to me." I quickly wiped my tears as if she is watching me.

Me: "Palesa's mother was involved in a car explosion, she is not doing well mommy, and Palesa too is dealing with so many things at one time, how do I be there for her? How do I show her that I'm here?"

Mama: "Oh my baby, should I come down there?"

Me: "No, no, I don't want to scare her off."

Mama: "Well, she needs. Someone who will talk sense into her, someone who will be her safe place right now and if the two of you are emotionally weak now, you are not helping the situation. I don't expect you to be strong my boy, but when you love someone, you must be ready to take their responsibility fully, you must be ready to step in, some of the people we love, sometimes we need to mother them first, father them first, be all that they haven't had before them first before they can love you otherwise."

It is going to be challenging the question is are you ready to step up and step in for her? She didn't ask to go through what she is going through, she didn't ask for all of that Nana, always keep that in mind okay. "

I wiped more tears on my face as they voluntarily ran through my face.

Me: "I hear you mommy, I love her, that's all I know but I didn't know if my love is strong enough to keep her. I'm scared of being rejected, I fear that the same thing happen between me and Vicky will happen again."

Mama: "Oh my poor baby, it will never go back there again. Don't dare go back to that dark hole ever again. You have come thi far and you have survived, and you will survive again my baby. I will be there first thing tomorrow morning okay?"

Me: "Okay mommy."

Mama: "Let's pray for now. Lord J esus, the creator that was never created, the unchangeable changer, you remain the same God who doesn't allow any situation to change You but you change all our situation. Lord you have been God in my son's life, I have seen you carry him even in his deepest dark holes. I have seen you walking with him through the darkest valleys and I refuse the devil to take him back there. I refuse for him to go back to those

hurtful days that broke him. Lord even the situation at hand, You knew about it before we knew about it and you have walked through it before we can go through it, You have tested it for us and you knew that we will be able to endure everything. Lord grant Kgosi strength in this trying times, guide him and order his steps into making sound decisions that he will not regret later.

I pray for Palesa and her mother let your healing hand be upon them. Carry them through this trying times and fight for them. Be their refuge, their God that they can trust. Carry them through the storms of life. Jehovah you have never failed me and you will never fail them. There is nothing that is impossible with you. I trust you and I have faith in you that you will mend everything and cool down every toxic situation. Your peace shall guard their minds in your name I ask all this thing. Thank you for it is done.

In J esus Christ name I pray, Amen. "

Me:" Amen. "

Mama:" Please don't do anything stupid, I will be there in the morning okay? "

Me:" Yes mommy. "

Mama:" I love you my boy, I love very much. "

Me:" I love you too mommy. "

[03/12, 15:25] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 36

Wisdom Mofokeng

We drove home, my mother urgently called us, but I'm dropping my wife at her mother's. She has been through a lot and I don't want her to stress anymore. This whole predicament we have at home has been

stressing her and the fact that she don't want to see me stressed.

Me and her still have a lot of things to talk about, one of them being hw we are going to deal with the new reality if Palesa having my child. I haven't told her yet, I just don't have the balls to tell her yet. I don't know how she is going to take it but one thing I know is that it might take a toll on our marriage and already our marriage is suffering.

I parked in front of her mother's gate, I oped the door for her and helped her out. Her baby bum was showing now, but huge yet. I took out the groceries we bought for her mother and she helped me with less heavy plastics and we walked in.

Her mother was already at the door when we walked in. We greeted and I didn't stay long. I left them packing the things we bought. I drove home and found Oratile's car on the drive way. I thought

for a moment she won't come.

I walked in without knocking and they were both seated in the dining hall both lost in their own world.

Me: "Why am I here? Hey sis"

Oratile: "Hey big bro."

Ruth: "Hello to you too son."

Me: "I don't have time to chit chat with you Ruth, why are here."

Ruth: "Well, since you are both earged to know why I called here, let's get right into it. I want you to meet someone."

Oratile: "Your new boyfriend I guess?"

Ruth: "No, your father."

Oratile;"Our father. I thought daddy went to Gauteng, what are you on about?"

Ruth: "I mean your biological father."

Oratile: "Say you are joking, you know what? I don't have time for this. I'm leaving."

Ruth: "You will do no such thing, your father is waiting to meet the two of you and introduce you to his family." She screamed on top of her lungs.

Me: "I have a father that I know and very much happy with and I know his family, so you and this boyfriend can go and fuck each other, he will never be my father, and I do wish to never see him in this house. This is still very much my father's house"

Ruth: "That father of yours that you worship so much has left this house for me, this is my house and I'm still your mother and I suggest you both sit down before I slap you."

Me: "I will not sit her and let you walk over my head. You lost the right to be my mother long time ago, you don't deserve to be called a mother. You deserve to rot in hell. I'm out of here."

Ruth: "Oh boy you will never walked out of me. I'm your mother, whether I'm in hell or not, I gave birth to you, I carried you for 9 months, I nursed and took

care of you so now that the wheels has turned you want to walk away? Mark is not your father and you better register that in your thick skull, now sit down before I blow your brains away. Sies. "

I hesitated a bit but she wasn't joking, so I sat down. Oratile was bit taken by her behavior. Nothing moves me about this woman, nothing at all, but the hate I have for her is unexplainable. I can't put in word but one thing I know is that I hate her with everything in me.

Palesa's father walked wearing my father's gown, that drove me mad. How dare she allow him ti wear my father's clothes? What kind of disrespect is this?

Willy: "Kiddos." We both looked at him and said nothing. I was boiling inside.

Me:" You know what fuck both of you, I'm not going to do this, I hope you two get hit by a truck and die

the most miserable painful death. Baby sis, let's get out of here. "

Ruth:" Yee wena Wisdom, sit your flat ass down before 8 go crazy, yei, yei wena, I'm calling you... "

I ignored here and bagged the door...

Kgosi Mankoe

Last night was quiet an emotional night for me. I couldn't drive us back to Mokopane, but the lady we met at hospital was kind enough to accommodate us in her house in Bendor. She insisted that we go to her house, since her shift will be ending at 07:00, she just drove up there and opened for us and showed us where will be sleeping.

Lele and I haven't spoken because I seriously don't

know what to say to her. Vicky has left me with a scar in my life that I don't know it will be easy to forget now that the situation I went through with is about to repeat itself or it is slowly repeating itself again.

I was engaged to Vicky, about to get married just after I graduated at law school. I thought she was all that and everything I needed but I was lying to myself. She went through a lot, she went through so many things, that's she lost her mother in explosion at her work place, things took a u-turn, Vicky lost herself, her father began to molest her, only to find out he is not her real father, she fell pregnant by her step-dad's child, and I was there to pick up the pieces, I was ready to settle down with no matter, I stood by her. I fought her demons with her.

She tried to commit suicide a couple of times until I took her in and she moved in with my mother to care for her, she was the woman my heart chose.

She was slowly recovering and she gave birth to cute baby girl Lesedi. She was her sense of being, she made her sane.

When I thought things have settled down, about a year later when we were celebrating Lesedi's first birthday, a guy came claiming to be her father and she agreed to it and told me they are moving to Scotland together. I didn't even know what to say to her. It register in my mind that fast, but when she came to my house and told my mother where to get off, it dawned to me that indeed she is moving.

Few months later about two weeks away from their trip she knocked at my door, mind you I had to deal with the fact that Lesedi is n longer mine, I loved that child to death. She knocked on my door in tears and said her boyfriend burned her car with Lesedi inside, my daughter was burned to ashes because the boyfriend thought that her mother was cheating.

From that day I haven't been myself, I fear committing to relationships because of how I have been treated. I had to pick her up once again, be there for her but I was so angry with her. I was very angry that her presence was making me sick, I couldn't bring myself to forgive her because I asked her to leave Lesedi with and she can go and she told me right into my face that I don't deserve to be Lesedi's father. I was there for her, during the pregnancy, I learned to love that child regardless of how she was conceived, but one rich bloody nigga just come around he take what made me nt to rely on what my parents built but to build legacy for my children and he took that away.

Even today I don't know how I was able to move pass Lesedi's death, I blamed myself for it, I still do, had I fought hard for her, she would still be alive today. I used to drink my pain away, sleep on her tiny tombstone, I had nightmare of her crying asking me why I wasn't there for her, why I didn't fight for her. Her death is somwthing. I'm just

surviving but being unable to deal with it.

My parent's prayer has kept me, they prayed me out of my depression, they prayed me out of the anger and the pain. My mother never got tired of coming to my room just to pray, she never said anything to me. But she will just hold my hands and pray, in the middle of the night she will still come and pray for me. She refused with my life. My father will force me to take quiet drives with him, he will begin to pray for me while on the road without asking for my concern.

It used to annoy me but as times went by, I gave yo refusing because they refused to give up they will force me to walk with them, a during those walks they spoke into my life, during those walks the bind the devil and the spirit of death, suicidal thoughts.

I will never forget how they were for me and kept me sane. My siblings were there for me. Lindo has

never been a prayerful person but in those days he joined the whole family, they will fast for my well being. And I'm very grateful for all that. God knows I appreciate them.

Now, I'm here again, almost the same situation I went through, what if I help her out and in the midst I lose myself? What if she will realise that she doesn't love me like I do to her when she finally finds her feet?

I don't want to go back to how I used to be...

My phone disturbed from my long trail of thoughts, I was still in bed, I was dragging to wake up, I just wanted Palesa to rest before we go to the hospital.

Me: "Mommy."

Mama: "Hey baby, how are you?"

Me: "I'm good and how are you mommy bear?"

Mama: "I'm good, you sound better than in the early hours. Did you get some sleep."

Me: "Yes I did thank you."

Mama: "That's good, and you have said your prayers right?"

Me: "Yes ma'am"

Mama: "Good boy, we will be in pololwane in the next 20 minutes, we will head to the hospital you guys will find us there."

Me: "What? What time did you guys leave Joburg?"

Mama: "Yee, that's none of your business, please get ready."

Me: "Okay mommy, let me go then. I love you too and tell Dada that I love him too."

Dada: "We love you too son." with that said I hanged up and got up and made the bed. I went to out of the room and met Lele on the passage, she looked very drained and someone who didn't catch some sleep.

Me: "Hey,.."

Palesa: "I was coming to wake you up, I ran the bath for you. Mam'Shirley gave us new towels and toothbrush."

Me: "Okay thank you. Let me quickly bath so we can go."

She nodded and walked passed me.

Me: "Ella?" She turned and looked at me.

Palesa: "Yes."

Me: "You are going to be okay. Everything is going to be well and I'm always here for you."

She nodded and wiped the tear that feel from her eyes.

Me: "Come here." I opened my arms for her and she dived in.

Palesa: "It hurts Kgosi, it hurts, I don't even know what to do, I feel lost, I feel forsaken. Maybe God is punishing me." She cried.

Me: "Shhh, I know it hurts, but it will be alright. God

doesn't punish people. He loves you and You will get through it okay?" She nodded rapidly...

[03/12, 15:25] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 37

Palesa Ella Motaung

Few days later

My mother's condition hasn't changed much. The doctors said that she is brain dead, there's nothing they can do. They asked me to switch off the machines but I couldn't bring myself to do so. This woman had been there for me through thick and thin, she has been my Pilar of strength. She went through fire because of me and now I have to switch of the machine? I'm not a killer, I can't do that. If this is how she has to live then so be it

because I'm not God, I can't bring myself to do such a horrible thing to my mother.

As much as they tried to convince me that she is as good as dead, if they remove the machines she won't be able to breath, she won't be able to function like a normal person, I told her to let her be. If I have to pay for her to be kept like this then so be it. I can't begin to imagine my life without my mother. Life without her is impossible, life without her is not worth living. I just can't.

The police haven't said anything so far about her case. They said they are still investigating the cause of the explosion. No one seems to have answers to what could have caused the explosion but they are waiting for the lab results of some particles that were found on the seen. The car is burn beyond recognition. Including everything else that I was in that car.

Londi: "Hey, I bought you some food." Kgosiv's mother walked in with a doggy bag. She has been here for the past few days now. She has kept me sane on my worst days.

Her husband left yesterday because he had business and church to deal with, so his wife decided to stay behind to keep me sane.

Me: "Thank you, I will eat later."

Londi: "Come on now, you haven't eaten since morning. You have to eat something."

Me: "I know, I just don't have appetite, I'm worried sick about mama and Naomi, this is just too much for me to handle."

Londi: "Come here, you know you don't have to act all strong right? God has your back and the minute you start to recognize that there's a greater power operating in your life, which is wrong because only one power need to operate and the lesser power

must bow, then things will begin to fall into places. If seating and feeling all sorry for yourself thinking that God has failed you believe you me, you will be miserable all the days of your life.

Satan feels no sorry for anyone, as long as you allow him by all this attitude you keep when faced with challenges, he will also continue to press you down. So, you need to get up and begin to fight, you need to start fighting, not only for yourself but for you daughter, for your mother, but most importantly you need to fight for yourself.

Don't be scared to get all dirty with the devil, you see every time when the eagle want to kill a snake, it flies down first, meaning it first gets dirty with the devil and let the snake think this has an upper hand, but when the snake begin to relax, the eagle takes it to the higher level, it fight the snake in a realm of its weakness, that's in the sky.

Same goes to you my love, when you need to conquer fear, and all the tricks of the devil, go down to his level and take all of them and when he thinks he got you, get up in your prayer, go into the realm he knows very well that you will become untouchable.

It is only when you begin to cry out to God when He starts to move for you, move with you and move on your behalf. The Bible says that the earnest prayer of a righteous man makes tremendous power available.

Sitting here all day crying doesn't solve any of your problems. Yes the doctors want you to switch the machines because they claim that your mother is lifeless, but what are you doing to prove them wrong? What have you done so far about this whole thing? Nothing.

Let me tell you the harsh truth that the world may

not tell you. No one in this world cares about anyone else. Yes they may seem to care but whatever happens to you or your mother, they all say aw shame skepsel sa Modimo and that's it, and you will be left to deal with reality when no one is there, so you need to learn to be strong for yourself, you need to know how to act when pushed over the wall, you need to know how to behave when the wind is against you, you need to know how to control yourself when reality hits bad.

We are all here for you, but if you are not doing anything to help yourself, there's nothing no one can do about that. Okay?"

She has said a mouth full, most of the things she said hit home, she made me realize that I don't have anyone but myself. I couldn't help it but let the tears flow out. Maybe I needed this to be able to deal with my dilemma.

Londi:" It's going to be okay my love, it's going to be all fine. Okay?" She squeezed me into her warm embraced while smoothly rubbing my bag.

Kgosi went to pick up Naomi from school she has been asking about mama for a very long time, so I asked the doctor to allow her to see her just for few minutes and he said she must wear hospital scrabs for medical reasons.

After a while we went to mama's ward again, we sat on both her side, we held out our hands towards mama and Kgosi's mother asked me to pray. I felt corned and pressurized, not that I didn't know how to pray. I do know but few months ago have been very hectic, they have been very heavy for me to even utter a single word to God, I didn't have the right words to say.

Maybe is because I'm too angry. I feel like everything is His fault, had he been there, had He

warned me maybe, Had he carried me maybe I wouldn't be feeling this way. Kgosi's mother was just quiet, and uttering "Yes Lord, thank you Jesus" here then, I ended up crying, I cried so bad....

Ruth Mofokeng

We went back to our farm house after realizing that all the money in our account was gone, I don't know how but there was no money. We tried to trace it with the bank but it only showed many transactions made with funny reference numbers.

I was very furious, very angry with Willy, we both know had he given me the card and not told that lousy wife of his the pin we wouldn't be here. Now we will never find out where the money is.

Willy: "Come on you can't continue to be angry with me. At least we managed to take her out."

Me: "Yes we managed to take her out but we are broke, what was the use of taking her out? What are we going to eat? Where are we going to live? This house still belongs to the bank because we won't be able to pay it off. I wonder why did I even trust you because seriously, seriously William I didn't sign up for poverty. I didn't sign up for this madness of yours. Please save me from this headache and get our money back or else I'm walking out of that door and I'm not coming back. "

Willy:" You can't be serious now Ruth. You are stuck with me. Where do you think I will go? We are in this together. We are a team remember? "

Me:" A team? A team how? You went behind my back trying to please that louder wife of yours and now you claim that we are a team? How? "

I furiously got up and paced up and down, very angry and mad. We are literally broke, we have nothing to our names, he gave everything to his

wife because he thought she was stupid but look who is a big fool now?

Willy:" Seriously? Like really now? We were in this together but now because of one stupid move I have to suffer come on. It's not like everything is my fault, this whole thing is your fault too, you were busy fooling around with that stupid husband if yours, you hid my children away from for years, for years and yet I still stayed with you and now because money is not there you want to start pissing me off? Don't test me wena. "

Me:" You know, I don't have time for this, I'm going home. "

Willy:" You are not going anywhere, you are not going anywhere." He roughly pulled me and I tripped and fell on my tummy.

Me:" Ouch, why did you do that? "

Willy:" We killed my wife because you wanted to be with me, now that she is gone you want to leave me? Unfortunately you are not going anywhere, you are

stuck with me for life. You can't go around ruining people's life and get away with it easily. We are in this mess together and so shall it forever be you are mine. " He kicked me on my stomach.

Willy:" Get up and make me food and after that I want to have sex with you. You have an hour to finish cooking. "

He left me laying on the floor helplessly...

[03/12, 15:25] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 38

Kgosi Mankoe

I picked up Naomi and we went to the mall to buy her food. She is such a lovely bright kid. I picked her up at Nthabi's house, and already she was telling me about her relationship with Ella and her mother.

I still wonder why they never told her the truth about her real mother. This is one thing that really puzzle me.

I know it's none of my business but keeping the truth away from her might end up damaging her further. She might end up not being able to recover from her. Some mistakes are very costly to make, people need to think them through. It is small things like lies that breaks families. And this is one of them, it's one thing that will break this child and fear that she might not recover.

I bought her McDonald's and we drove to Wisdom's house I wanted to see him before we can go to the hospital. Naomi was telling me about her friend's at school and asking me millions questions that I didn't have problem answering them.

I rang the intercom, I spoke to him earlier that I will be coming, I need to look him in the eye and ask

him why he did what he did. Beside the fact that she was her sister, even if not, he was still going to do it. To rape a woman is a serious offense to me and the fact that he is working for my father's company makes matters worse. I can't work with a rapist, I just can't bring myself to even work with him.

I drove in and parked on the driveway, Mercy opened the door as if she was waiting for us to arrive. When she saw Naomi, her eyes never left her face, you couldn't even kiss the resembles of a wisdom on her, her eyes and nose were totally her fathers. Her coffee nourished skin just like her father, she is a girl version of Wisdom.

Naomi: "Hey sis Mercy." She waved at her with her tiny cute hand.

Mercy: "Hey Nono." She opened her arms for a hug and she ran right into her hands after wiping her tear quickly. Naomi ran right into her arm and hugged her waist with her head on her huge tummy.

Mercy: "I have prepared some goodies for you pumpkin, go right in and I'm right behind you."

Naomi: "Thank you, I heard sis Ella saying your house is big and it's very beautiful, can I come stay with you?"

Mercy: "We will have to talk to Sis Ella about that first."

Naomi: "Okay..." She ran inside.

Me: "How are you?" She shrugged her shoulders, her eyes weren't as happy as her claims to be. She looked like the whole world's weight was on her shoulders.

Me: "Is Wisdom in?"

Mercy: "No, he went out, but he will be back just now. Please come in."

Me: "Right after you."

She led the way into the house, their house was indeed beautiful as Naomi has said, very classy.

She offered a drink and sat down and we both watched Naomi as she played with toys that Mercy gave her.

After a while Wisdom walked in. I have been waiting for him and looking at him right now makes me so angry. It makes me angry to the core.

Mercy saw that we might end up fighting, she called Naomi to the other room.

Me: "Why did you do it?" I stood in front of him, he ciueven look me in the eye.

Wisdom: "I'm sorry.."

Me: "You are sorry? You are sorry for what? That you raped your own sister and left your seed in her? What are you sorry for ntwana? Tell me?"

Wisdom: "I shouldn't have done that, trust me I regret it, it haunts me."

Me: "It haunts you because she was your sister? That is the only reason why it haunts you right? You have damaged that poor child, she is damaged because of you, because of your selfishness. Now look and you still want to work for my father's company? I'm sorry but I can't bring myself with work with rapists."

Wisdom: "Come on Kgosi, please don't fire me, I have a child on a way. Please man. "

Me: "You should have thought about your future that day you decided to be wreckless. I guess I will receive your resignation letter on Monday morning. Naomi, come, let's get going."

Naomi came rushing down and the look on Wisdom when he saw his photo copy run across me and hold my hand. He was taken by that and I seriously couldn't careless...

Ruth Mofokeng.

I was laying on the floor after Willy came back and found me not being able to make him food, he came back and hit me and undressed me. I can't believe the kind of monster he is. He left me on the cold hard floor all naked. My bones felt broken, I couldn't get up on my own. I didn't know where he went but he went out, he took the car keys with him.

I crawled on the floor and went to get up, balancing myself with the couches, I dragged myself upstairs with my body very painful. It felt like I was hit by a train. I got upstairs and I soaked myself in bath with hot water.

When i was done I went downstairs to cook for him before he comes back and hit me again. I cooked a simple meal, rice and chicken stew, when I was about to switch off the stove, the door flunged opened and she walked in with a woman.

Willy: "We are back and please serve e and my beautiful babe, some food. I hope you didn't cook nonsense with those long disgusting nails of yours."

Me: "And who is this?"

Willy: "She is your replacement."

Me: "My what? You know what, you can go and fuck each other, I'm out of here."

Willy: "And do us favor, don't return."

Wow, so is this what is is now? Wow, okay, I'm not going to cry for this stupid holligan of a man, I'm walking out and never coming again.

I took my car keys, he think he can mess up with me, then he clearly doesn't know me that much, I want to hurt him where it hurts the most this time around. I limped my way to the car drove out.

If you want to play dirty with then, so be it, dirty we will play...

Palesa Ella Motaung

After an hour of crying, Kgosi' mother just let me be, I thought she will take over and pray but she didn't, she just kept on saying thank YOU J esus, O yes Lord but nothing. I thought maybe she will carry me through the pray but nix.

Londi: "How do you feel now?" She asked after I was calm and collected?

Me: "I don't know, but better than earlier I guess."

Londi: "You will be fine, don't be too hard on yourself, it will take time but it will surely be okay. So, you and Kgosi, what's going on between the two of you? Let's take a walk, we will be back for another prayer session for your mom." Another one? Ain't we done kante? Yoh.

Me:" Me and Kgosi we are just friends. He is very kind, and caring. "

Londi: "Just friends and very kind and caring, hmmm okay. Only if you see how his eyes lighten up when he speaks of you. "

I laughed slightly blushing.

Me: "Ah, well me and him we will never be good together, I'm not even his type not to talk about his league. Kgosi is very educated and look at me? I dropped out of school, I have a 10 year old child, he deserves better than I can offer."

Londi: "You have a child?" I nodded quickly

Londi: "Oh wow, and what do you mean you are not in his league?"

Me: "I don't know, maybe I'm just not good enough for him. Have you seen how well he carries himself? I don't think I will ever fit in his lifestyle and look at you too, you don't even look like his mother..."

Londi: "One thing I know is that love knows no leagues, love is kind, love is beautiful it knows no colors or boundaries. So, if he likes you and you like him, then go for it. And see where it will lead you and you can always go back to school and finish

what you have started. Life becomes what you make out of it."

Me:" I guess but isn't awkward for you to be talking about your own son's love life? I mean you are his mother and you should be overprotective of him and the kind of women he dates and all of that. "

Londi:" I want my children to be happy, when they are happy, I'm happy. I can never stand in their way of happiness and if they want to make mistakes I give a room to do so. Being stricked on them is only going to push them away. So I want them to know that I always have their back, even when they are wrong, I discipline them with love but I can't forsake them for mistakes.

I was once young, I fell in love too, my parents allowed me to make my own mistakes. My fiance left me on the alter on our wedding day for another woman. And in all of that, I have seen my mother going down the pit of depression with me, she sank

deep in that pit with me, she pulled me out of it. I'm what I am today because of her.

I told myself that I want to be like this woman, even much better than her. She has always been there for me as a mother and a friend. "

Me:" Wow, I wish I had that with my own mother. I don't even know how to be a parent to my own child, I fear telling her truth, I fear that it will break her. "

Londi:" What truth? " she stopped and I continued walking for a while and stopped only to realised that I left her at the back.

Me:" It's nothing, I think we should go back inside....
"

[03/12, 15:25] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 39

Mercy M. Mofokeng

I'm closing to giving birth now but I'm not happy at all. I don't even know how to begin to be happy. I don't know how to pretend to be happy. Ever since that fateful day when Naomi came here with Kgosi, I couldn't stop thinking about her. Her face haunts me. She is indeed the girl version of Wisdom, I don't know how I missed it but now I can't even ignore it anymore. How do I continue to be happy in this kind of situation?

The tension in the house is very thick that you can cut it with a knife. Wisdom comes and goes as he pleases. The only time we talk is when we share greetings and that's it.

Ever since he lost his job, I no longer know the man I'm married to. He drinks, he is forever drunk, he

doesn't even take care of himself. I don't even know how he is going to take care of my unborn baby when he is born. The only time I feel sane is when I'm at work. Keeping busy with work has been helping me not to over think things.

I stopped going home because my mother always tells me to pray and deal with the situation the best way I know how. I haven't seen Lele is ages. I don't wish to see her, at least not now. I know I owe her an apology and again I'm scared that she will push me away. I feel lonely, I feel lost. I feel like the world has rejected me and turned against me. I can't even call Nthabelieng because she is forever busy, now that she is a new mom, it makes matters worse. She never has time to call or check up on me.

Koena: "Mrs Mofokeng."

She peaked through the door. She is my P. A

Me: "Yes."

Koena: "Your 11:30 appointment is here."

Me: "Okay thank you, you can sent them through please and arrange to refreshments please."

Koena: "Okay ma'am"

I cleared my table...

Palesa Ella Motaung

It's been months now with my mother being admitted at the hospital, the medical aid was getting exhausted and i have to move her to the public hospital or switch off the machine. I have never been put in this kind of a situation before, it's very hard and tough, I don't even know what to think anymore.

I know that she won't last at public hospital, they won't even give a damn about her. They will be telling me that they need to make means with beds and giving me endless excuses for me to switch of

If the machines. Her doctor said there's nothing changing with her, nothing was getting better with her. I have never received any good news ever since she was admitted.

Kgosi's mother calls every now and then to pray with me, she keeps on encouraging me with the word of God but it only last for that few minutes. When she drops the line, I sink back into depression mode. I don't know why.

I haven't seen my father, I don't even know where he is but rumor has it that he is sleeping with every skirt in this neighbourhood, I'm sure he went and claimed his policies because he is very broke and the farm is closed down, workers were on strike few months ago because they were not being paid. I don't know about the car dealership.

I have to be careful with money because I don't know how tomorrow will be. I don't even want to

touch a single cent in the fixed account that mama opened. I know it has a very huge amount of money but the future is uncertain. I have a child to think of and I still need to go back to school next year.

I finished packing for Naomi, we are going to Gauteng. Kgosi invited us over, just to catch a break. Mam'Shirley promised to look after my mother and she said she will update me if anything changes with her. She said I need a break. Plus, it's school holiday for Naomi, she also need to rest and refresh. We will be using a taxi, I have never been to Gauteng, even though my parents had money we have never been to that side of the province nje. We stuck around Limpopo.

Well, me and Kgosi, uhm nothing is going on. I don't know what's going on between us. Uhm, we are not dating but we are friends. Very close friends, and yes we kissed the other day, well maybe more than often but it has never let anywhere.

I woke Naomi up and helped her to bath and dressed her up warmly, I heard that Gauteng in Winter can be very cold. I made her food while I took a shower and dressed up. Kgosi send us money for transportation, he send me R1500, I don't even know what we are going to do with this kind of money I mean taxi is about R400 for both of us and I'm sure some snacks won't cause us more than R200. 00.

Anyway we finished up. Nthabi was waiting for us, she is taking us to the taxi rank with her mother's car. She has been using the car ever since started working in Town and her mother uses stuff transportation to work. She took the morning off, just to see us going.

Nthabi: "Are you ready?"

Me: "Yep, I think I'm ready."

Nthabi: "Hmmm, you must make sure that you enjoy every last minute of yourself there, and don't worry about mama, I will go and check up on her every single day after work."

Me: "Thank you so much."

Nthabi: "You Ddont have to thank me, I'm your friend and friends always have each other's back."

Me: "No, Ntjabi I mean, thank you, thank you for always being there. I know there's a lot of things I haven't told you and some I know you are dying to know but you have never pushed me to talk or saying anything, I really appreciate it and I promise you that when I come back I will be honest with you about everything. "

Nthabi:" It's okay babes, you don't have to tell me anything if you don't want to, but just know that I will always be here for you if you need me. I just want you to be okay, and please consider therapy again, please babes."

Me:" Okay fine, I will call Dr Mike when I come back to resume with it. "

Nthabi:" Thanks my girl. I love you. "

Me:" I love you too babes."

She forced us to buy snacks at the nearby complex and when we were done she dropped us at the taxi rank and we said our goodbyes and she went back to work.

Kgosi called.

Me:" Hey. "

Kgosi: "Someone seems excited to be coming to Gauteng."

Me: "Well, I guess I am. How are you?" I couldn't hide the excitement in my voice, i need this break indeed. I need to move away from this place that has brought me nothing but pain, it brought me nothing but horrible experience of life.

Kgosi: "I'm good, I hope you are good too."

Me: "I'm good thank you."

Kgosi: "I can't wait to see you."

Me: "I guess the feeling is mutual."

Kgosi: "Did you tell the driver to where to drop you off?"

Me: "Relax, I did already."

Kgosi: "Okay I was checking, I don't want you to experience the horrible part of Gauteng on your first arrival."

Me: "I trust me I won't."

Kgosi: "Where is Nono girl?"

Me: "She is here watching cartoons on your iPad, I think you should take it, I mean she no longer listen and she is forever on it."

Kgosi: "Come leave the child to enjoy being child. Uhm Baby cakes, let me love and leave, I have something to attend to quickly, I will call you back."

Me: "Okay, sharp"

He hanged up and I sat back and relaxed. I don't

even know what time we will arrive I might as well sleep...

Later around 15:00 we arrived, the driver dropped us at MTN taxi rank in Joburg, it was very crowded for my liking, seeking so bad. Gosh, is this what people call Joburg? I rather stay home because I can't stand this. I held Naomi tightly in my hand and our luggage in my other hand, while my handbag was gagging around my shoulder. I can't risk it in this place. The stories I heard of this place were very horrible.

We were waiting for Kgos, he asked me not to love until he finds, and he was being delayed by traffic nearby

Naomi: "When is uncle Kgos arriving, I don't like this place, it's very noisy."

Me: "I know Nana, he will be here very soon."

Naomi: "He said he is going to take me to Gold Reef City, and buy me lots of clothes."

Me: "Don't get too excited child."

Naomi: "I like him, are you two dating?"

Me: "Naomi? What do you know about dating?"

Naomi: "I'm not a kid anymore, I'm 10 for crying out loud. Do you like him?"

Me: "I'm not having this conversation with you. "

Naomi:" Okay, but it's not a crime to like a guy, I mean I also have a boyfriend at school. "

Me:" What? What do you know about dating Naomi?
"

Naomi:" Geez relax he is my guy friend, not a dating friend."

She laughed after realizing that she recalled got me there.

I really enjoy seeing her this happy.

Kgosi finally came, he didn't look like someone who was at the office, he was wearing sweat pants and black t-shirt and sneakers..

Naomi:" Uncle Kgosi... "She let go of mind and literally ran to him.

Kgosi:" Hey Nono bear, how are you baby? "He picked her up.

Naomi:" I'm good, how are you? " She played with his beard.

Kgosi:" I'm good. How is Sesi Ella doing? "

Naomi:" She was missing you, she couldn't stop talking about you in the taxi. She was even blushing. "

Me:" Naomi, stop it. Why are you lying?"

Naomi: "I'm not lying and she like you." She hit her face on Kgosi's broad shoulders.

Kgosi: "Baby cakes." He placed his hand around my

shoulders and kissed me on my head.

Me: "Hey."

Kgosi: "I'm sorry for keeping you waiting."

Me: "It's okay."

Kgosi: "You look good."

Naomi: "She dressed up to impress you."

Me: "Naomi stop it before I beat you."

Kgosi: "I also can see that too Nono bear and and she looks very beautiful. Come on the let's get going."

He pulled our luggage with his other hand while he was still carrying Naomi on the other hand. Mr strong guy...

Let me enjoy just this week here...

[03/12, 15:26] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 40

Mercy M Mofokeng.

I arrive home very late today, I didn't feel like coming home early because there's nothing new waiting for me in the house rather than a drunk husband who doesn't even recognize himself.

I haven't been feeling too well, my mood was very foul and my body was just tense. Indeed, when I arrived I found Wisdom on the couch smelling like a whole avern, the worse part he even peed on himself, he was too drunk.

I felt the urge to pee and I went to the bathroom to relieve myself. The house was very quiet than usual. Usually Wisdom will be singing around and being nuisance. My phone rang before I could even reach the bathroom.

Me: "Hello."

Mark: "Mercy, how are you?"

Me: "I'm good dad, how are you?" I'm glad he called because I can't do this anymore. I tried to hold things together in this family but I can't anymore. I feel like I'm married to myself and no one seem to care. Ruth is galavantung the streets, doing God knows what, life has been going well for her since she bought a new car recently with which money, I don't know.

Mark: "I'm good, where is Wisdom? I have been trying to get hold of him and his phone is off."

I don't why or how but he triggered so many tears and emotions that I have been bottling up for a very long time. I thought maybe things will change but who was I fooling? Look at where we are now?

Mark:" Mercy, are you okay? Is everything? "

Me:" I can't do this anymore dad, I'm tired, I'm tired, I'm sick and tired."

Mark: "Okay please calm down before you upset the baby. What's wrong talk to me."

Me: "I just can't dad, please come back, please..."

Mark: "You know very well that I can't, I wish but I can't. Can't we solve whatever it is on the phone."

Me: "No, I need you, Wisdom needs you, please.." That came out as a whisper.

Mark: "Where is Wisdom?"

Me: "He is...he is..." I felt a sharp pain around my abdomen, it wasn't really intense but I felt it, it was very unsettling.

Mark: "Are you okay?"

I felt warmth in between my legs. I thought I peed on myself but it was not a normal pee this one. The uncontrollable pee, I couldn't even hold it back as it came out. The pain tensed up again and this time around I balanced myself on the wall and breathed in and out.

Me: "I think I'm in labor."

Mark: "Erh, is there anything I can do? Where is

Wisdom? Let me call Oratile."

Me: "Oratile is in Cape Town, she left about 5 days ago, please call the ambulance. We are at our house. I don't think I will be able to drive myself to the hospital."

Mark: "Let me try your husband one last time and I will call the ambulance."

Me: "Your damn son is drunk and passed out on the couch, please call the ambulance. You know what, forget it, I will drive myself to the hospital."

I cut the line, because I was very annoyed. I went to the nursery and took the hospital bag, I took off my clothes and wore my gown. The pain was there but not very intense. I took my track suits and threw them in the bag along with my toiletries.

I went downstairs, scary as being alone sounded, I had to be strong for myself as if I impregnated myself.

I found Wisdom up and drinking again. I passed him but he called me as I was about to go out.

Wisdom: "Where do you think you are going this late?"

Me: "I'm going to the hospital, I'm in labor."

Wisdom: "You labor? My darling no wife of mine is going out this late. So sit back and relax."

He was already pulling me back to the couch, he was stumbling, and the last thing I need is to anger him because drunk people tend to be dangerous.

I screamed out loud and that scared him off a bit.

Wisdom: "What's wrong wifey? Are you okay? "

Me: "The baby is coming out, I need to go the hospital."

Wisdom: "Okay, let me drive you then. Where is the car?"

Me: "I will drive myself, let's get going."

He followed me around singing and stumbling as we walked to the car. The pains were getting intense now, very intense and there's no way in hell I will allow Wisdom to drive me. Never, he is was too drunk for driving and I don't know if I will be settled to drive, but it's a risk I'm willing to take....

Palesa Ella Motaung

We were settled now, we were at Kgosi's apartment, there was no way I will stay with his parents and siblings. Never, I won't be comfortable.

I called Mam's hirley to let her know that we arrived and I asked her about my mom and she didn't want us to talk about her. She said i should just enjoy

myself and be free. I shouldn't worry about my mother at all, she will look after her and she will update me if there are any changes.

He went out and he said we are eating out today. Naomi is way too excited than I am. The apartment is nice, two bedroom, one bathroom and opened planned kitchen and seating room. Indeed his mother is stylish. Simple things she added around this place making it more homely and stylish at the same time.

Me: "Naomi, you can't wear that, it's cold outside."

Naomi: "Geez, why are so uptight? And uncle Kgosi told me that we are going to a nice warm place, so relax sisi."

You know this child just know how to press my buttons shame. Yoh, sometimes I feel like beating nonsense out of her but I hold myself. Her tantrums sometimes make my day colorful and less stressful.

I let her wear her skirt and pants and boots as she wanted. I fixed myself too.

I wore my black jeans, warm blouse and long jacket on top with boots. I did my make up, well, just a foundation, eyeliner and lips, that's the only way I can go.

We waited for Kgosi and indeed he showed up after sometime changed and looking so much hotter than the last time we saw him.

Naomi was being a chatter box as we made our way to the car. He said he is taking us to Monte Cassino for dinner, I don't even know where that is but I'm excited.

We drove there singing along to Naomi's kiddie songs and Kgosi knew most of them.

We arrived and we went to BilkG restaurants, well I read that on the entrance. They were serving buffet, very nice delicious food. Kgosì made me eat so many unusual things but I enjoyed and Naomi also enjoyed herself. She was very happy. We took a walk around the place when we were done eating and we went and played games. We had so much fun, and took so many pictures.

By the time we were leaving Naomi was asleep at the back seat. She was very exhausted.

Me: "I had a very nice time, thank you."

Kgosì: "I aim to please baby cakes, and I'm glad you had a good time, I also did."

Me: "So, where are we going tomorrow?"

Kgosì: "I see someone is very excited, we are going to Gold reef City as I promised little Ms here."

He carried Naomi into the house, at least we were

staying ground floor not up the stairs.

Me: "I can't wait too."

I opened the door and let them in and he placed her on the bed and came back to join me in the lounge. He said next to me and placed his hand around my me, bring my head to his chest.

Kgosi: "My siblings are joining us tomorrow, I hope you don't mind."

Me: "As long as is not your parents I'm cool."

Kgosi: "It's so good to see you this happy hey."

Me: "It's been a while since I had fun, well I haven't had fun in my whole entire life."

Kgosi: "And I promise you that as long as I'm still alive, you will have all the fun in the world." He made me sit up straight and he looked deep into my eyes as if he is searching for something.

Kgosi: "I love you baby cakes..."

Me: "Kgosi I..." I interrupted him but he didn't want me to.

Kgosi: "Shhh, I know you are not in a good space but I will wait for you. I haven't felt so strongly about anyone before than Vi...just know that I will wait for you...if I have to cross the rivers and claim the highest mountains to be you, I will do so." He wiped his tear. I placed my hands on his face and helped him wipe his tears. I wonder who he was referring to as V...

Me:" I'm not easy to love Kgosi, I don't want you to put your life on hold for me. I have so many demons that I have to deal with and being in a relationship while I haven't done much healing in my life will only damage you. You are a good person Kgosi and I don't want to damage you like I am now."

Kgosi:" Allow me to love you, some pains can only be healed by love, the right kind of love. Allow me to kiss your pain away, allow me to love your pain away. "

He brought his face closer to mine.

Kgosi:" Allow me to love you...

He kissed me, I closed my eyes to receive his lips, which were cold minty and yet so soft.....

[03/12, 15:26] : My Breaking Point chapter 41

Palesa Ella Motaung

I woke up in the morning feeling, rejuvenated calm, collected and happy. For the first time in my whole life worry was not part of me, well it was but I decided to brush it off. I didn't want to think anything negative. I'm trying very hard to be positive even with mama's condition.

Next week I have to make a very hard decision, either to take her to the public hospital or switch if the machines and right now I don't want to think about all of that. This moment right here right now it's all I love for and something I will forever cherish and keep close in my heart.

Kgosi went all out with the breakfast this morning, Noni was still sleeping when I woke up. Well, nothing happened last night, we didn't go far with the kiss. We both went to sleep in our separate rooms. I got ready for breakfast, at least there was no tension between us or those awkward moments. Normally when he kisses me it will be those moments he is leaving, and I get to not see him again for a few hours. And now I slept with this guy in the same house.

Me: "This is nice." I stuffed more bacon in my mouth.

Kgosi: "Thank you, and take it easy, the food is going nowhere." Well, I didn't have it in me to eat slowly like I'm not hungry.

Me: "I can't help it.(he laughed). What time is your sibling coming?"

Kgosi: "They should be here any moment from now."

Me: "Oh, so early?"

Kgosi: "They can't wait to see you. Well, that's what they said."

Me: "Hmmm, let me do the dishes and you go and freshen up."

Kgosi: "Aowa, you are my guest, I will do the dishes and you go and freshen up."

Me: "But you made it breakfast, it is only fair of me to do the dishes."

Kgosi: "I insist my lady, go and look beautiful for me and I will clean up in here."

Me: "Okay, thank you."

Kgosi: "It's my pleasure." He was already standing next to me. He pecked my lips.

Kgosi: "Tomorrow we are going to church, and my mother invited us for Sunday lunch."

Me: "Oh, I didn't break any church appropriate outfit." I don't know about having lunch with his family. As for church, it's been a while since I went there. It's been ages, but I guess I can't run away from this forever.

Kgosi: "We will sort you out later today. Run along now, and I will wake Nono in the mean time so she can eat."

Me: "Thank you, you are so sweet."

He blushed and I pecked his lips, I don't even know where I got the liver to do that, he pulled me by hand as I was about to walk away and I stopped right in front of him.

He placed both his hands around my waist. He looked deep into my eyes and I did the same. I don't know what I kept the straight contact without backing down. We are not the same height but he is not that taller than me. If I wear my heels we will be the same height for sure or almost the same.

He smashed his lips on my mine and waited for me to pick up and go along with the flow. His hands moved from my waist to my ass within seconds. This is all foreign to me, I was just going with the flow, and I was feeling all this foreign feelings in my

my tummy...

Kgosi: "Hmm, go and take a bath." His eyes were so tiny and his voice very hoarse. He kissed me on my forehead and let go of me...

Ruth Mofokeng

Me: "This is a guy" I handed him a picture.

Me: "I want a clean job, and makes sure he doesn't die, and this is your first payment and your second payment will be transferred when you are done."

Moscow: "Sure sister boss, don't contact me, I will contact you when the job is done."

Me: "Sure."

I got in my car and drove away. William doesn't know me, you don't play with me and get away with it. You don't bring women in my house and think I

will sit around and let you be. I will show him what I'm made of.

I got home and I found Mike's car parked on the drive way, it's very early for him to be showing his ugly face here.

I went inside the house and I found him pacing up and down like he wins the house.

Me: "What are you doing here Mark? You have made yourself clear."

Mark: "Where the hell where you? I have been trying to get hold of you since last night."

Me: "So?"

Mark: "Really Ruth? Your daughter in law is in a delivery room she drove herself there because your son was too drunk to even notice that she is in labor. Do you even care about this kids Ruth?"

Me: "Yes I do care but they pushed me away, what was I supposed to do? Force myself on them? They told me that they don't need me, so why should I bother them?"

Mark: "Really Ruth? They are your children for crying out loud. Why are you like this? Mercy lost her other baby and yet you are trying to protect yourself with silly excuses?"

Me: "She was carrying twins?"

Mark: "Yes, and Wisdom is broken, too broken. And I believe you as a mother should have been there for them but you are still busy galavanting the streets with that useless boyfriend of yours. When are you going to grow up?"

Me: "Hai stop it okay. I didn't know they were having kids. I'm not a prophet, nor a dog I can't sniff if they were needing me. Instead of you standing here being holy than me, we should be going to the hospital."

I took my bag and car kesy and he followed me out.

I got into my car and he got into his and we drove to the hospital.

Mercy M Mofokeng

I don't know how I should feel about losing my baby. I gave birth to a stillborn baby, and my baby girl fought and she is alive. I haven't had the energy or strength to even look at her. I don't have it in me to bring myself to look at her nor my dead baby boy. My heart is crushed into pieces, my soul can't even bare all of this.

I have suffered too much stress in my own house because of my husband. As much as I don't want to blame him, I do blame him. This is all his fault. He never cared about me. He was never there for me. This pregnancy was heavy and lonely, I had so many sleepless nights but where was he?

Drinking his sorrows away, not even thinking about me. Not even thinking about his children. I was happy that I'm pregnant with twins but I couldn't even share the news with him because he was forever drunk. He never even attended a single Doctor's appointment with me. He was never available for me when I needed him, when I suffered heartburn, when I craved for things in the middle of the night. All he cared about was his ego and broken heart.

Mama: "Mercy?" That's was my mother's voice. You couldn't even miss the concern and pain in her voice. It brought tears that I was trying to hide and suppress.

Me: "Mama he is gone, he is dead, it's all my fault..."
I cried

Mama: "Baby no, it wasn't your fault. Askies my love don't blame yourself."

She brushed my back as her tears also failed her

Mama: "It's going to be alright, mama is here now.

It's going to be okay."

Me: "Maybe I should have left, maybe I should've come and stayed with you maybe my baby will be alive today mama. I hate Wisdom, I hate him so much."

Mama: "No, baby you don't hate him, it's okay. It was long written in God's will. God knows best."

She let me cry in her hands. Never in million years have I thought that this will happen to me. I have never thought about it, ever, it has never even crossed my mind.

This is a pain I will never wish on my worst enemy even if I wanted to. I will never wish anyone a pain of losing a child. It's very painful. Having to carry a child for months only to give birth to a dead soul. Watching those tiny eyes closed. Those tiny feet getting cold and those tiny hands also getting cold. It's too much, my heart refuse to believe that he is not coming back yet my mind knows that he is not

coming back.

It is an abomination for a mother to bury her own child. It should be the other way round. What has the poor child done to deserve this? Having to deal with death seems like an impossible mission for me. I need strength, unexplainable strength to carry me through this process. I don't know if I will be able to grieve or even let go of him.

Later that day my mother forced me to go and see my baby. When I saw that white linen wrapped around his tiny body, my legs couldn't carry me any more, my whole body became weak. God what have I done to deserve this?

Thank God for my mother who was there and also the Mofokeng were there. Ruth was there, the hate and anger I have towards this woman is too much for me to even articulate it in words. I hate her with passion. She is the cause of this whole thing. She is

responsible for everything happening to me and my child dying.

She is very selfish, I wish she can be stroked by thunder and die. I want to strangle her to death. She doesn't deserve to live with people.....

[03/12, 15:26] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 42

Ruth Mofokeng

A day later

I waited for Moscow to call me back but he was taking his time leaving me all unsettled and very nervous. Not to mention that my ex husband is back now in my house doing God knows what.

I want him gone because being here is not helping me and is making me mad. I paced up and down the kitchen trying to figure out what to do and how to do it. I need to go and check if Moscow did exactly what I told him to do, if not I will finish the job myself. I need a good excuse to go out.

I went to the sitting room where I found Mark buried on his phone smiling. Who is he smiling with? He found a person already? Mxm, fuck off.

Me: "Uhm, I'm going out for a moment I will be back."

Mark: "Okay." He didn't even look at me. Wow, that Hurst. Who is taking all of his attention?

Me: "Okay." I slowly said and hoping he will give me the attention.

Mark: "Is there anything else you want?"

Me: "Nope, I will be on my way now."

I walked out without waiting for any response from him. I took a knife in the drawer and hit it on my waist.

I drove to the farm house...

I got there and the house was rather too quiet. I walked upstairs slowly mixing each and every step I take. William has to die. I think I made a big mistake when I told Moscow not to kill him but if I don't take him out now, or else all his brats will come looking for his wealth.

I slowly opened the bedroom door, he was sound asleep when I got. It's now or never. This is my only chance to have access to my wealth. If I don't kill him now, I will walk away with nothing. I fought and brought my whole being in this relationship and i can't afford to go back empty handed. One of us has to die, and unfortunately it's not me.

I didn't think twice when I got to him. I put the knife right into his neck and it went deeper and blood spilled out like water but he was still breathing, I don't know how. He slowly turned and looked at me.

Willy: "Ru... Th..." He coughed out blood.

Me: "I'm sorry but I had to do this."

Willy: "Ru...th..."He took his last breath and died.

I pulled out the knife with a my hands trembling and shaking vigorously. I went to the closet and took out a towel, I wiped off all my finger prints on the knife and placed it in his hands.

Me:" I love you Willy, but love is never enough, I did this for us, and for our children. Until we meet again."

I rushed out of the house and I got in my car with

the bloody towel and my clothes were covered in sprinkles of blood.

I drove out with tears blurring my vision. It only clicked now what I did, I didn't mean to do it but I did. I stopped the car on the road side because I couldn't carry on, I needed to breath. Every time I blink I see his eyes looking me, I hear his voice saying my name.

"what did I just do?"

I took out my phone and called Moscow.

Me: "Moscow, I have done your job, go to the house and clean up and leave no traces."

Moscow: "I'm on it."

I cut the line and leaned on the wheel and cried....

Palesa Ella Motaung

Lunch didn't happen yesterday after church because Kgosi's parents had an emergency to attend to with one of the church member. They had to go and pray for the daughter of that particularly church member she was hospitalised and Kgosi's dad saw a vision about her and they had to rush. So, tonight we are doing dinner with them. To say I'm nervous is understatement. I'm shaking in my clothes.

I don't even know what to expect. The siblings are nice but Lindo is very talkative, funny yet very serious. If you are not used to him, he will make you cry instantly so. He is that type that will joke but not laugh, and laugh when you are serious.

Me: "How do I look? Should I change this pants and wear a dress?" I asked Kgosi who was on his phone chatting to heaven knows who.

Kgosi: "We are not going on some romantic get away here, you look fine. Let's get going. I'm sure Naomi is even wondering where are we."

Me: "Mxm, I just don't want to over dress that's all."
He stood up and pulled me into his arms.

Kgosi: "Even if you wear wrecked clothes you will still look perfect. You are gorgeous."

Me: "Thank you." He perked my lips. Don't ask me what we are doing because I slo don't know what we are doing I'm just going with the flow.

Kgosi: "Come let's get going going."

He held my hand and we waked out hand in hand.

Naomi left with Lethu and her friend yesterday, Lethu asked her to come with her to her house and Kgosi assured me that she will be fine, he trust his sister and they will have fun. Which they did because they had a slumber party last night. They posted videos on Facebook and Instagram.

We drove to Kgosi's home in a perfect silence.

We arrived at the house wow, very huge gate opened slowly as we waited to drive in. Wow...

Me: "Is this a hotel or a house?"

Kgosi: "A house I guess."

Me: "Wow, what do your parents do for a living?"

Kgosi: "They are into property business. Come let's go." He dismissed me just like that. His mood suddenly changed. I don't know if it was because I was asking about his parents or what. They were couple of cars of the drive way. He held my hand tightly as we walked to the front door.

Me: "Are you okay?"

Kgosi: "Yah." Okay...

He pushed the glass door and it opened. Yoh, Hai this house is very beautiful bethuna. The class, the

elegance and the simplicity, yet so perfect and so homely. I wonder how many rooms does it have. Wow, the ceramic floor, o could literally see myself on the floor. The furniture? Let me not say.

His mother emerged from what I believe its a kitchen. She was wearing a short demon dress with an apron. She looked very beautiful and glowing. She is aging gracefully so.

Londi; "Oh Pales a, look at you. How are you baby."
He pulled me into her embrace.

Me: "I'm good thanks and how are you Ma."

Londi: "Ngiyaphila sthandwa Sam. And how is mommy's boy doing?" She hugged Kgosi and Kgosi kissed her forehead when she let go of him.

Kgosi: "I'm good Mommy, and what are they doing here?" His face changed again. Who is he talking about.

Londi: "Not in front of our guest Kgosi. I suggest

you go and shove that attitude where the sun doesn't shine before I hit you." Eh, kante she can be this serious?

I have never seen her this of hers, she didn't look angry but she was too serious, that I didn't know she has this seriousness.

Kgosi: "Still mommy what is Khomots'o doing here. I thought we agreed that she won't come here."

Londi: "As if I asked her to come here. You know how much that girl doesn't listen to anyone and she doesn't even respect me. So how do you expect me to put a leash on her while you failed?"

Lethu: "Hello family, I thought we agreed bo fighting today. Hey Lisa, how are you?" She hugged me.

Me: "I'm good thanks and how are you?"

Lethu: "I'm good. Mommy please stop, you know Kgomots'o will do anything and everything to see us fighting. I can't wait for her to give birth and we get done with her ugly fake face."

Me: "Who is Kgomotso?"

They all looked at Kgosi and I slowly turned to look at him.

Kgosi: "She is someone not important." He said dismissively.

Londi: "Someone not important?" Okay, what's going on here?

Londi: "Palesa please make yourself at home, dinner will be ready in a few minutes. Lethu please help me set up the table baby and Kgosi call your father and Lindo upstairs. Palesa please come with me." She said already walking away and I followed her, as much as I was confused, I didn't know what to say to who.

Lethu: "Haa mommy, how can I set up the table alone? Lisa must help me."

Londi: "Yee wena, Palesa is my guest wena set up the table before I woop your ass girl."

Lethu: "Fine."

Lady: "Ma can I help you too."

Londi: "No, I thought I told you to sit down and relax I will do everything my self. Palesa please pass me that bowl babe."

Kgomots o: "I will pass it." She looked very pregnant

Londi: "I thought I said Palesa yoh J esu. Go and sit down please."

Kgomots o: "Ma, please I just want to help, that's all."

Londi: "And I said no, please Khomots o. Ever since you came into this house you have cause us enough drama. I understand you are pregnant with Kgosi's child but that darling doesn't give you a right to disrespect me in my own house, so please child, I'm trying so hard not to leash on you right now, go and sit down." I thought I didn't hear right, Kgosi made a girl pregnant and he didn't see it fit to tell me? Wow.

She dropped the towel she was holding on the floor and she walked out angry.

I looked at her hoping she will say it's just a bluff. I felt my heart beating faster than it's normal rate.

Londi: "I'm sorry baby, go outside to get some fresh air, I will call you when dinner is ready."

She accompanied me to the garden and made me to sit and down and clear my mind. I don't know what's on my mind either. Why did he hide the fact that his girlfriend is pregnant?

Wow...

[03/12, 15:27] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 43

Mercy M Mofokeng

I got discharged today, I asked my mother to come and click me up. I can't even stand my own husband, that means I can't even be in the same house with him. He annoys me so much that wish I can kill him instantly so.

Wisdom: "Can i help you with her?"

Me: "We are fine.. My mom will be here any minute from now."

Wisdom: "Baby I'm sorry, I didn't mean to do all of that."

Me: "You are sorry? You killed my child. He is dead, an innocent child is dead and you are sorry? Fuck you Wisdom. Get out."

Wisdom: "I know you hate me right.."

Me: "Hell yeah, I hate you I hate with every Fibre in me. I don't want to see your face ever again. I wish you can just die."

Wisdom: "You don't mean all of that."

Me: "Trust me I do mean every single word. Khuts o and I don't need you, we will be fine. Go and get drunk since it's what you do best."

He dropped the baby bag and slowly walked out with his eyes on the floor. I couldn't careless. I know for sure that if he stay he will turn me into a monster that I don't want to be.

My mom walked in, I'm sure she met Wisdom on the corridor because of the look she was giving me.

Mama: "What happened?"

Me: "Nothing."

Mama: "What I saw is nothing, sit down. Let's talk."

Me: "Geez mama I don't want to talk."

Mama: "Watch your tongue young lady, ke tla go trapa!"

Me: "I'm sorry." I mumbled and sat down.

Mama: "Mercy, this is not healthy. You need to calm down."

Me: "How do I calm down when my husband killed my baby? How do I do that?"

Mama: "Wisdom didn't kill your baby Mercy and he was his father too. Stop this whole nonsense before you go crazy."

Me: "No mama, this is his fault. He thought the whole world revolves around him. He forgot about us, he forgot about me. He forgot about our marriage, he forgot that I'm pregnant. He forgot about me mama. You know what hurts me the most?"

He cares about his sister whom he got pregnant more than his pregnant wife. I can't forgive him, I won't forgive him. I will never forgive him. I don't want to see him anywhere near my baby, even tomorrow when we are burying Khumu I don't want him there. He can go and fuck his sister "

Mama:" No baby, that is anger talking Nana, you need to calm down. Don't push people who love you away. He was going through a rough patch in his life. He didn't know how to deal with what he was facing.

You also were not there for him. Baby marriage is not easy, it will never always be you and you only. Men are weak, and we women need to be strong for them and pull the out of their weakest pits baby. Just because you lost a baby now you want to punish him. This could have happen to anyone out there. Don't do that to yourself. Don't punish him because of this.

Yes, he is wrong, but remember that he was caught in all of this. He doesn't know how to deal with everything. He is trying but he found alcohol as a coping mechanism. Don't kick him own when he is already down. His mother broke him, he is a broken man, who doesn't know how to deal with everything.

Please baby, don't do this. Please my love, don't let this guy change who you are, please my baby. "

Palesa Ella Motaung

They called me back on the table for dinner, I don't really know how to feel about everything right now. I couldn't stop looking at this Kgomots o girl brushing her tummy every now and then. Lindo wasn't happy at all, he even voiced it out the minute he got in here.

Tebogo: "Let's say the grace." He broke the cold silence after everyone was seated. Naomi was sitting across me and Kgosi next to me. There were few seats that were vacant because the table was huge, very huge.

We held hands together.

Tebogo: "Gracious God we are grateful for the gift of life and provision. We are greatful for family and your Grace. Let this food nourish our bodies and

bless the hands that made them, the hands that produced them, the hands that bought them and bless the bodies that is about to eat them. In your name we pray Amen. "

We all chanted amen. The bowels went around the table serving ourselves. To be honest I didn't even have appetite but I couldn't be rude.

Kgomots o:" Babe, please pass me the veges. "Hse was looking directly at Kgosi, as they were seating opposite to each other.

Lindo:" Who babe manje?

Lethu: "I also wonder because we don't have anyone with that name in this house."

Londi: "Stop it you two. Kgosi pass Kgomots o the vegetables please." He did that and we were all silent.

Londi: "Lethu please take Naomi and go eat upstairs my love."

Lethu: "Haa mommy, so nna I will miss the drama?"

Tebogo: "Lethu, listen to your mommy baby, please go."

Lethu: "Tyoh, fine. Nono girl, come let's go eat in the theater room."

Lindo: "And don't watch anything beyond your age."

Lethu: "Hai suka wena, leave me alone. Mxm."

She helped Naomi with her plate and they walked out.

There was silence again, long one for that matter but the heaviness couldn't be missed too. We all ate until we were done with no one saying anything. When we were done I offered to clear the table and Londi served us caramel cake and custard.

Tebogo: "I think we should address the big fish in the room that is making all this awkwardness." He placed his bowl on the table.

Tebogo: "Kgomots o what are you doing here child?"

Khomots'o: "Daddy I came to see Kgosi. Since I'm pregnant with his child I thought it will be best if I come and see him. I mean the baby also want to hear his voice every now and then and not only that daddy, Kgosi has never been to a single doctor's appointment with me, he always come up with excuses. I didn't make this baby alone. He was on top of me scream... "

Londi:" Woah hayi Nontombi, that's too much info. So Kgosi what do you say for yourself? "

Me:" Can I be excused? "

Londi:" No, you are not going anywhere. Sit down. We all want answers here and Kgosi still have lots of explaining to do and I believe you will aslow want to hear what's going on. "

I sat down defeated, can this day just end already?

Tebogo:" Kgosi? "

Kgosi: "Yes I haven been going to the doctor's appointments with her because I still don't think she is carrying my child. I don't want to love this child only to find later that s/he is not mine. I rather be

there only when s/he is born, but right now? I can't do that to myself. "

Kgomots o:" This is your child Kgosi, what are you trying to say? He is your child. My parents also want to know when are you coming to pay lobola. "

Kgosi:" I don't love you Kgomots o , and I won't forced to marry you because I have a child with you. That's not how it works. "

Tebogo:" I thought we spoke with your parents already about this whole marriage thing and we agreed that we will pay damages when the baby is born. "

Kgomots o:" Unfortunately I can't have a child with a man who didn't marry me. Kgosi must marry, at least he owes me that much. "

Kgosi:" I don't owe you anything. "

Lindo:" Okay, calm down, let's make this thing easy now. Erh Kgomots o or whatever you call yourself, let's wait until the baby is born first, we will do the parternity test and if the baby is indeed Kgosi's we will talk from there. Akere wena you see yourself

married in this family, fine, let me give you the requirements of being married in this family, 1st thing first, you need to be chubby, I mean look at my mommy, and little sister and of course our future makoti on the side. Secondly, you need to have a matric and a qualification, and you also need a job, no one will take care of you in this house. You work for your money, there's no house wife. Child you work for what you want and you work for your baby, you don't go around opening you stinky legs to mean hoping you will be a housewife. In Mankoe house hold there's no housewife. They don't exist. That flat you are staying at currently, when your baby is born, you will have to pay for it, it will only accommodate the baby and that's it. And thirdly, you need to be a Christian, we can't be yoked to none believers, our God doesn't want that. So. Mogel wena choose which one you want Akere. We don't hate you but we just want to save you from poverty mentality that you have. Marriage is not a ticket out of poverty, marriage is a blessing and it can also be a curse. So if I were you, I will go and look for the father of that poor baby and go back to

school. Because girls like you who always want to trap men into marrying you because you want to be slay wives don't always survive in the game of marriage. Mommy, Daddy and my lovely African sister in law Palesa, case closed unless you our beautiful sister have something to say." He looked straight at Kgomots'o and she was out of words.

Wow, I knew Lindo is crazy but this crazy? This guy deserve a round of applause shame. The whole table was dead quiet for a moment.

Lindo: "I guess you have nothing to say, I will take you home, finish up your cake babes. Kgosi and Palesa will do the dishes mommy."

Londi: "No I will do..." He interrupted his mother.

Lindo: "Yes mommy, it will give them time to kill each in the, worry not, I will keep an eye on them. Go and play adult games with your husband."

Tebogo: "Lindo!"

Lindo: "What? Well, it's not like we don't know that you two are having sex? Come on, we are all adults here and we know that sex is good for one's health... For married people only.."

We laughed... Lindo is something else...

[03/12, 15:27] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 44

Kgosi Mankoe

We are in the kitchen doing the dishes, quiet, very quiet. Only the dishes making sound when she is washing them. She is very angry, furious and hurt. Her eyes tells me that and you can't miss it. When she is happy her eyes glows, they are alive and

happiness will be vivid in her whole body but right now I feel like a jerk. I know I didn't tell her, I didn't plan not to tell her but things happened.

I know for sure that I was going to tell her, but not now. She had too much on the plate already. She is dealing with so many things and I just wanted to make her happy but I guess it's true that you can't hide things for ever.

We finished up and she was wiping the sink and finishing up here and there.

Me: "Baby cakes." I called her but still she didn't answer. She ignored me like I didn't exist.

I walked up to her and held her hands. She can't ignore me forever.

Palesa: "Kgosi leave me alone." Tears streamed down her cute face.

Me: "I'm sorry, I swear I was going to tell you."

Palesa: "But you didn't, how do you expect us to be in a relationship when you are like this? You keep things away from me. You hide things for me."

We are in a relationship? I didn't know or maybe I'm reading too much into the line.

Me: "You were dealing with many things and I didn't want to add the stress and pain for you."

Palesa: "Guess what? You just did that, so leave me alone."

Me: "Come on Palesa, I'm trying here, it's not like 8 did that on purpose. Same 59 you, you didn't tell me about Naomi, I only found out that day Wisdom came to your house. Had it not been him I wasn't going to find out, you were not going to tell me and still you never asked me how I feel about everything and you never even tried to explain it to me. Yes Kgomotso is pregnant so what? Is not like I impregnated her while we were dating. I don't even know what we are because you always shy away."

Palesa: " Oh wow.. "she yanked my hands off her

and she walked out leaving me alone in the kitchen.

Damm it Kgosi, was all that necessary, the hurt in her faced really showed that I pressed the wrong buttons. Eich, this sis messed up.

I walked outside and found her sitting on stoep just by the door hugging her pets crying.

I croched down and put my hands around her. She tried to fight me off but I over powered her.

Me: "I'm sorry baby cakes. Please forgive me. I know I shouldn't have said all of that." She didn't respond but continued to sob.

Me: " I know that was very insensitive of me. I'm sorry. "

Palesa: " You hurt me Kgosi, you know I didn't plan to have Naomi, but life forced me to have her and using her as your scapegoat to your sleeping around around? Really."

My sleeping around? Was she expecting to find me sealed kante? Yoh Hai, women are very dramatic shame yerr. J ust because I gt a go pregnant now I'm sleeping around. She makes me angry right now but I'm not going to kick her down when she is already down.

Me: "I'm sorry." What more can I say? I'm also hurt by what she said and I'm at lose of words because she thinks so little of me. We were saved by Lindo, he drive in and parked on the driveway.

Lindo: "What have you done now?" He asked when he got out of the car. I shrugged my shoulders, I mean what did I do?

Lindo: "I think I need to teach you one or two things about women big bro. Makoti, please forgive him. He hasn't dated in years, don't mind that gold digging girl that was here, she was just one night stand that went wrong. You, see this bdumb brother of mine really loves you, just that I never had time to

tell you that. He forever talks about you when we are together. He has been through his own flshare of trouble, but I'm happy to see him up today happy too. Please find it in your heart to forgive him."

He knelt down in front of her with his hands held together. Trust Kgosi to be this dramatic shame.

Palesa smiled through her tears.

Lindo:" I guess that means this fool here is forgiven."
"

She nodded.

Lindo:" You owe me big time big bro, oh, let me just say what you can do for me." Oh oh, I don't like the sound of this.

Me: "Okay, let's hear it, as long as it's not dramatic. "

Lindo:" Not at all, you can go and pick up grandma at the airport tomorrow, I have a date and you know

how much she hates to wait and she is in no state to be waiting for you, so 15:45 her flight is landing, don't be late and good night. I love you too."

He was already half way in the house. Trust Kgosi to ruin my day, I had plans tomorrow, to take Palesa and Naomi to Vilakazi street and Maboneng tomorrow, now I will have rearranged because there's no way gogo will allow me to leave when she just arrived. As much as she is old, that woman doesn't want to age at all. She is capable of doing everything and anything for herself. Ever since Mkhulu has passed on, she had been strong for all of us. They were the only grandparents we know.

My dad's family is a broken family, his mother doesn't even want to see us, she says my dad betrayed her, how? I didn't know. So, my great grandparents were the two people we became so close with, even a years after Mkhulu passed on, Grandma has always been our greatest joy in the

family.

She told us to let go of Mkhulu because he was sick and we all saw how sick he was. In his last days with us, he refused to go to the hospital, he was diabetic. He wanted to spend his remaining days with us. We all went to KZN to spend time with him. And he said goodbye to each and everyone of us. I remember how mommy was broken and yet Gogo was at peace.

In his funeral day, Gogo just wanted us to thank God and worship because He has given us a chance to know and feel the love of Mkhulu, she was happy because he saw all his great grandchildren before he passed and he embraced all of us.

It was unusual funeral that one, and yet we are still here and gogo is still continuing to be strong and the comedian of our household. To think that it's

been a while since I called her, I will never hear the end of it tomorrow when I pick her up.

We finally went back into the house, Palesa slept in the guest room and I slept in my room. There was no way we are driving back to Sandton now, it's late....

The following day we were having breakfast, at least it was less tense, the parents had to leave early

They had a meeting at one of their lodge in Mpumalanga.

Mommy: "Palesa baby we will see you when come back tomorrow, and don't let those rascals bully you."

Palesa: "Thank you for welcoming us in your house and I won't allow them to bulky me. Lindo will deal with them."

Lethu: "Yah neh, just like that Palesa arrives and we are replaced."

Lindo: "I got you girl, wena stop being a baby and you are getting late I'm not driving you today. You are on your own."

Lethu: "Wow, Lindo, mommy you hear what Lindo is saying? And I'm already late."

Londi: "Such drama Mara. Lindo drive the child to work wena Hau. I love you babies Mara we have to rush. Come give mommy some sugar."

Kgosi: "Yoh Aowa we are not your husband."

Londi: "And someone will be calling me none stop before sunset hmmm.. I will remember your words boy. Come mam Hau."

We all got up to kiss her, geez I don't know why this tradition of kissing parents is hard to die in our house. Yerr.

Dada: "Palesa, I trust you with my house because all these monkeys might burn it. Please take care of it and Kgosi don't do anything I wouldn't do."

Me: "Geez Dada what can I possibly do?"

Dada: "I don't know either. Baby Nono, I know you will tell me everything that went down in this house when I come back right?"

Naomi: "Yes grandpa, everything little thing."

Dada: "That's my girl." They did their high five and we bid them goodbye as they left.

Lindo: "Wena let's go before I change my mind. Nono are you coming with us?"

Naomi: "Uncle Kosi can I please please go with uncle Lindo pretty please." i looked at Palesa looking for approval from her.

Palesa: "Don't look at me, I'm not getting involved." She stood up and cleared the table.

Me: "Lindo don't go to places I won't go with this child please."

Lindo: "Geez, I'm the best uncle she has ever had. Let's getting going. Lisa girl I will see you later."

Palesa: "Sharp Lindo boy."

They all left and it was just the two of us. Knowing Lindo they will be back here late. I helped Palesa with the dishes and we drove to the apartment to get her clothes to change and we ended up at the mall doing shopping. I had to force her to buy clothes because she was shy to buy things she needs.

We went to have lunch at long last after the whole forced shopping spree, she also bought for Naomi a few things.

Me: "Are you coming to the airport with me later on to pick up my grandmother?"

Palesa: "I would love to, I have never been to the airport nor seen an airplane close."

Me: "You will see it today and hopefully ride in it soon."

Palesa: "That will be a dream come true."

Me: "How is your mother?"

Deep sigh

Palesa: "Mam'Shirley said there hasn't been any changes since a day before yesterday. I'm still going to call her today."

Me: "She will pull through, she is a strong woman."

Palesa: "You seem to have more faith than me. Sometimes I wish I can just switch off the machine and save her from all this pain she is going through, but when I hear how hopeful Naomi is, I try to be hopeful as her."

I held her hand.

Me: "Don't give up, and don't ever think of switching the machines off, God can and will step in. Her life is in God's hands now."

Palesa: "Well, yah I guess so, I'm moving her to a public hospital next month, her medical aid is exhausted."

Me: "I wish I can help you, but I know for sure that God will never leave you nor for sake you."

Palesa: "Thank you, and thank you for..." Her phone

rang, she looked at it for a while before she answered.

Palesa: "Hello."

....

Palesa: "Speaking."

.....

Palesa: "Oh... Okay thank you for letting me know. I will come by tomorrow since I'm in jmGauteng now."

....

Palesa: "thank you, bye." Her eyes were teary.

Me: "Are you okay?"

Palesa: "My dad passed on."

She blurred out and blinked and tears flowed out.

Me: "I'm so sorry."

Palesa: "Wow, I don't even know why I'm crying."

Me: "Don't be silly he was your father and you have every right to cry."

Palesa: "I guess so. I thought maybe we will fix things one day and be happy again but who was I fooling?"

Her hands were shaking a bit, I guess she is taken by this... Yah neh... Life is too short...

[03/12, 15:27] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 45

Mercy M Mofokeng

I watched as my dad went down the whole with his little coffin. I felt numb, the pain I carried deep inside me was too much for me to even say it in words. I can't believe this is happening.

The pain of losing a child is one that I will never wish even on my worst enemy. I felt a part of me

going down that whole too. A part of me left with him. I will never see him again. He is not coming back to me. It dawned to me that my little baby that I felt him kick for months is not coming back to me. This is one of the most deepest pain I don't think I will get over.

Mama: "It's going to be okay baby, cry it out." She was patting my back and I didn't have tears to cry anymore. My heart is too broken for me cry.

Wisdom was seating next to me carrying Khuts o in his arms. He looked very broken, I didn't forgive him but I allowed him to come to the funeral, I don't even think we will ever work out our marriage, this is it. I want out.

I can't continue to toucher myself in this marriage. Wisdom is very selfish, yes he went through the most but that didn't give any right to take it all out on me. Now we lost our baby because of his ignorance.

Nthabeleng: "Let's go sis, we are done." I was totally out for some time. My mind was far away. My dad and Wisdom's father had just finished closing up the grave. We decided to erect a tombstone but not today. I need to choose a beautiful tombstone for my little angel.

My mother helped up and we left, my heart was very broken. I haven't slept since yesterday, never have I ever imagined that one day I will have to bury my own child. This is a painful experience, it's a nightmare....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I haven't slept a winked last night. My mind was racing. I don't even know how I should feel about my father. That man hated me with everything in him. I have never felt his love, I have never had a

father in him and now he is gone. I wish we could have fixed thing before he died, but how can I expect that from a coward like that?

But to be honest, I'm hurt, I'm hurt that he died. I didn't wish and death upon him. As much as we didn't have a good relationship, I loved him.

I woke earlier than everyone else. Well I tried to clean but this house is very huge. They don't have a helper, so everyone is expected to clean their rooms and the exchange in cleaning common areas.

I only cleaned the kitchen to distract myself until Kgosi wakes up. His grandmother is one of a kind I tell you. Very dramatic. Kgosi told her that I'm not feeling well yesterday when we went to pick her up, and she let me off the hook because she was asking lots of questions and I was not in a good mood to chit chat with her.

I finished cleaning the kitchen and I made breakfast for everyone and I set the table and went to take a shower. When I was done I woke Naomi up and helped her to bath, I still have to tell her about papa and I'm dragging it because she was pretty close with him. It's going to be challenging.

Naomi: "Ella, are we leaving today?"

Me: "Yes baby, we have to go home today."

Naomi: "But I thought we are leaving on Sunday."

Me: "I know baby but we really have to go home today."

Naomi: "Okay, you don't look okay. Your eyes are red. We're you crying?"

Me: "No, I have a headache, come on now, let's get you dressed up." I was trying to change the subject and to avoid all her 100 questions. I helped her dressed up with her talking about so many things that I didn't even hear a single word from her.

We went downstairs and found Gogo already helping herself with food. This woman doesn't even look her age.

I greeted her and I served her breakfast, and I also served Naomi. I couldn't stomach anything. I just need to get home. If I could fly, I will fly there right now.

Everyone was awake now, eating with Gogi throwing her punch lines here and there but I wasn't even concentrating. My whole being was no longer here. I want to go home.

Kgosi: "Are you okay?"

Me: "Yah, we have to go before it gets late."

Kgosi: "I'm coming with you."

Gogo: "Hai where are you going? Why are you two

not dating vele?"

Lindi: "Please ask again mogele, I don't understand why they are playing hard to get with one another."

Gogo: "Maybe we should declare national fast day for them. Bona mogele o motle jwang. Curvy like your mommy, vele you are just letting her come and go as she please but you are not dating her? Haibo Kgosi, kante Mara wena how long will you be too sweet nare?"

Kgosi:" Gogo please, I'm not in the mood for your drama today. "

Gogo:" Eh, so you are taking out your frustrations of not being able to shela a girl on me? Haibo, Lindo teach this brother of yours some tricks. I might as well I write a book, or maybe I should just ask Palesa on his behalf nje. "

Lindo:" Gogo, please, please beg makoti on his behalf. Lethu let's go. "

Kgosi:" Gogo please not today, Palesa just lost her father, they have to go back to Polokwane today."

Gogo:" Oh my God, askies Nana, why didn't you say wena? Hau. And what are we still doing here? Let's accompany her. "

Naomi:" Where did papa go Ella? Where did we lost her? " We all turned on Naomi who looked very confused. She was carrying her plate, probably coming to tell us that she finished her food. Now what do I say to her.

What do I tell her? How do I break her little fragile heart? She doesn't deserve to be hurt, I wish I can hide this from her. I wish I can protect her little heart from getting hurt, I have already kept so many secrets trying to protect her. I can't continue to do this to her.

Me: "Come here." I moved back with my chair to pick her up.

Naomi: "Where is papa?" Her little voiced tear me into pieces deep down but I had to be strong for her.

Me: "Papa is no longer coming back, he died."

She turned quickly to look at me hoping that I will say I'm joking, but I wasn't. Her beautiful black eyes changed completely, she became teary and speechless. It was only when she screamed out loud to cry.

Naomi: "Lele ke nyaka mama. Ella I want mama."

Her screaming voice brought tears to my eyes.

Me: "I'm so sorry baby.... I'm sorry..."

Kgosi: "Bring her Gogo please take care of Palesa for now, I will take care of Naomi."

Gogo: "Okay baby, go outside for some fresh air. Lindo bring water. Wena Lethu, take Lindo's car keys and go to work."

Lethu: "But Gogo I can't go to work when..."

Gogo: "Yei, hamba tuu, yerrr."

Lethu: "Okay, I will call you."

Gogo: "Okay baby, I love you."

Lethu: "I love you too."

Lindo: "And please don't break my car because I'm

going to break you."

Lethu: "It's not your car. Bye."

Gogo: "Come, let's go outside. Lindo drink that water since you left forever."

She held my hand and walked outside to the main door leading to the drive way.

There are chairs and a table near the fountain surrounded by flowers that give the place a breath taking view and not only that, but a sense of peace a fresh breeze.

Gogo: "Sit down sisi." I did as asked.

Gogo: "Where is your mother?"

Me: "She is in the hospital, on a life support machine." Tears gushed down again. I still don't understand the emotions I'm feeling, I can't afford to lose both my parents. What pains me right now

is that I have no one to regard as my family, everyone will expect me to carry out duties of a daughter to a man who has never been a father to me. The most painful thing is that I have to bury my father with my mom fighting for her life in the hospital, what will happen if I lose her too? Won't I just go crazy? I'm here because I ran away from reality back at home. I just wanted to get away and get a breeze but seems like I'm fooling myself.

Gogo: "Oh you poor thing, I'm so sorry my darling. All will be well. Allow yourself to grieve, allow yourself to feel this pain, don't be afraid and scared to let the pain sink in because if you deny the feeling of allowing this pain to hurt you, you will harbour it in your heart and it will create anger in you, it will eat you alive and finish you, will turn you into a monster that you are not. Whenever we go through this kind of pains, God wants to bring us to our place of refreshing and settlement, you see God will remove people who distract Him to get your attention and so that He can step in to be all that

those people have never been. Kgosi's mother went through the same pain you are going through, she lost her parents within a period of less than 6 months, and her father was killed by her ex-boyfriend' and they were never arrested and months later her mother lost it when she saw the ex-boyfriend in stores and she got a heart attack and she died. She was gang raped by 12 men, but look at her now?

She allowed herself to feel all the pain, she never acted strong but beside all of that she had a great support system, and we are here to support you too, to pray with you and cry with you but most importantly we are here to raise with you. Khala girl, cry the pain out, scream out if you need to. Sometimes you don't need to act tough, your baby sister still needs you and you can't be there for her if you are still angry, sad and feel all types of emotions.

If you have to be angry with God, it's fine be angry with Him but never run away from Him because He is the only man who will never leave you nor forsake you. When the whole world rejects you, He will never reject you. He is a father to the fatherless

When my husband and I lost our beautiful twins years back we thought our whole life was shuttered down. We watched them grow into beautiful babies. After 4 years of mother then, then one man one decided to kill them. We thought God had forsaken us but 2 years later He brought us Londi's father, my handsome baby boy, he brought nothing but happiness into our lives, he was the best thing that has ever happened to us, and He brought many children that I mothered, I cherished too and they all call me mama now. All Londi's aunts we adopted them and I love them all. What I'm trying to say child is that when God take away people in our lives He will bring us better ones too.

Just don't give up on God because He will never give up on you. Trust in Him even if you don't have any reason to trust him. And learn to pray, prayer is not always closing the doors, kneeling down, learn to talk to God, tell Him how you feel, He is a God that listens and He will definitely answer you. (she hugged me as I cried more, her words really hit home.) I love you and God loves you so much"

[03/12, 15:27] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 46

Kgosi Mankoe

Mama: "Damn it, Kgosi why didn't you tell call me earlier? I'm your mother and that poor child is in my house, under my roof and you decide to keep this? For what?"

Me: "Mommy, I'm sorry, I didn't mean to, everything just got too much and I had to be there Palesa."

Mama: "Fine, we are on our way back, just make sure she doesn't leave until we arrive."

Me: "Erh, we are already on our way to Polokwane."

Mama: "Kgosi, are you crazy? Who are you driving with?"

Me: "Mommy, please calm down. I'm with Gogo."

Mama: "Mara Kgosi? Gogo is not fir enough for long driving in a car especially."

Me: "I know but she insisted Mommy, you know how stubborn your grandmother is, I can't stop her if she wants to do something."

Mama: "Okay fine, let me call Buhle to check up on Lindo and Lethu, we will meet you guys in Polokwane. Give Gogo the phone."

Me: "Gogo you got me in trouble, deep trouble."

Gogo: "Your mother needs to get laid, she is forever grumpy."

Me: "Woah chill, I'm not getting involved."

Gogo: "Malondi relax, we will be fine. I'd not like I

can't walk or talk. I mean your grandfather left me healthy and fit because he never got tired of giving it to me. Didn't you know that sex makes one healthy?

Mama:....

Gogo: "Woah chill girl, relax before you get a heart attack, we are all safe and I couldn't let the child go home all by herself while she was under my care. Tell my son in law to give you something that will make you chill."

Mama...

Gogo: "Hai Hai Londi ungqngicasuli ke Mina ngoba ngizokushaya girl."

Mama:....

Gogo: "Fine, I love you too but tell Tebogo to give you some because you are so grumpy girl and it doesn't suit you, bye bye, my children are bored."

She hunged up and handed me the phone. Driving with Gogo sitting in the front seat is something else

hey. She can't sit at the back because we have to adjust her seat for her back. She talked all the way from Joburg to Polokwane none stop. I thought she will get tired but I was glad that she made Palesa and Naomi laugh a little. That's all that matters to me.

We arrived at her house, the neighbors as usual were trying to find what was going on but they didn't get anything because we also don't know anything.

Gogo: "I will stay behind with Noni, you two can go to the morgue unless you are scared to go there."

Me: "No I'm not, but we have to pass by the hospital first and tell her mother first, I think that's what we should."

Gogo: "You are right, and it seems like there's no food in this house. We need food. And this annoying neighbors will soon be on my neck and I don't have their patience."

Palesa: "Don't worry Gogo, I will call Nthabiseng, she will be with her mother to help you around."

Gogo: "Okay baby, are you okay?" She nodded trying to be strong and hold the tears that were threatening to come out.

Gogo: "Come here you poor thing." She settled right on her chest, that's how best Gogo's hugs are. They will make you cry or say whatever you have been bottling up and to prove that, Palesa just cried.

Palesa: "I hate him so much Gogo, I hate how he dodged many bullets but he couldn't cheat death. He died and with so many unresolved issues with me. He hated me so much because I was raped by his own son. He rejected me but acknowledged another woman's son as his. What kind of a monster does that. I was raped but my father never believed me, he called me all sorts of names. My mother is in the hospital and he never bothered to come and see her. He didn't deserve to die, but I wanted him to pay for his sins, for every little thing, every little beating and suffering he made us go through... "

Gogo: "It's okay baby, it's okay. Gogo is here and don't let anger consume you like that. Vengeance belongs to God, He will surely judge the unjust and give justice to the just. It's okay my love."

Me: "We have to go, time is not on our side."

Gogo: "Hamba sisi, I will be here when you come back."

She kissed her forehead and we left. We went to the hospital first which was another long drive but hey, I can't complain, Palesa needs me now more than ever. I can't be complaining about petty things.

We arrived, and we went to her ward, nothing has changed about her, only the bedding has changed.

We walked in with Mam'Shirley, she was just updating us about her progress which wasn't that much beside the fact that now her lungs can pump air.

Mam'Shirley: "Don't worry she will be fine, your friend is always here praying for her and sharing the word of God with her. The doctor suggested that she keeps on doing whatever she is doing is because she is starting to respond to some medication. It might take time but be strong girl and I suggest you start praying, stop feeling sorry for yourself. Nyelete gave birth few days ago and she said she will come and see you."

Palesa:" Thank you mam'shirley. I guess you haven't heard the other news. "

Mam'shirley:" Which other news? "

She took a deep breath trying to be strong but you can clearly see that this issue of her father passing is toring her apart. As much as she wants to pull herself together she is failing.

Palesa:" My father passed on, and I'm here to tell mama. "

Mam'Shirley: "Aw Modimo wa kgots o, askies sesi."

Palesa: "It's okay. I will come to sign the papers to transfer mama after the funeral."

Me: "There's no need for that(they both looked at me) I mean we will make a plan for her to stay here, this place is doing well and I'm sure we will figure something out."

Palesa: "Kgosi, nooo I can't allow you to do that. This place is expensive."

Me: "I know and I want to help you out, so let's get going because we don't have all day here."

Palesa: "Okay, Mam'Shirley, we will see you."

Mam'Shirley: "Okay baby, tomorrow is my day off I will come by the house alto help around and I will also tell Nyeleti."

Palesa: "Thank you Ma."

I also thanked her and we went to her mother's ward, she literally jumped on her.

Palesa: "Mama, you have to come back to us please. I have no one mama. Papa is gone, he left without paying for his sins. He left without apologizing to me. Mama he never believed me when I told him that I was raped. Why, why is God so cruel? Mama please I need you, Naomi needs you. We need you mama, please fight, fight sweetheart please. "

I just let her be, she needed to release that limb in her chest before it suffocate her. She need to release the anger in her before it destroys her. It's fine if she blames someone but as long as she says it out loud.

Me:" We have to get going to identify your father at the morgue."

Palesa Ella Motaung

We arrived at the morgue and I was shaking in my

dress. I couldn't keep still, my heart was pounding and Kgosi didn't make the matter much easier, he was also scared by just trying to pull a brave face. I have never been here before and having to grow up so quickly, it was supposed to be my mother doing this but where is she now? She is fighting for her life, I won't be surprised if my dad was involved in that explosion. The past few days he was a sworn enemies with mama. He was angry that he stole from him and she was only doing it for us, she didn't want us to be penniless.

The guy helped us in and indeed it was my father who was Ying there lifelessly. He didn't move or say anything, well I can't expect him to do do because he is dead.

We had to sign some documents and go to the police, do so many things all at once.

We finally went home around 17:00, we only

managed to buy few things we will go again tomorrow when we are going to do a death certificate.

When we arrived some of our neighbors were still around, along with Kgosi's parents. Gogo was surrounded by lots of people telling them all kinds of jokes.

Londi: "We cooked."

Me: "Thank you, I'm just gonna go lie down. I'm tired."

Londi: "Okay baby." I walked out but she called me as I was about to go in the bedroom.

Londi: "Be strong girl, the storm isn't over yet. More is still coming and you need to be strong in the Lord."
"

What is she talking about?

Me:" Okay Ma. "I'm seriously tired to be honest. What more can break a broken person? I'm broken

beyond repair, whatever comes, can just come and finish me off. I'm ready.

Londi:" God is faithful, go and rest my love. "

I nodded.

Ruth:" O kae yena, yeee, if you think you will busy my man in this house then you have another thing coming. William is my amn and I have every right to bury.

Me:" Oh God why are you testing me?"

I closed my eyes hoping that this is some kind of a sick joke. What gives her a right to come here and fight for a dead person? What's there to gain? Really Ruth? You are here to fight for your boyfriend? Boyfriend?Not husband?

Hai.. I can't shame.

[03/12, 15:28] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 47

2 days later

Mercy M Mofokeng

Mama: "Are you still okay?" She adjusted the pillows in my back

Me: "Ke sharp mama, thanks. I heard about Palesa's father. He is trending all over the social media."

Mama: "Yah, it's very sad. But moipolai ga llelwe ausi, it is all his fault. You can't associate yourself with Ruth and think you will come right. The reason I never wanted be friends with her. Ruth is evil very evil and manipulative."

Me: "That's the reason why you didn't want me to get married to Wisdom?"

Mama: "I was never against Wisdom, but his mother is something else. No mother who is stable will ever want her child to be associated with that woman."

Me: "Now I know better. How did he even get married to a sweet man like Ntate Mofokeng?"

Mama: "Mark was blinded long time ago, I just pray that one day the dark veil that is upon will be broken. Ruth's mother was evil just like her daughter. An apple doesn't fall far from the tree. She inherited all the evil from her mother. That woman never liked anyone, she never liked anyone. When we were still in collage, Mark was Naledi's boyfriend, they were even engaedto get married, then jiki jiki everything changed now Mark is Ruth's boyfriend. Life got hectic for Naledi and she had to leave school and she got married to an abusive man ever. Whatever Ruth did to that man is very evil. "

Me:" Haibo mama how do you know all those things. "

Mama:" I have been living baby, not everyone you surround yourself with is your real friend. You need to watch who you associate yourself with because the people you associate yourself with is either they make you or break you, there's no Grey areas there."

Me:" Yah neh, maybe I should call Palesa and check up on her. "

Mama:" Palesa was your true friend, but jealous nearly broke that for you, don't ever loose people who really love you for temporary things. It's no lie I never liked Mofokeng family because of how evil Ruth is, because I knew that they will change you, you will slowly become like them."

Me:"I'm not like them, I will never be like them."

Mama: "Then act like it and check up on your friend. She needs you."

Me: "But I also lost my baby and she never checked up on me."

Mama: "But you are the one who started all this drama. If you are not careful you will end up alone in this world. I will be outside if you need me and stop suffocating the child with too much blankets, she is fine."

She walked out leaving me all alone sinking in my own thoughts. It's true that your association is very important, looking at me right now, I'm no different to Ruth. I have become bitter, jealous and all those

things but for what? I lost a good friend because of a man, a man who turned out to be her brother, I'm supposed to be there for her but I was wallowed in my own world thinking that life revolve around me.

Now, the marriage I was bragging about if on an edge of breaking, I'm not even sure if it will survive this time around. I don't even know if I want in anymore. Beside the fact that I blam Wisdom for the death of my child, but he is a rapist. Staying with him will make Palesa believe that I support what he did. Yes, it happened long time ago but she still live with a pain of it, worse part of it all a child was conceived in this whole predicament....

Palesa Ella Motaung

Today is yet another day and I don't even know I pulled through this few days without breaking down. Everything was becoming too much for each and everyday and much was expected from me. My

father's family has arrived and they have been on my neck ever since they got here.

Everyone is expecting me to be strong and answer each and every question that I don't have answers to. My father was murdered, by who? I don't know I don't have answers. We are all waiting for the autopsy report. My aunts are not so kind with words. Their words cut deeper everytime they open their mouths. Ever since they have arrived here they have been insulting my mother, saying all sorts of bad things to her.

They mentioned that she only married my father for money. Which money because when they met things weren't so good financially? Last night I overheard the saying my mother deserves to die, no Zulu woman will take what belongs to their brother. I don't even know how they are my aunts because my father from what I know and I have been told, my father is the only child from my grandparents.

Yes, I have seen them couple of times but our relation is a mystery to me.

Aunt1: "Palesa, where are the policies papers? We need money to claim to bury our brother, we can't just give him an ordinary sent off. Ditiro will go to claim, me and Stella we will go and pick a coffin for him and later on Bo malome and mamogolo from Lebowakgomo will be arriving, please arrange two bedrooms for them."

Me:" Okay" I'm tired of repeating myself, my father went to cash up all his policies, a day yesterday we went there and they told me that he came few weeks ago to cash up all his policies, some of them he was no longer paying, so, there's no need for me to argue with them. If it wasn't for Kgosi's parents who offered to pay for the whole funeral I don't know where will I be. The only money I'm left with is the one my mother stole from my father and I can't afford to waste that money because there's life after the funeral. Naomi still has school, I also need to go back to school to finish what I have started.

My mother will need someone to take care of. Where will I get the money to do all of that? Yes, the more is a million but money runs out fast.

I was just going to buy cheap things for this man, I mean he has never been a father to me, so why should I bother myself? He has never done anything for me, besides always sending me far away where he will never see my face. So, I can't after to sink in debts for him.

My mother's society is paying for the coffin and Kgosi's mother decided to top it up with R15 000 I nearly said no but the ggod person in me just said okay. I wasn't even going to bother myself. The coffin was fine for me.

Me: "Is that all Rakgadi?"

Aunt1: "Yes, and those people of yours who are helping around, I hope you told them that there are

no policies here. They shouldn't expect anything from us."

Me: "Okay." She was referring to Kgosi's family, since the funeral is on Saturday which is a day after tomorrow Lethu and Lindo will be coming tomorrow, I'm still shocked by the support this family has shown me.

I left her doing whatever she was doing, I went to pack my mother's clothes because I don't trust these women.

Later indeed, Rakgadi Stella and Ditrilo left along with Rakgadi Mokgadi, I didn't say anything to them because I had nothing to say at all. If it's money they want, I'm pretty sure that Ruth took all of it. Naomi was at Nthabi's house, Nthabi wanted to take some days off work but refused she has already done so much for me, she will come only in Saturday, her mother has also been around each and every single day she is here after work.

Londi: "Can we come in?" She peaked through the door.

Me: "Yes Ma." I stood up and moved the clothes on the floor and threw them on the bed. She came in with Gogo and I moved from the couch for her to sit down.

Gogo: "How are you baby?"

Me: "Ah what can I say gogo. I will survive."

Londi: "Everything will be well, I spoke to the mortuary guy, they are waiting for the program draft so that they can print them tomorrow and they also said they want someone to clean your father and bring clothes."

Me: "I will talk to his sisters but the way I see things, they are just here for money and little do they know that he is broke, his girlfriend must have went and claimed all the money before he died with him."

Londi: "The girlfriend is that woman who was here yesterday?"

Me: "The very same woman."

Londi: "Something doesn't add up with that woman, her aura is very bad, there's something unsettling with her."

Gogo: "I won't be surprised if she killed your father."

Me: "I won't be surprised either."

Londi: "Those are very strong accusations gogo and Palesa don't listen to her."

Gogo: "We both know that I'm always right Londiwe, that woman was acting all crazy like screws in her head were loose."

Me: "Hmm, I agree Gogo. Ruth is very dangerous."

Londi: "Let me keep quiet. Can we at least start with services today? Maybe it will ease everyone's mood, just to be in the presence of God?"

Gogo: "And Invite Ruth so that I can deliver her from her coldness."

Me: "Please do Goho that woman has made my mom to suffer and not only that she has made me suffer in the hands of my own father, my father

hated me so much because of him."

Londi: "Palesa let go of the anger, and don't let this old lady influence you. Gogo please go and ask your friends to stay behind for a service and maybe they will help you pack chains in the tent. I want to talk to Palesa about something."

Gogo: "Even if you chase me, we both know the truth and the Bible says the truth will set us free, that woman needs to be delivered from her demons before they swallow her." She walked out, Hai Gogo is a character shame.

Londi: "Never mind her. So, your family church is coming to conduct the preceding of the funeral?"

Me: "Which church? The mamfundisi of our church is the very same woman who was here fighting for my father, so I don't even know if the church still exist, the last time I went there was when the very same woman stood with her son when he raped me, she covered for him, and turned my father against me. So, no one will conduct the precidings."

Londi:" You were raped?"Is that the only thing she heard? I no longer want to dwell there, I don't even know if I will ever be able to forgive Wisdom. I don't even wish to see him ever again in my life...the only thing I want is for my mother to get well and we move far away from this place...

[03/12, 15:28] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 48

Palesa Ella Motaung

Seconds, minutes and hours have passed. It's a new heavy, somber dawn. Having to wake up and realising that you have to grow so fast and become a parent, a sister and all that a kid wants that you have never had before is much more stressful because you don't have a clue on what to become to that particular child at that particular moment.

I wish I can blame my mother for putting me through so much, I wish I can blame her for not running away when the time allowed but she decided to stay with this man, and now look at me. I'm a damaged goods, I can't even recognize myself anymore. Looking in the mirror, I see a stranger, I have never met this person on my reflection. Her eyes reflect so much pain that I have never seen. Her eyes hide so many fears, she is fearful of uncertainty, the fear is crippling her mind and her soul.

This person I'm looking at is screaming for help, she is screaming for love, she is screaming for help, not an ordinary but the one that will pull her out of the dark pit she is currently in. As much as she is seen as strong, no one seems to understand her pain. Her pain goes deeper, it's a deeper wound that will take time to heal, but how does she heal when things go in circles?

God, who am I? What happened to me? What have I done? Where to from here? I'm looking in the mirror with so many questions in my mind, my tears have dried out, I no longer have it in me. I guess the only thing that is keeping me going is my beautiful daughter Naomi, she is the only thing that makes sense to me right now. Everything is just blurry, life is full of uncertainty, the future is dark. I don't see any light at the end of the tunnel. They say pray, but what has praying done for me. They say trust God. How do I trust someone who keeps disappointing me? They say give it all to God, but he keeps on bringing it back back to me.

I doubt there's God in heaven. This person doesn't exist. How does he let one person carry this heavy burden without lifting a single one for her? Come on, yes, I have heard them preach this whole week but seriously I don't see any point. I guess these people only acknowledge this God of theirs because life is going well for them.

I finished tying my head wrap, and looked at my reflection once more before I got out of the room.

I went to sit in the dining room as we were all waiting for my dad to arrive so that the service can start. Since he was killed, he can't come inside the yard, so the service will be conducted outside, in the tent set up outside.

The tent was set up nicely, all thanks to Kgosi's family and their money. Had it not been them, it was just going to be a normal service with church and flowers from the morgue. But they went all out for a stranger, someone who let his son to rape me, I'm sure that night that guy who raped me was sent by him and now having to connect the dots, I know for sure that guy was sent by him because he received a call when in the house and they were talking about the keys to the safe.

Damn it, yes the safe at the dealers hip. Damn it,

why didn't I think of it? But how can my dad be so cruel? Now that he is dead, the dots begins to connect. Hence all my dockets were missing, the rape kit is missing, there's no case. Why was he so cruel? And yet we are expected to speak highly and nicely of him, for what?

As my mind was running wild, u head the people singing outside and the relatives requested that we go outside to meet the hears e outside. My "uncles and aunts" let the way and I held Naomi's hand as we walked outside. The whole neighborhood was here. It was packed outside. Plus the cold winter morning breeze wasn't doing justice to any of us. My grandmother couldn't come because apparently she is sick, I don't even think I will remember her if I see her. The last time I saw her I was still young, very young.

"Ha le mpotsa tsepo ea ka,(If you ask me where it is my faith resides,)

ke tla re ke J es o!(I shall proclaim that it is with the Lord J esus Christ.)

ke lapets e ho mo aka,(I long to be beside him,)

ha hae ke ha es o.(for His home is my home. [J ohn 14:2])

Le re, ke boneng ho ena,(You ask what it is I saw in Him?)

ke bone phomolo,(I saw a sactuary, a place of peaceful rest. [Psalm 23:2])

thabo e leng ho Morena,(The joy that is in the Lord J esus Christ)

ha ena phetogo. (is uncomparable and unchanging. [Psalm 100:5])

Ka na ka nyoreloa bohle,(I once yearned/ longed for beauty)

ka tsoa tsoa ke batla,(I searched endlessly for it,)

Ka tsieloa, Ke ntho ts ohle,(became burdened with

everything)

ka feloa ke maatla.(and thus, lost my strength.)

Athe, J eso, O na mpona,(By His Grace, I realised,
J esus had seen me,)

Ha ke lela joalo,(weaping in distress)

a mpitsa a re: tlo, ho nna,(He called me unto himself)

o fole matsoalo. (and said: 'Come to me and I will
give you rest' I will bring healing to your soul.

[Mathew 11:28-29])

J oale, ke kgotse ka mehla,(Now, I am content,)

Mohau wa Modimo.(By the Grace of God)

Ke qadile ho iketla,(I have begun to rest)

tselong ea hodimo.(in my belief of the One above,
the Most High. [Philippians 4:11-13]) "

And again my wild mind was distrusted by the song

they were singing, the words were anchoring in my heart but my mind refused to believe them. I have been disappointed before and how can't I be content in His grace when I've been disappointed so many times?

Kgosi's parents let the way to the coffin with my relatives as they will be officiating the proceedings today. Pastor Mark has disappeared, I didn't even know where to begin to look for him and I won't blame him if he was going to refuse to handle the proceedings today. I mean how do you do that to someone who slept with your wife and had children with her? Yep, I wouldn't do that.. The poll bearers carried the coffin and some of my "cousins" helped us with the flowers. Naomi and I just walked hand in hand after the coffin, you can see how people were pitting us. The looks were too much, but anyways what can we say? It's life.

We sat down on the chairs reserved for family and

the service began. Mr Tema, one of our neighbors was the program director.

Everyone spoke so well of my father, you will swear he was a good man, his employees worshiped him, they spoke very well of him. Now it was my turn to speak, I spoke on behalf of children, Wisdom didn't come and his sister, I didn't see them unless they were hiding somewhere at the back, and it's good that I don't see their faces. Even their evil mother hasn't showed up yet...

Me: "Dumelang Bagolo." (Greetings)

They greeted back.

Me: "Erh... Many have spoken so well of my father, every speaker that stood here, portrait the kind of man he was in their lives. And I guess it's a ritual or a norm for us to speak good of the deceased but I once read the Bible somewhere where it said we must wear the belt of truth, and not only that but somewhere again it said that the truth shall set us

free. "Everyone was looking at me, attentively so, even those who were not giving attention, I'm sure when I said that they all turned their attention to me. When I lifted my eyes again I was met by Gogo's eyes, she smiled at me and nodded.

Me:" My father and I were not close, and to be honest, I don't know the kind of man he was beside the fact that he will be shit out of me if I did something he didn't like. I'm sorry about the language. I was scared of him, as I grew up, he was very strict but I guess he was preparing me to be strong. He was preparing me that the world won't be so kind to me so I need to toughen up. I spent most of my last primary days and high school days at boarding school, but I have seen him love my baby... Sister, I have seen him being a father to her and I knew that he was indeed a capable father. As much as I want to talk about this man, I don't have much words but rest in peace papa, I pray that one day God will give me strength to forgive you, I wished and prayed that God will give you more days that we will mend our broken relationship, but I

guess in all of that The man above always has the final say. I pray that I don't hold this anger and resentment I have for not fighting to stay alive for us, for mama, I pray that it won't rob me of my better days. Rest well Motaung. "

I went to sit down with tears streaming down. I'm so angry with my father, very angry that even in his death I still hate him. Death was too easy for him. I wanted him to suffer, or maybe better yet maybe apologies to me for everything.

Before I knew it Kgosi's mom was taking the pulpit.

Londi: " Ezekiel 18: verse 30 through to 32. I greet you all in the name of my Lord and personal Savior Christ Jesus. I'm not going to be long, I just need few minutes of your time. I'm Prophetess Londiwe Mankoe I fellowship at Hope of Glory Ministries I submit under my husband Pastor Tebogo Mankoe, our Ministry is in Midrand, Amen. Enough about me,

I'm here for my Father in heaven's business. Let's go back to the word of God and it reads as follows.

Ezekiel 18:30-32

“Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, declares the Lord God. Repent and turn from all your transgressions, lest iniquity be your ruin. Cast away from you all the transgressions that you have committed, and make yourselves a new heart and a new spirit! Why will you die, O house of Israel? For I have no pleasure in the death of anyone, declares the Lord God; so turn, and live.”

Londi: "Let's pray for the word. Our kind and loving Father we thank you for your word. Your word is a lamp unto our feet and light to our path. Your word is alive and active. Sharper than any double edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow, it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart. Even this morning in this somber gathering we still trust Your word to heal us, to break us to make us. Gracefully break us O God, for You don't break us to hurt us but you break us

with grace. Speak to us even today because You are God that forever speak. I'm just an empty vessel, I decrease and let you increase, this is not about me but about Your kingdom. Your people are here, ready to hear from You and You alone. In your name I pray Amen. "

Every one chatted Amen.

Londi:" therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, everyone according to his ways declared the Lord. I have a question to you today. Are you standing right with God this morning? You see we live in a world where we don't know our tomorrow, when a person is born we celebrate but their days in the book of heaven are slowly Decreasing as they increase in number on earth. Where we just read God gave a message TO Ezekiel his servant to tell the house of Israel to put their houses in order because the day of judgment is coming. God has given us a grace to look for him while he can still be found. Let me warn

you mtakama, the time of grace is not forever. Everyday Saturday we bury people, not just ordinary people, people of stature, people with big title, men and women of God, some of them postponed their time with God on earth. Some of them thought their money will buy them good health, but today I come to you with plead in my heart, Jesus says I'm the way the truth and the light, no one comes to the father except through me. He is saying I'm knocking at the door of your heart, whoever opens for me I will come and dwell with him forever.

This is not our home, we have a home in heaven with our Father, He is waiting for us in Heaven. If my people who are called by name shall humble themselves and pray, turn away from their wicked ways, and seek my face, I will forgive them their sins and heal their lands, declares the Lord.

We are living in the end of times, this is not time for you to play church with God. It is time for you to

start working on your own salvation, stop measuring your salvation with our people's mistakes. Let's mend our ways with God.

Motaung family, yes you have lost a father, brother, cousin, and all that this man was, I don't have words to comfort you with except through the word of God. We all know that one it might be you or me, but let the heaven rejoice when we depart from this world knowing that the son is coming back to the Father at home. Let's put our houses in order, for we don't know when the sun will set for us. The word of God in the book of 2 Corinthians 5:1 says For we know that if the earthly tent we live in is destroyed, we have a building from God, an eternal house in heaven, not built by human hands.

Wherever you are right now, if you know deep down that your house is still messy, your life is still messy you don't know what is what, God is here for you. Yes on this day in this somber mood as we are

laying our brother to rest, may your soul not be lost. Let it be marked as reminder that one day it will be you, but the question is where will you be going if you deny this God.

If you want to make God your Lord and personal savior stand up wherever you are. Raise your hands and repeat after me. Lord Jesus, I know that I am a sinner, and I ask for Your forgiveness. I believe You died for my sins and rose from the dead. I turn from my sins and invite You to come into my heart and life. I want to trust and follow You as my Lord and Savior. AMEN.

Father we thank you for this moment and time to be in your presence, to speak to us and to save us from our nature of sin. We thank you for your word that came in season in our lives. Father I pray for your children here O Lord, who have acknowledged their sins and accepted You as their Lord and personal Savior. To them this is a new journey, the

beginning of new things. I cover them with the blood of Jesus, I refuse the enemy to come near them. Lord reach them your ways, teach them your will. Help them in this journey.

I also pray for the Motaung Family, father heal them, heal their broken hearts mend them and bring them closer together. Let your Holy spirit rest upon them because your Spirit is our peace, our place of safety, our sanctuary, our hiding place is in you. As we are going out to lay our brother, father, friend and cousin to his final resting place, may His soul find rest in you until Christ Jesus come back to take us back home with you in your bosom.

I thank you and we love you so much amen. "

Everyone who was standing up chanted amen and we left to the grave site.

O couldn't wait to get done with this day because it was getting heavier each and every second. I don't even want to talk about the sermon....

We reached there and She let the service again and she lowered the coffin down. Naomi cried, I didn't. I couldn't bring myself to cry again. I'm tired of crying...

My phone rang, it was in pocket, I took it out and it was the hospital where my mother is, my heart skipped few beats... What could be the problem now??

[03/12, 15:28] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 49

Palesa Ella Motaung

I couldn't wait to get home anymore, my mind was

no longer there. When the pastor was sharing the grace, I wished he could just say amen and we rush.

My mind was wandering I couldn't be still, what happened to mama? They don't normally call unless something is wrong. We finally finished and I carried sleeping Naomi on my back, she was sleepy after crying her lungs out.

Aunt: "Palesa, we have to stay behind and perform ritual on your father's grave so witches don't come and temper with it."

Me: "What ritual? I'm not getting involved Rakgadi, he is your brother, so do as you please, I have to go to the hospital."

Aunt: "Palesa, are you crazy? This is a very important ritual and you have to be there as a daughter."

Me: "And I don't want to be here Rakgadi, this person is gone, he is not coming back. And I

seriously don't care what happens to him because he has never been a father to me. Whether you do the rituals or you don't, I don't give a damn. So, please Rakgadi, don't make me angry, because you don't know what you so damn called brother did to me. And you know what? I'm actually happy that he is dead. "

People we were staring at us but I couldn't care less. This man has caused me nothing but pain and I have to sit here and pretend like I care? I don't care, I don't give a rat about him.

Aunt:" Palesa, keep your voice down people are watching, and you are staying behind. My brother raised, took you to best school and yet you still fail to get a mere job, all you do is to open your legs for men. You are rotten child, you are very rotten. You are very ungrateful. This man you claim to hate now, has become everything to you. He gave you shelter, he fed your ungrateful ass and now you have audacity to stand here and claim you don't care? You are doing this ritual whether you like it or not, or leave Naomi to at least do this for her father. "

Me:" Naomi will not do this nonsense of yours. She is not coming. Talk about a man who took me to best school. Who was supposed to take me there? Isn't he my father? Please get your facts right before you come and call me all sorts of name. It's your brother who is rotten. He went out there and has so many kids and you have a right to stand here and tell me all this shit? You don't, because you don't even know how I used to beg food to eat because of your brother, he used to beat me like hell and where were you? So please don't bore me, the only reason you are here is because you thought there will be money for you guys, there's nothing... "

Londi:" Palesa, no, no baby, don't do this, not here and not bow. Calm down."

Me:" I can't calm down. These people can't just come here and tell me bull shit. They don't know the things their brother put me through and now they want me to perform rituals for him? I'm not doing that, I'm not going to do that. "

Kgosi pulled Naomi from my back as she was crying, everyone stood still and some started taking

videos.

Aunt2:" Ngwano wa tella shame. Ke le bodits e. I told buti gore why a nyala mosadi wa mozulu, bona now ngwana wa gona o dirang, sesi wee, you will do this ritual like it or not. We won't allow witches to play on my brother's grave because wena you feel like you can't do this. " she screamed her lungs out at me. I swear my heart was beating out of my chest. Anger was slowly but surely consuming me. I heard Naomi scream her lungs out as she further walked away from with Kgosi. Why are these people doing this to me?

Why? Where were they when this man they call brother abused me and my mother? Where were they when this man sent me away from home because his precious son raped me? He hit it all away because he never loved me.

Londi: "Palesa, I think you should as they say, for argument sake, don't let anger consume you."

Me: "I can't Ma, I won't do it, I rather go to hell if need to be, but I'm not going sit here and pretend like everything is okay, never."

Nthabi: "Ella please, do it for Naomi, look how she is, she is crying, please babes. I will be here for you."

I took a moment to look at Naomi crying in Kgosi's arms. I swioed the imaginary sweat I felt on my forehead.

Tebogo: "Don't worry child, nothing will happen to you, we are here for you. J ust do as they say for peace sake, me and my wife we are here for you too."

He hugged me and kisses me on my head while Kgosi's mother was brushing my arm gently.

Londi: "Go, we will wait for you right here."

Aunt2: "Mxm, you are very dramatic shame."

I just kept quiet and we went to the grave, Kgosi's parents held hands with Gpgo, Nthabi and her

mother, they were praying. My uncles didn't seem to be please at all, but I couldn't careless.

They chatted their clans names while clapping hands, I was just kneeling down doing nothing. The weather was slowly changing, it was becoming windy and cloudy. I don't even know when they made the African beer, but it was there too. The wind was getting stronger each and every second.

Aunt: "Look now the ancestors are not please. Make it snapy abuti."

He took the calabash that had the beer and lifted it up high, he brought it down to pour the beer on the grave as he was chanting that their brother should bless them and never forget them and he also said I'm very disrespectful and I should be dealt with accordingly, the bear was blown away by air and it didn't pour on the grave as they wanted it to be.

My aunt began swearing at me, and I just looked at her and stood up and left, their mission failed.

I left with Kgosi's parents in the same car and we drove home. Naomi was asleep by the time we arrived home. I didn't even want to sit down and eat, I just wanted to go and see my mother.

Me: "Please look after Naomi for me, I'm going to see mama at the hospital. They called me while we were at the graveside."

Nthabi: "I'm coming with you, mama will look after Naomi. Let's ask Kgosi to accompany us."

Me: "No, my friend, they have already done a lot for me. What if they will want me to pay back everything they did for me?"

Nthabi: "No friend, I don't think they will ever do that, they seem like they are very kind people."

Me: "Still chomie, kindness like this? Never, they will definitely want something in return."

Nthabi : "Well, I will kill them for you if they do."

Me: "You are crazy."

Nthabi: "I know, I saw Wisdom earlier on."

Me: "I'm glad I didn't see him because I was going to kill him."

Nthabi: "Have you considered therapy? And what about Naomi?"

Me: "Eish, I don't know friend I will see as days unfold. Right now I just want mama to get better that's all I'm praying for. The rest I will sort them out later."

Nthabi: "Okay, I'm alway here for you whenever you need me right? And I have been saving up money to help you get a good therapist." Mara what did I do to deserve this kind of love?

Me: "Ncoo friend Mara? I will go to therapy and I'm going to be fine just for you and Naomi."

Nthabi: "And for yourself too. So, let's get go and see mama."

We walke out of the house. I had to tell Kgosi's parents an dlet them know where I am going. I found them in the tent, they were just sitting around with some of my neighbors. They were blending quite well given the fact that they are not from here and the language barrier can be something else. Gogo was also around and by the look of things she was cracking some jokes.

Me: "Dumelang Bagolo."

Gogo: "Ntombazane ka Gog'J ane, u'right baby?"

Me: "I'm good Gogo how are you?"

Gogo: "Besides those crazy aunts of yours hlogolozing my mood ke sharp. Where are they?"

Me: "I don't know, I haven't seen them."

Londi: "You have to be very careful with those people Palesa, right now they may be speaking evil against you, I suggest you start praying very hard my dear."

Me: "I will, and thank you for being here."

Gogo: "You are welcome, at least now I know Limpopo and I will start bragging about it."

We all laughed.

Me: "I have to rush to the hospital, they called earlier on regarding mama."

Londi: "Okay, let me know me call Lindo and Kgosi to accompany you. Lethu will stay behind with Naomi and she will also help clean up. "

Me:" Okay, thank you very much. "

Gogo:" Can we go inside just for two minutes to pray for your mother before you guys leave? "

Londi:" I agree. "

She called Lindo on his phone asked him to come with his siblings into the house. My aunts and uncles are not yet back from the graveyards, whatever they are doing there must be very crucial I guess.

Nthabi's eng also called her mother and sister, who were with Naomi. This family has been my pillar of strength and I appreciate them.

We went inside the house, the whole Mankoe family, and also Nthabiseng's family was there. Kgosi's father led us in prayer and Kgosi's mother took over as some instance, she was very deep in prayer and praying in unknown or foreign language.

She began to shake, I couldn't close my eyes. And her voice was becoming deeper and deeper. Everyone was also zoned into a prayer mood beside me. Yes I have seen people being filled with the holy spirit on TV not this close.

She came to me and held both my hands and began to pray...

Londi: "Your mother will be fine, fear not God is with you, don't be discouraged. Yes, the journey is still long, but God will fight all your battle. He will expose every wicked hand that is responsible for your

mother's explosion. There's no stone that will be left unturned. No evil will continue to hide. Trust God Palesa, don't doubt Him, whatever he promised to do for you, he will do it. Even if it tarries, He will surely do it. He is God all by Himself, Don't limit Him. God says, Don't limit me. Is there anything that is too difficult for him? He is the very same God who was with you when no one was there. The very same God who fought all the unseen battles for you and your baby. He will never leave you nor forsake you. Trust him just a little more. He never disappoints. He is everything and all that you need. The Lord I'd your Shepard you have everything you need. Even though you walk through the valley of shadow of death, fear no evil for he is with you. His rod and staff are your comfort. He will prepare a table for you in the presence of your enemies, he will anoint your head with oil and your cup will run over with blessing.

Continue to trust Him, Trust God Palesa, Trust God, He is everything you need. Trust in Him. Those that

trust him are like mount Zion, they are unshakeable.
Even when the hour is dark, continue to trust Him.
Trust Him... Trust Him...

[03/12, 15:28] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 50

Wisdom Mofokeng

I watch my mother drown her sorrows each and every single day, even if I don't want to care but there's still a voice deep down in me that is always screaming for her. She is my mother and as much as I want to parent like I don't care, watching her drown her pain in alcohol is not good. I have been there before and that has caused me my very own family, it has caused me my child's life. That is why I know that alcohol is never a solution to crisis.

Sometimes you just have to face the music and learn to dance through the storm. This life waits for no man and choices we make on daily basis will reflect in the future.

I now regret everything wrong I have done. I wish to end this pain, this guilt and this regret everyday. I wish I could have done better. I wish I could have been a better man, but look at me now? I'm just my father's son after all. What did my father clever do right by her daughter? Nothing, all he did was to cause Lele endless pain. Now he left her in a pit of shame. I wish I can help her bear some of the challenges she is facing, but she won't even look at me, I'm not even shocked that I piss her off.

I'm her brother, I was supposed to protect her but I took advantage of her, I took advantage of her vulnerability. I pray that one day she will forgive me, I pray that she will let go and live her life to the fullest.

I watch as my mother gulp another glass of whiskey, she has been like this ever since Ntate Motaung has passed. If she is not drinking she is crying herself to sleep. It's like she is losing her sanity slowly. I didn't know that her love to that man was this deep until recently. She is losing touch with reality slowly.

As for me, I don't feel anything, I wish I can but my heart is not feeling anything at all. I went to the funeral early in, hoping maybe something in me will move or get shaken but nothing was shaken or moved. I watched as Naomi screamed when her da.. I mean grandpa's coffin was lowered down. I expected Lele to also cry but she didn't. I knew then that this man has damaged this girl and I also did. I played part in damaging her. I'm responsible for everything.

I told Oratile that our father has passed on, my sister doesn't give a damn and it's cause. Recently

she is acting very wild. She is forever out and about. That little bubbly girl was gone. Her smile has vanished. This woman I'm looking at right now has killed us, she destroyed us with lies. Hence they all stop today. I want to make it right by my wife and I know it might not be enough but I'm a father now, I have a daughter, she doesn't even deserve me to be her father because of what I have done to her aunt.

Me: "Mom I'm going out."

Ruth: "Go, go Wisdom and leave me alone, I know no one cares about me, no one wants me..." She cried.

I know that was alcohol talking and I don't have time for that, I want to forgive her but I can't do that because I can't even forgive myself. I left her drowning herself in the alcohol and drove to Mercy's house.

I found her mother in the kitchen washing the dishes.

Me: "Dumelang Mama." (Greetings Mama)

Mathapelo: "Agee mokgonyana, le kae?" (Hello Son in law, how are you?)

Me: "Re gona, le kae?" (I'm good and you?)

Mathapelo: "Ai, nkabe le kwele." (You could have heard if something is wrong. "

Me:" Is Mercy around? "

Mathapelo:" Yes, she's putting Khusto to sleep. "

Me:" Can I see her? "

Mathapelo:" Let me call her for you, please come this way and sit down. "

Me:" Thank you. " I followed her to the sitting room while she disappeared to the bedrooms, and came back few minutes later with Mercy behind her.

Mercy:" HI."

Me: "Hey, how are you?"

Mercy: "I'm good."

Mathapelo: "Erh, I will make you guys tea."

Me: "Thank you Ma."

Her mother left and she sat down on the couch opposite mine.

Me: "How is Khutso?"

Mercy: "She is fine."

Silence

She wasn't even interested in talking to me. I saw that my presence was annoying her to the core.

Me: "Mercy, I will like to apologize for everything I have done in the past and for not being honest with you. Yes, I take full responsibility of killing our son Khumo. I'm very sorry, I'm terribly sorry for everything. And I have made a decision to hand myself to the police. For raping Palesa and killing our child. I'm going to hand myself today. "

Mercy: "What? Are you crazy? Are you mad? How

can you even think like that? You are a father
Wisdom, Khuts o needs you, Khuts o needs her
father. What will I tell her when she grow up? That
her father decided to hand himself to the police
because she raped her sister? Think Wisdom. If
Palesa wanted you to get arrested, she could have
done that long time ago. "She breathed fire.

Me:" I know you think this is a worse decision ever,
but I feel bad already. I don't deserve to be a father.
You and Khuts o don't deserve me. Mercy what if
what I did to Palesa happens to Khuts o? I will never
be able live with myself. I'm a monster who doesn't
deserve to live among people. I'm doing this for my
daughter, I want to pay for what I did, I want to be
punished for what I did. One day when something
like this happens to my daughter I don't want to law
to fail her because her father also did that to
someone else and never paid for it. No, I love you, I
love you so much and I love my daughter too, hence
I'm doing this. "

I went to croch before her, and took her hands into

mine. Her tears were the evidence of the pain I have caused her. Her eyes were heavy, she hasn't been sleeping because of me.

Me: "I love you Mercy, and I want to be a better man for you and my baby, please mamaKhutso try to understand."

Mercy: "No Wisdom, I can't understand, I don't want to understand, you can't go to jail. We need you. Me and Khutso needs you. I will talk to Palesa on your behalf please."

Her tears streamed down like someone opened a tap on her.

Me: "I know you can and will talk to her for me, but she is hurting baby, maybe if I hand myself they will give me a lighter sentence and I will definitely come back for you and Khutso. Okay?" She nodded through her tears. I pulled her up and hugged her as she cried, I couldn't help it, I also cried....

Palesa Ella Motaung

We arrived at the hospital, Gogo suggested that Kgosi's mother come with us and she will stay behind with Lethu, and Lindo. The drive was very intense. The gospel song that was playing didn't ease the anxiety I was feeling. At least Kgosi's father drove as fast as he could. No one spoke or said anything on the road. No one even dared to say a single word. We were all lost in our own sanctuary of thoughts.

We all rushed into the reception without waiting for one another. I could literally hear my heart beating out of my chest with each and every step I took. I was slowly becoming numb to walking and my destination seem to be very far.

Nthabi held my hand and she brought me back to reality. It was then when I realized that we were at the reception.

Londi: "Hello my darling. We are here to see Mrs N. A Motaung."

Lady: "Okay, just a moment for me please."

She got busy on her PC for few seconds and she turned to look at us again. I couldn't even read her mind nor her emotions. Her face was just blank.

Lady: "You have to go to Dr Sterns's office first. 4th floor, room D8, take the elevator and on fourth flooth take right, you will see it."

Londi: "Thank you very much. Have a nice day." She smiled and we went to the elevator and we waited for it. I couldn't keep still. Finally it came and we all went in.

Tebogo: "It is well." He said, we all turn to look at him, expecting him to say more but instead, he kept quiet.

We knocked and Dr Sterns was sitting down on his table busy on his files.

Tebogo: "Good day Dr Sterns."

Dr: "Good say sir, and everyone."

Me: "Dr we are because of my mother, I got a call earlier on, is she okay? Is she still alive?"

Dr: "Ms Motaung, calm down, please take a sit."

I sat down and so did Londi and Kgosi stood behind me and massaged my shoulders, they were very tense and my heart was beating very fast my nerves were sky rocket.

Me: "Where is she?"

Dr: "Your mother is fine relax."

I took a very deep breath to recollect myself, why did they have to scare me like this.

Me: "Can we see her?"

Dr: "Let me finish first, her heart rate is back to normal and she can breath on her own but still in a comma. Which is very impressive since she was in a life support machine. I must say the prayer you prayed, continue to pray them. She still not out if danger, but we are hoping for the best results. "

Londi:" Shenis out of danger, we serve a very faithful God that never disappoints us. We have faith in Him, can we see her now? "

Dr:" Yes but I must say, the letter from the medical aid team came, notify us that her medical aid fund is running out."

Here we go again, another worry.

Londi:" Don't worry about medical aid, mama will be out of here soon, we just have to pray and trust God. "She tighten her grip around my hand in assurance.

I nodded and we followed the doctor out.

At least there's something positive to look out for now.... Maybe papa' s passing was something good that I needed in my life....

[03/12, 15:28] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 51

Palesa Ella Motaung

Few days later

We were gathered around the table listening to Advocate Malete go through my father's will. I didn't expect much from him, he died a broke man and his assets were frozen because he owed bank a lot of money, meaning the bank is repossessing all his cars, luckily the house was not in his name and they didn't sign with my mom, they only got married under customary law, so they couldn't claim some of the assets that were in my mother's name.

You should've seen the looks on my aunts, they probably came to take everything and everything that belongs to him. They thought maybe he is rich, but nah, moguy was very broke and owing the bank.

I'm just glad that this whole will reading is done and dusted, there's nothing my dad has left for us that is tangible. Naomi and I just have to survive with the money my mom stole from my dad.

O don't know what they expected from someone they haven't seen in ages. My father never spoke about his family, truly speaking I don't know what went on between them but the blood fuse between them was very bad as far as I knew.

Aunt: "Hai, sesi, Mokgadi will stay behind when we leave. Her children will come to stay with you guys when we leave."

Me: "But we were fine before you guys came. We don't need anyone."

Aunt: "I wasn't asking you, I was telling you beside your mother might not even make it."

Me: "My mother is doing well, so I don't know what

you are talking about."

Aunt: "Whatever.." she walked out leaving me all puzzled. Mxm, this is going to be gell long years to come. I'm going to sell this house....

They say life is what you make out it and trust me I have been trying to make most of it but I'm too broken to even start sometimes. Some days I wish I could sleep and never wake up, I wish life can continue without me. Yes, my mother is recovering pretty well but there are other things that are weighing me down.

Having to grow up so fast and be responsible at a very young age is pretty heavy. All I wanted to be was a child, enjoy my childhood and be me. But I never had that luxury of being like the other kids.

Same as today, I thought I could face my demons and get over them. I agreed to meet up with

Wisdom. Over conversation is long overdue. The Monkoes' left a day before yesterday. They have their lives to go back to, and Kgosì had to leave because he had to catch up on work too.

I ordered ribs and buffalo wings as I waited impatiently for Wisdom. I don't know why I'm so nervous. My drink came as I waited and waited and waited for him to come. Why am I even here?

I felt a heavy presence in front of me, I even regret why I came here in the first place. I was literally shaking and I had mixed emotions. Every word he said to me years back echoed in my head. How he looked, the disgust he had on that very day I can still remember it vividly. His cologne that day. How he told me to leave him all alone after he got what he want.

Wisdom: "Hey."

Me: "Hi."

Wisdom: "Can I sit?"

I couldn't utter a word, so I nodded. I felt a huge lump on my throat.

The waiter came and he took his order. He just asked for water.

Wisdom: "How are you?"

Me: "I'm fine." I was boiling deep down and I was trying so very hard not to lose it but my anger was up my throat, this guy makes me boil to the bones.

Wisdom: "Please I'm sorry. I'm sorry for everything and I'm ready to take full responsibility for what I did to you back then."

Me: "Why now? Why now after all those years

Wisdom?" A tear dropped down my cheek.

Wisdom: "I guess I have grown up and I realized that I'm wrong."

Me: "Or maybe it's because I'm your sister, that's why you feel sorry. I mean if the news that we are related didn't come out, you were not even going to

come here and apologize." He kept quiet

Me: "I thought as much, please leave me alone
Wisdom. You are not sorry, and please don't bother
me until you are really sorry."

I stood up to leave and he stopped. He pulled my
hand. I nearly slapped him but I controlled myself
and besides that we were in a public space, I didn't
want people's attention but they were already
starring.

Wisdom: "Please, just give me two minutes of your
time."

I sat down.

Me: "You have 1 minute."

Wisdom: "I know what I did to you is unforgivable, I
will never ask you to forgive me, but i want to take
actions for what I did to you. I'm a father now and I
want to be a better man for my daughter and for the
society. If what I did to you was to happen to my

daughter, I will feel very terrible. I'm going to hand myself to the police station now. I hope one day you will forgive me. I also hope that one day Naomi will forgive me. " He got up and took out money in his pocket and placed it on the table and walked away leaving me in a battle of the mind. I even forgot that I ordered food to begin with.

How can life be so cruel? How do you deal with this kind of life and be okay? How do you try act and be strong?

I asked the waiter to give me a doggy bag, the place was becoming too small for me, I couldn't even breath properly...

Wisdom Mofokeng

Having to talk to Palesa was the most hardest thing I ever had to do, but I'm glad I did. I went pass by

Mercy's house, to bid her goodbye, she didn't take it lightly. She was very broken but I had to do what I had to do for us, and for our baby.

I drive home afterwards, and I found my mother crying on the floor. I want to leave my car and take a taxi to the police station.

Ruth: "I killed him, I killed the man I love because he was in love with another woman."

Me: "Ma, you are drunk, go to sleep."

Ruth: "No, I killed him and now he is here, look he is here, and he is asking me why I killed him. Look he is coming, stop him... Ahhhhh"

What the hell? Is she crazy?

Me: "Ma, there's no one here, it's only us. Sit down and you need to stop drinking."

Ruth: "Tell him to stop following me, tell him I'm

sorry I was just angry." She hid behind me.

She seemed taken and bit traumatized by everything.

Me: "Mama there's Noone here what are you talking about?"

Ruth: "I'm sorry Motaung, I didn't mean to kill please please don't kill me, I'm sorry."

Me: "Mama, snap out of it. Who are you talking to?"

Ruth: "I killed him, I killed him Wisdom, now he is here, he is seeking for revenge I killed William."

What? Maybe it's beer talking, why would she kill someone she loved? No, no....

Kgosi Mankoe

My mother called me back home saying she needs

to talk to me urgently. This woman doesn't have peace yazi. I got home around lunch time. She was setting a table. It will be her and Gogo and of course me know that I'm here.

Me: "Mommy bear, are you good." I kissed her on her cheek.

Mama: "Good boy, how is work?"

Me: "I have to be at court after 13:00, so, I'm quiet hectic. Where is Gogo?"

Mama: "She is napping, she will eat when she wakes up, have a sit."

I sat down next to her as she served me.

Me: "You sounded very urgent over the phone. What's wrong?"

Mama: "I'm worried about Palesa. I have been having unsettling dreams and visions about her lately and I didn't want to scare her off."

Me: "What's wrong?"

Mama: "I don't know what's wrong but this feeling is very unsettling, something is about to happen, I can feel it. It's weighing me down. Things are not as rosey as they seem to be and she needs to start praying and very hard."

Me: "You are scaring me. How do I tell her that?"

Mama: "I don't know boy, but whatever is coming is beyond me either. She needs to move from her comfort zone. If she continues to feel sorry for herself she will continue to get hurt."

Some battles you can't fight them with your emotions but they require you to be fully invested in the battle for you to win. Remember we are not fighting a physical battle and anything that is not physical doesn't require physical strength but spiritual strength. We are fighting principalities, and the dominions of principalities are very stubborn.

Palesa needs to prepare herself, those people they call themselves aunts they are not what she thinks

they are. That day of the funeral at the grave sides? Those people will kill for their brother's money. Anger is consuming their hearts. Evil is clouding their minds, son I'm not sure if you are ready for this battle but do me a favor, warn Palesa for me and for her sake. The truth will come out soon and I pray that she will be ready to stand for it."

Me: "Mommy you are scaring me."

Mama: "Remember that God always reveal to restore, but just pray my boy, because it's about to rain digs and cats. It will be the survival of the fittest. Everyone is coming for what is theirs. And the devil doesn't care whether you are down or not, he will crush you even when you are down...."

[03/12, 15:28] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 52

Kgosi Mankoe

I have been having restless days and nights ever since mama told me about Palesa, I don't even approach this matter with. She has been grieving and dealing with so many things all at once I can't even think straight.

I'm trying to praying for her each and everyday, I know it's not enough but hopefully God will spare her all the pain that she is suffering.

I finished my morning devotions and took a shower. And went downstairs for another family devotion, not to be missed because you will never hear the end of it.

Breakfast was already set, my mommy bear is the best. I greeted everyone and had our devotion and ate.

Mama: "Today we are having visitors for dinner and I don't expect any of you to be late. Starting with you Lindo."

Lindo: "As long as we are having a fine lady coming then I'm game, I will be here for lunch."

Dada: "I pray that God will bless you with a crazy wife, so she can keep you on your toe everyday."

Lindo: "Ah Dada? I need a lady like mommy bear here, I love my ladies thick and beautiful."

Dada: "You have to leave before you pray repentance prayer until you believe it yourself."

Lindo: "Haha, I'm out of here, baby sis, let's get going."

Lethu: "Dada, I also need my own car on my next birthday before Lindo drives me crazy."

Mama: "You know the rules of getting a car girl. Go to work."

Lethu: "Arg, okay bye. Love you guys."

Them: " We love you too baby."

They walked out leaving me zoned out. I'm really worried about Palesa and it's getting to me very now. I can't even pretend anymore. I'm beginning to slack in everything I do.

Mama: " Are you okay baby?"

Me: "Yah, I'm fine. Let me go prepare for work."

Dada: "You know you can talk to us about anything right?"

Me: "Yes, I know..."

Mama: "Is it about Palesa?"

I nodded. She brushed the back of my hand.

Mama: "It's going to be okay, I have been praying for her too. She will be fine hopefully."

Dada: "Your mother is right, some of the things we just have to allow people to go through them for them to grow. It's not everything where we can help people we love, sometime we need to let them go through the fire on their own so that they can be refined the only way God knows it's best. All we have

to do is to pray for their well being in the midst of their battles. "

Me:" I know, thank you for being there and praying for us. "

Mama:" You are welcome and on the other hand, I received a message from Kgomots o's mother last night. "

I dropped my head, that's another hanging issue of my life I regret ever meeting that girl, I wish I never did what I did with her, now she will be stuck in my life.

Me:" What did they say? "

Mama:" She said Kgomots o was admitted yesterday, but I told her that I will come and see her today."

Me: "Okay, please handle it for me, I have lot of work to do and to running around with that girls is the last thing on my mind."

Dada: "A girl who might be carrying your seed?"

Have you ever considered going to a doctor's appointment with her?"

Me: "No, why would I do that?"

Dada: "I don't know either, go and prepare for work before you get late."

Me: "Mommy bear..."

Mama: "I'm not getting involved Kgosi, go to work, I will go and see Kgomots o and update you."

Me: "Fine, thanks."

I went to get dressed with my heavy heart and went to work, I called Palesa on my way to work.

Me: "How are you?"

Palesa: "I'm fine, wena?"

Me: "I'm good, anything planned for the day?"

Palesa: "Not really, just going to the hospital. Are you okay? You don't sound okay at all."

Me: "I'm just exhausted cakes and I miss you."

Palesa: "You must rest, stop straining yourself with too much work and I miss you too."

Me: "Yes ma'am I have heard you and I promise I will rest this coming weekend."

Palesa: "Okay drive safely the, I have to prepare to go to the hospital."

Me: "Okay cakes, take care of yourself."

Palesa: "I will and take care of yourself too."

Me: "I will, i love you."

Palesa: "I know you do. Bye."

I hanged up, I'm waiting for the day she is finally saying those 3 letter words. My heart will dance. God know how much I love her. If only she can stop being stubborn and go see a therapist.

Palesa Ella Motaung

The news of Wisdom's arrest has made it to the headlines today. I don't even know how I should feel about it but hey, after accompanying Naomi to the bus stop I received a call from Nthabi telling me to check it out. I couldn't believe it.

I thought maybe when Kgosi called me, he saw it, but talking to him made me realize that he doesn't know anything. I thought this guy was bluffing about it, but nah he was adamant about it. I heard that his mother wasn't doing well lately. Rumor has it that he has been hallucinating if not telling the truth..

I guess life is finally dealing with her the best way it knows how...

Rakgadi Mokgadi

Me: "Aowa, it's not like Palesa is stupid, if we don't act fast this child will know everything. We need to make sure that we remove her mom and very fast because ei want to wn this house. William left me with his 3 children, 3 of them and I'm not about to go back to my mother's house while their father left this huge house. Never. "

Ditiro:" Relax, Hau, don't you think I know all of that? Akere you went ahead and opened your legs for your cousin because of jealous. Who does that? I suggest that you take a chill pill and relax because seriously we can't afford to make any mistakes."

Me: "Then let's hurry up because my kids need to move in this new house."

Stella: "We all know that everything comes with great sacrifice. At least we tried to keep William away from Palesa, now if we act out of accordance, trust me everything will back fire. You heard what Dabulamanzi said, if we need to own everything, it takes patience. So we will slowly kill her mother and make sure that we take over the businesses before she finds out that we faked the will.

Me: "Fine, but I'm running out of patience, this girl is annoying me so bad. And the fact that she killed my husband is something else. I want to revenge take every little thing that matters to her. My kids no longer have a father because of her. I thought making her father hate her will at least bring William back to me, so now ke bosesi, I won't spare any rod for her.

She will get everything and more, I want to start with her mother and finish off that fancy friend's of hers. When I'm done with her, she will know not to mess up with me. "

Stella:" Mokgadi calm down Hau. It's not like Palesa is the one who is responsible for everything. Everything changed only when Buti brought her mother here. Remember how much he was happy when his wife was pregnant? So, taking out the anger on Palesa will be waging war that you won't win, let's make her mother suffer, she is just a child caught up in a love triangle. "

Ditiro:" Well, it's not our fault that her mother refused to leave when she was given a chance to. So, now is pay back time. "

We looked at each other and laughed.

I have been loving for this ever since William left me pregnant for a Zulu woman. I won't forget that fateful day, I have been nothing but faithful to him but he decided to go J oburg only to bring a Zulu woman for me, and when Nomzamo got pregnant with Pales a, William was very happy unlike when I was pregnant with my child. I tried everything I can to get him back, he can't leave me with 3 kids and walk away just like that, he angered me and I made a promise by my mother's grace that I will surely make them pay one day. Unfortunately he died, but that doesn't stop my revenge plan. I'm coming for everything that Zulu woman and her daughter took away from me.

The hate he had for Palesa was just the beginning, more is still coming. Palesa hasn't experienced my wrath. She made my kids to suffer even in their father's absence. I thought maybe he will remember me but he only came back to sleep with me and leave me pregnant over and over again. He forgot the promises he used to make to me. Yes, he is my cousin, but in Pedi culture, you can get married by your uncle's son, or your aunt or whatever, as long as the family grows.

His parents never liked Palesa's mom, and that fuel everything, they stood by me all the way, now I am here. To make them pay. Mother and daughter will fight just like my kids fought with their father....

Palesa you are not ready for me girl....

Me: "Let's get going Dabulamanzi is waiting for us."

[03/12, 15:28] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 53

Palesa Ella Motaung

Dasy turned into days and days turned into weeks and weeks turned into months. I thought my aunt could have given up and left but no, they were still very much here available and constantly nagging me. I have learned to get out of their claws and to keep them out of mine. Some days it get hectic and on other days it's just horrible.

Things took a u-turn when Rakgadi Mokgadi's moved in. I didn't expect it. They are spoilt brats, that don't want to do anything, but eat and sleep. Naomi has been complaining about them too. They took over her room and now she is sharing with me. I tried to raise it with them but hey, they are not

hearing any of it. They told me how much of the house belongs to their brother.

Rakgadi Stella and Ditiro even bought new cars, with which money, that still baffles me. As for Mokgadi yena, her dress code changed recently, and her kids too. Now her kids attend the same school as Naomi, the last bona Letago is in the same class with Naomi, and Naomi has been telling me that she is not that bright as her mother always praise her.

I have normalized locking my room these days, for my sake. At least we still have money to sustain us for another two years if I get a job. I had to go and deregister at school so that they can refund me the money I paid, and they paid it back about two weeks ago and I transferred all of it in my fixed account. Thank God, Kgosi offered to meet me halfway with the hospital bills. He is paying half of the money, well I told him that I will pay him back as soon as I get a job.

I got back from accompanying Naomi from school, Mokgadi left earlier on with her kids, she was driving them with Stella's car.

When I got home I cleaned the house, and bathed. I'm going to the hospital and later I'm meeting with Nthabi for lunch in town. She just want mgozi. My mother has been doing pretty well. The doctor said if she continue like this she might be discharged sooner. She has been up for about 3 weeks now, I haven't told my aunt anything about her progress.

Something in me, just doesn't allow me to tell them yet. I have beeb dreaming my father a lot lately. In my dreams he looks very sad, like he wants to tell me but he can't say anything when he open his mouth he bleeds and the other dreams scares me so bad, I dream sleeping with a snake, I have wet dreams. It will start of as I guy with a familiar face but I can't tell where I know him from and then as he

is busy sexing me so good he will turn into a snake. They scare me so bad, very bad. I tired to pray but, I can't, I can't even utter a single word to Gidm sometimes I just feel heavy burdened, especially when I'm around my aunts. They are times when they just piss me off without saying a single word and I try so hard not to get on their wrong side for the sake of Naomi, already she is traumatized bytl this whole new people living in our space and taking the spotlight from her.

I finished and took a taxi to the hospital, upon my arrival I met the the Doctor going out of my mom's ward.

Dr: "Ms. Motaung. Pleasure seeing you here today."

Me: "HI Doctor, how is she?"

Dr: "OH, well my patient is doing very well today, she is recovering."

Me: "Thank you Dr, can I see her?"

Dr: "Of course you can, I will see you around."

Me: "Thank you."

I got in and I found her watching TV, well her speech hasn't recovered, she can't talk properly, she utters words slowly and breaking them, but I'm hoping for a miracle one day. The doctor didn't confirm if it will be permanent or not but she is positive that she will be okay one day.

Me: "Hey mama. You look so much better today." She nodded. Her skin is very dark, because of the fire, her face has black spots but I'm sure surgery won't fix. I just want her to get out of this place. I miss having her at home.

She nodded. I kissed her forehead. If there's one thing that made me to appreciate my mother is this accident. I have realized that I need her more in my life. Maybe before it was a norm for me to see her, wake up with her in the house but never appreciated her, but today? I appreciate her more today than I

did before. I just pray that the police can get done with the investigation and arrest the culprit.

Mrs Mofokeng has been trending for weeks until we realized that she isn't well upstairs. Apparently her relatives came to take to a psychiatric hospital, I'm sure even Wisodm's arrest affected her. I have never really sat down and absorbed the fact that he is arrested. His trial was postponed, it will be resuming next month. He refused bail apparently.

I spoke with mama until I left to meet with Nathibiswng. Her job keeps her on her toe but she promised that this coming festive season we are heading to Durban just the two of us.

Me: "You look beautiful."

Nthabi: "Thank you girl, I already ordered food for you, I hope you don't mind."

Me: "As long as you are paying, I don't mind."

Nthabi: "You are so stingy my friend."

Me: "I'm not, I just don't have money to waste. Beside I want to go back to school next year."

Nthabi: "Hmm, I like that. I will help you apply."

Me: "Geez, I'm not clueless. I just want to apply far away from this, maybe Cape Town."

She eyed me

Nthabi: "Why so far? And what about Naomi?"

Me: "I want all of us to move. There's nothing good about this place. Maybe a new place will be great start from everything that has happened."

Nthabi: "I understand, is it still bad at home?"

Me: "You have no idea, my aunts just have a way of getting into my skin. I hate them so much."

Nthabi: "I'm sorry, you know you and Nono are always welcome at home right?"

Me: "I know, maybe we will come sleep over on Friday. Maybe the nightmares will stop too."

Nthabi: "Maybe you should see someone about

those. You can't continue to dream about your dad so bad. Maybe he is trying to tell you something, maybe you should go see a medium."

Me: "What? I don't believe in those. I mean I don't know."

Nthabi: "I'm just trying to help, maybe they will assist you in telling you what your father wants to say."

Me: "Why would he want to communicate with me while he hated my gut so bad? That guy never loved me."

Nthabi: "Well, yah right, maybe we are just being paranoid. Maybe his sins are catching up with him even in his grave."

Me: "Then he should leave me in peace."

Our food came and we ate over light conversations, she told me about her promotion at work, it's been a year and she is scoring herself promotions. I'm very happy for her.

I went home to wait for Naomi, she will be very furious if she doesn't find me at home. I found my aunts home drinking wine and chilling with snacks. I greeted them and went pass my room when Mokgadi decided to call me back.

Mokgadi: "Is this the time of coming back home? This is my house and my house my rules. You don't do as you please. This up and down of yours is coming to an end today. Am I clear?" I just looked at her, I mean what was the point of stopping me again?

Mokgadi: "I'm talking to you bitch. I said am I clear?"

Me: "Yes. "

Mokgadi: "Good, run along now, make sure you cook my kids will be here any moment. "

Me: "I'm not cooking for your brats..." slept me across my face I think I saw stars

Mokgadi: "Should I repeat myself?"

Me: "No, ma'am" Her aura is so intoxicating, very commanding and sometimes I have to say, it's very hard for me to say no to her. She will ask me to do a silly thing and I will refuse after one slap, I will do it without hesitating. The other day she forced me to wash their underwears. Some had menstruation blood but funny enough I washed them without a single complain.

I went to my room to wear comfortable clothes and went to cook.

They were still watching some reality show on the TV while talking about me obviously.

Mokgadi: "She needs to move out because she is seriously getting on my last nerves."

Stella: "You need to learn how to relax Mokgadi, calm down. This is not how things are done."

Mokgadi: "Easy for you to stay because you don't live here full time."

Ditiro: "I don't think this is the right place and time to be talking about this. Palesa darling."

Me: "Ma?" I went to them

Ditiro: "I'm not your mother, please go and fetch the kids at the bus stop." I nodded and left. My head was little bit lighter.

My phone rang.

Me: "Hello."

Londi: "Palesa, are you okay?"

Me: "Yah, I'm just feeling dizzy. But I'm okay."

Londi: "Listen to me, and listen very carefully."

I was becoming little bit disorientated. I could hear her but I wasn't sure if i was able to answer her or not.

Londi: "Palesa, are you still there? Hello?" I was feeling extremely hot and itchy.....

Londiwe Mankoe

I tried to talk to her but seems like she wasn't hearing what I was saying. Oh God what do I do now? What the hell is this now.

I tried to think but my mind was all over as if someone is controlling my thoughts.

Me: "Think Londiwe, think...okay let me call Kgosi." I dialed his number and it took me to voice mail. Oh my God this is bad, this is very bad.

Me: "Okay, okay, calm down. Relax, breath. Father please save that poor child. I know it's not my place to interfere but please spare that child the pain, if not for her please do it for me. I ask of you, please. Please I beg you, You have never failed me before and I know you won't start now. Kgosi where are

you? "

I walked around the house trying to think, going to Polokwane is not a good idea. Things might escalate quickly, I need to think....

I called my husband.

Me:" Sugar, where are you?"

Tebogo:" Are you okay? What's wrong Snuggle bear?"

Me:" They got her, it's bad."

Tebogo: "Calm down I'm on my way. Have you prayed?"

Me: "Yes, it was revealed to me through prayer."

Tebogo: "Okay, let me connect Bluetooth so we can pray."

God don't allow them to succeed....

[03/12, 15:29] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 54

WHEN EVIL POSSES THE HEART OF MAN

Ditiro Motaung

Me: "I told you to leave everything for me. Palesa is very weak, and your power is too much for her. Just a little bit will drive her nuts. No need to panic sis, the house and the cars are all yours."

Mokgadi: "What do you mean? Have you finally gotten rid of her?"

Me: "No sweetheart, people like her you can use her as your puppet. I mean you wouldn't want her blood on your hands. Dabulamansi warn you against that."

Mokgadi: "Ag man, that kid annoys the shit in me. The fact that her father loved her more than my kids it makes me want to kill her with my bear hands."

Stella: "Relax tiger, relax, she is right where you want her. Make it worth a while."

Mokgadi: "Fine, when are you two leaving my house?"

Ditiro: "Oh so now now you are kicking us out? Wow you really have balls hey. Fine we will leave but don't forget that Sunday midnight we meet for sacrifice."

Mokgadi: "I need peace and I won't about that and think it's high time we sacrifice this little brat called Naomi, she is of no use to me and she is spoiled, too much spoiled for my liking."

Stella: "Can you please learn to relax in this life? Not everything is about you and not everything will be done the way you want to. We all have things to do and deal. It's not us who told you to go around sleeping around with men and claiming that my brother is their father. Get off your high horses

because we know almost everything. You are not going to mess with me. This was my plan and if you really think you come here and act all mighty and high, I will break you girl. Watch it. Let's go Ditiro.

We walked out leaving her sitting all by hers. Mokgadi has bad temper and one of this days it might land her in big trouble. She is getting too big for her shoes.

Stella: "We need to sort her out before I loose it."

Me: "Calm down, we can't afford to fight now, not after all the trouble we went through. Remember we have a big price to win now, if we loose her, we loose the will, remember she has everything in her name now."

Stella: "I don't care, I don't even give a damn about that. What I won't allow is that girl coming here to disrespect me, never, that won't happen, never!"

Ditiro: "Let's go get some fresh air before you loose

it."

Kgosi Mankoe

I got home as soon as I got mommy's messages. I had meetings left right and Centre. I got home and ground her laying on her tummy in the sitting room praying, she was groaning and Dada was sitting down balancing his back on the wall also praying. Gogo was seated in the couch also praying. What the hell is going on here?

Me: "Dada, what's going on? Is everyone okay?"

Dada: "J ust praying, your mother will explain everything when she is done."

Me: "Who are we praying for? What are we praying for?" My heart was beating out of my chest.

Dada: "Kgosi, just pray, the spirit of God will guide you."

Me: "Dada, I can't just pray, for what? What's going in here. Gogo?"

Gogo: "Kgosi, listen to your father son, I also don't know what we are praying for but all I know is that it's bad, very bad. She has been at it for the past 3 hours now."

Me: "But she is crying Gogo, what went wrong? Is Lethu and Lindo fine?"

Gogo: "Baby just do as your father say, come on now."

I sat next to Gogo and prayed the Lord's prayer, I think about 20 times if not more because I didn't know what we are supposed to pray for. Mommy finally calmed down and she sat down near the couch, her lips were trembling as if she was saying something but nothing was coming out of her mouth. Whatever it is, it's big, way too big.

Mama: "Kgosi, be strong in the Lord and in the

power of His might. Put on the whole armour of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places."

Me:" Mommy what's going on? "

Mama:" Come sit next to mommy. "I went to sit next to her and she took my hands into hers.

Mama:" Remember, I once asked you if you love Palesa and you said yes?" I nodded.

Mama:" And I further told you to pray for her, and I pleaded with you to pray, I pleaded with you to pray for her very hard. The time is now when you have to reinforce your prayer life. Things are about to get tough and real. Love might be tested, faith be tested too but start strong and pray harder. "

Me:" Mommy you are scaring me. "

Mama:" Don't be scared, I want you to take leap of

faith. As little as a mustard seed, that's all you need and unfortunately some battles are not mine to fight but yours. When we love someone, we fight for them, and fighting for them means getting in the mud and and pull them through. Some battles are not easy but I know that you will conquer."

Me:" Mom you are loosing me, what's going on with Palesa, is she in danger? "

Mama:" I have to rest baby. We will talk later. "She kissed my hands and got up leaving me all stunned...

Mokgadi Mmola

Palesa came in, her face was red, she couldn't stop scratching herself. Nothing was coming out yet, but I know for sure that this is only the beginning of what her and her mother put me through. I want them to suffer like I did with my kids.

Me: "Yei wena, stop scratching yourself, what's wrong with you?"

Palesa: "I'm sorry Rakgadi, I don't know what I ate."

Me: "Maybe you should start minding your own business from now on. You should finish cooking because there's not food in this house, my kids want to eat. And you little beat goo and wash the dishes."

Naomi: "But I have a lot of homework to..." I slapped her hard across her face and she whaled.

Me: "Don't ever talk back at me I'm not your friend, and I'm not asking you. I don't even give a damn about your home, go and wash the dishes."

Palesa: "I will do them Rakgadi, Noni go and finish up your homework."

Me: "Yei, I said she must do the dishes and you cook. Are you deaf? She must go and do as I say or I will strike the two of you right now. And keep quiet you are making noise."

She looked at me scared for her life, this is exactly what I want. I don't want these brats getting used to me. I can't deal with them. I walked to my bedroom to finish removing Nomzamo's clothes in the closet, she needs to know that I'm the boss, I'm taking what belongs to me. She took my man, but I'm here for the inheritance. Stella and Ditiro, don't know what's coming, they will never see a single cent from the William's will. Tomorrow I'm meeting with my lawyer behind their back and I have to meet with Dabulamanzi tonight for him to give me something that will blind him. That reminds me, let me call him.

Dabulamanzi : "What a pleasant surprise my daughter, what can I do for you?"

Me: "Mother of darkness, I'm very upset, very upset."

Dabulamanzi : "I can feel that my daughter, what's wrong, talk to me."

Me: "That child I was telling you about is getting on

my last nerve. I want us to remove her, or her mother even. I don't want them in the picture."

Dabulamanzi: "Child, child, we spoke about this, this matter is beyond us and we need to thread carefully on that because if we don't your children will become the victim of your evilness. So, come to see me exactly at 03:00 and we will see what to do about that."

Me: "Hail Queen mother of darkness."

I smiled to myself....

Narrated

Naomi was eavesdropping on Mokgadi, she couldn't understand what she was talking about but she was adamant that something wasn't right. She doesn't even like the lady to start with. She makes her nervous.

Her face was still bit swollen from the slap she received from her aunt. She went to her bedroom, Palesa was washing the dishes.

Naomi: "Sesi Ella, can I please use your phone?"
She continues to scratch herself as the itchinness was getting worse.

Palesa: "It's in the bedroom."

Naomi: "What's wrong?"

Palesa: "It might have been something I ate, I don't know."

Naomi: "Okay."

Naomi took the phone and and went though the phone searching for Kgosi's number, she dialed the number and it rang a couple of times before he answered.

Kgosi: "Baby cakes, are you okay?"

Naomi: "Uncles Kgosi it's me, it's Naomi."

Kgosi: "Hey Nino, are you good baby?"

Naome cried on the phone and that was troubling Kgosi, he didn't know what was wrong with Naomi.

Kgosi: "Talk to me please baby,"

Naomi: "She slapped me, My face is swollen."

Kgosi: "Who slapped you?" Kgosi was running out of patience as he didn't know how to help the crying Naomi.

Naomi: "Rakgadi Mokgadi slapped me and forced me to wash the dishes."

Kgosi: "What? Where is Palesa? What did she say?"

Naomi: "She didn't say anything, she has been scratching herself since she picked us up from the bus stop."

Kgosi couldn't stop beating himself up, he didn't know what to say or think anymore....

[03/12, 15:29] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 55

Kgosi Mankoe

Mama: "You can't pack and leave. Where are you going?" She kept following me around the house as I took my stuff, I know there's nothing much I can do to help Palesa but I can't sit and do nothing. I couldn't sleep last night after Naomi's call. I know that there's something wrong, something is not adding up and staying here will do more harm than good.

Palesa needs me, I need to be there for her. Ntjabi also called and told me that her mother wants to see her but she has been acting since yesterday. If these people really hate her that much then fine, I will take her with me.

Me: "Mommy, please I really have to go, Palesa needs me, she needs me, something is definitely not adding up."

Mama: "I know that but just packing and living won't be doing any justice. Those people are evil Kgosi, I don't want to loose you."

Me: "And I also don't want to loose the woman I love, mama please let me go and see Palesa. I will be fine when I know that she is okay."

Mama: "Then I'm coming with you."

Me: "No, you told me that some battles I have to fight them on my own. And this is me doing exactly that. You will sit here and wait for me to come back."

Mama: "Kgosi please, this can be very dangerous."

Me: "My love for that girl is also dangerous mommy, please understand that. Take care of yourself and I will see you when I come back." I kissed her forehead and pulled my bag out.

Mama: "Kgosi, Kgosi..." Her was slowly breaking as

she called me and I was walking further and further away from her.

I don't know what I am doing but, I'm not just going to sit here and do nothing, while the woman I love so dearly is out there suffering. If my love for her is good enough I'm pretty sure it will save her. I wasn't even thinking straight while driving, "Victory belongs to Jesus" was on repeat as I drove down to Polokwane, I don't even know how I was able to drive because I kept zoning out a lot thinking about Naomi's call and how she cried yesterday. I couldn't keep her voice out of my head.

I arrived earlier than I thought I will, I parked right in front of her gate. There's no turning back, is either I come out of this place alive or dead but Palesa will definitely come out alive, and I'm not turning back. If I have to die for her, then so be it.

I knocked twice at the door and waited, the more I

waited the more I was getting impatient. My tummy kept on turning and tossing with each and every second I stood there. The amount of heaviness I felt was too deep to fathom. Have you ever costed a place and the air, and the energy around it, it's just too heavy, that's exactly what was happening. I couldn't even put my finger on what could be wrong.

I knocked again, and I heard foot steps coming to the door slowly and I was getting intoxicated with the odour there, it was as if something foreign was going on. What could it be? I don't know either.

Mokgadi: "Hello there, how can I help you."

Me: "HI, I'm looking for Palesa."

Mokgadi: "And who are you to come here and look for my niece?"

Me: "I'm her friend." So funny how she is acting as if she doesn't remember me but I can see right through her that she is only acting.

Mokgadi: "Palesa is busy at the moment, care to come back but later?"

Me: "Unfortunately no, this is very urgent."

Mokgadi: "If you don't mind waiting there then. She is busy like I said."

She closed the door and I sat down on the stoep outside. I'm not going anywhere until I see Palesa or Naomi, I will sleep here if I have to. She kept checking if I left or not via the window, and I didn't give in either, I'm not going anywhere. I'm staying right here.

Few hours later a woman got in, she was wearing a long black dress and the heat wasn't doing any justice to her but she did seem like she minds. She a very long black hair that she tied very nicely but there was something offish about her.

The scar under her left arm was rather too scaring

to look at, but she didn't seem to mind it at all, her black lipstick to was awful.

Her: "Hello." Her voice was hasky, and it echoed in my ears.

Me: "Hi." She knocked at the door Blindly ignoring me. The door opened and Palesa's aunt welcomed her in, and quickly closed the door before I can even rileach it, what the hell is going on here?

I went around the house trying to see if there's no way I can enter the house. I saw that the bathroom window is the only one without bucklers but it's very tiny, but this is a risk I'm willing to take, I'm going in though the door.

Mama: "Remember to always put on the full armor of God, we don't fight against flesh or bloor but against principalities and rulers of the kingdom of darkness." Her voice echoed in my head. I quickly

took out my phone and went through Ephesians 6 from verse 10, i meditated in it for some time before I gathered enough strength to try to go through the window.

Londiwe Cele-Mankoe

Me:" I pray for him in the mighty name of J esus Christ, cover Him with your blood O Lord J esus, shield him under your wings Father God. I build the hedge of fire to surround Him, this battle is not His but its Yours O God. My son will not die by the sword of the evil nor will Palesa dies by the sword of the wicked. I render the sword of the evil one powerless. There's nothing that you cannot do O God, if not for them do it for me God, I trust you. Your ways are way higher than ours. You are a man who always go to war and come back victorious. Every evil hidden in that house, expose it, every evil trying to prevail, expose it.

Every secreta agenda of the evil one trying to bring harm to my children expose it. Let Your thunder strike the evil, break loose the mantle of the evil one. Let your angels encamp them in this war....."

I couldn't keep quiet because I knew that Kgosi and Palesa are in great danger. What will happen is not certain because they are right in the evil one's territory. When you want to fight evil, you can't fight it in its territory.

But right now, I don't what will happen, I just pray and have faith that whatever is happening won't bring more harm than damage. I pray that they both make it alive.

One thing for sure is that Palesa has a lot to deal with, especially now. I have been battling coming to terms with her mother's death, yes God told me that she is going to die, her time is up, and I can't even utter a word to Palesa because it will break her. Just when she thinks her mother has survived she

will have to deal with losing her forever.

Some of the things are just way beyond me, I tried to plead with God but when the will of God have to manifest, there's nothing I can do but to just live with it. God wants Palesa all for Himself, He wants to use her, but how? I don't know, one thing I know is that she will have to let go of all the anger, bitterness and emotions. Which is hard given that she is still wallowing in her pain and the fact that her father died without her knowing how much her father loved her, it's very painful, but one thing I know is that, the wicked will suffer.

When things are like this, I wish I didn't have a calling like mine, because it's very painful having to always being the bearer of bad news. But I believe God will make a way. The only thing left is for her mother to tell Naomi the truth and that will be it.....

Kgosi Mankoe

I got in through the window but with a lot of struggle of course, the bathroom door was closed and it seemed like they were burning something in the house because of the smoke. The foreign language that was being spoken, it sounded very intense, what the heck is going on in here!

I slowly opened the door and looked side way to check if there's no one seeing me. There was more smoke coming from the bedroom. I walked there and the door was slightly opened I peaked through, and Palesa was lying on the floor, the woman I saw earlier on was cutting her hands along with Palesa hands and mixing her blood with hers..

What is she doing? Is she initiating her into something perhaps? She cheated again in foreign language and Palesa's aunt too was also doing the same. She took Mokgadi's hand and cut it, she put the hand where she cut Palesa, she began to shake

a bit, she seemed very unconscious.

What the heck is going on?

[03/12, 15:29] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 56

Palesa Ella Motaung

I was feeling drowsy, something was suffocating me. As much as I tried to breath and be aware of my surroundings and what was being done to me, I couldn't, my eyelids were very heavy and exhausted. Chantings were being made around me, My wrist were painful. I tried to get up but I think I was tired up from how I was seated and where I was seated.

Me: "Ahhh, No.... No" My speech was slowly failing me too. I want to be free. My soul was screaming

for me to fight but my physical being was too exhausted for that.

Voice: "Please don't close your eyes, stay with me, you will be okay." I could hear the voice also pleading with me, but very far, it felt like the person was running out of breath too.

Voice2: "Let's just kill him, he already saw too much."

Voice3: "Killing him is not an option, he is very protected and we might just cause ourselves more danger than it is now."

Voice2: "So what do we do?"

Voice3: "I don't know yet, but we are not letting him go, is either we find a way to completely shut him up that way that won't lead it back to us or we keep them forever but I can't keep them with me, you will have to keep them."

Voice2: "I can't keep them, this will be the first place they will look for them, so that's not safe. Let's find a way to completely shut him up. One thing for sure is we have Lele's soul captured, she is now part of

us."

Voice3: "Don't be too quickly to celebrate, we still have to perform the ritual under the water in 3 days time to make her completely ours and if the ritual is not a success we are as good as dead. So pray to your gods that everything runs smoothly because we have one chance at this and one chance only. "

Voice2:" Trust me I know nothing will happen, she is weak and she has no one on her side, if we can just be extra careful we will be done with her. Now what do we do with the boy? "

Voice3:" I'm taking him with me today, and see if I can't mixed something that will confuse her and leave this girl alone because she will forever be our problem. "

Voice2:" Okay, let's get going then. "

I heard shuffles around and the door closing, I tried to move but my body was very painful and weak. I

tried to turn and lay down on my tummy, which was a struggle, I couldn't do anything. I laid there trying to figure out in my dizziness how to get up but I couldn't, my mind was just all over and I couldn't even figure out where I could be....

Kgomots o(Kgosi's baby mama)

Tilly: "Chomie trust me it will work, do you need this guy or not?"

Me: "I do friend, but not like this, Kgosi has made it clear he doesn't want anything to with me, expect for the baby."

Tilly: "Okay, fine. Do you love this guy?"

Me: "Of course I do, with all my heart and it hurts me that I can't be with him."

Tilly: "Then you have to trust me on this one, let's go meet this lady my aunt told me about. My aunt said she is very powerful, she is our only ticket out of ththus and when we are done, Kgosi will be all

yours."

Me: "I don't know friend, I seriously I don't know."

Tilly: "Do you trust me? Have I ever disappointed you or led you astray?"

Me: "No."

Tilly: "So, trust me even on this one. You are so miserable without Kgosi, please friend, if not for me, do it for your unborn baby."

Me: "Okay fine, where is this place we have to go to?"

Tilly: "All I know is that it is in Limpopo, so we will leave in tonight so that we make it to the house in the morning and quickly come back before people realize that we are gone."

Me: "Okay fine."

Tilly: "You'll thank me later, pack your overnight bag for so long, let me call my aunt so at least we book a B & B nearby the place."

Me: "Okay friend, I will see you later."

She blew kisses at me and walked out.

I sat down and held my tummy, I can't believe I'm doing this, but I'm doing it for me and my baby, I'm doing it for my family. If this is the only way to bring the man I love back to me, then so be it, I'm doing it.

I want my baby to have both her/his parents that's all, so we can live happily ever after, maybe if Kgosi will love me, his parents will also love me and accept me as their daughter in law. But I haven't received any bad vibe from them, maybe that's a good sign.

A message came through my phone.

"We are leaving around 17:00, I got the place and the lady confirmed our appointment. Lots of love. Tilly ."

Wow, so this is really happening?

Mercy M Mofokeng

It's been very hard lately without Wisdom, as much as he has done do many things wrong under the influence of his mother, but going to jail wasn't part of my plan. Knowing he will be spending 7 years in jail for rape that happened over 10 years ago.

Knowing that my child will have to grow up with her father being in jail pains me, I haven't even brought myself to talk to Palesa about it because honestly speaking it is killing me. I can't even go and visit M, I didn't even know how to look at him.

Today I'm at his house, the neighbors called me saying that they haven't seen Mrs Mofokeng lately and they are very worried about her. As much as she hasn't been well but she is always outside talking rubbish as she always does.

My mom is babysitting my baby, and I really needed to go out and breath. I didn't know that having a baby will be this hectic. I can't even breath without her crying. I'm taking short showers and bath to accommodate her schedules, and that baby can cry for days. Khumo cries until you cry yourself. We thought maybe is because she is hungry but after taking her to see a pediatrician I realized that she is just being a baby.

The Doctor said she will be fine..

I have been knocking without an answer at the door, I even went around the house knocking with no one answering, I was beginning to get worried. Where could she be.

Mamokoena: "Sisi, are you looking for Mamfundisi?"
That's the lady who stay opposite the Mofokeng's

house and yes they still call her Mamfundisi, I don't know why, they are mocking her or not, I don't really care, I can't believe that I'm even married into this psychotic family.

Me:" Yes, I have been knocking but she is not answering."

Mamokoena: "We have been looking for her too, Boy came the other day to do the garden as usual but no one was home. Maybe she went to visit the relatives." Boy does the whole neighborhood garden on different days and weeks.

Where could Ruth go to Mara?

Me: "Okay, Ma, thank you, I will call her."

Mamokoena: "Okay darli."

I tried to call her but phone was off. Where could she be?

I guess it's useless looking for someone who doesn't want to be found. I drove back home to my

daughter and mother. She was soundly asleep when I arrived, which gave me a moment to rest too.

Kgosi Mankoe

I have dragged by this evil woman, I closed my eyes after she hit me hard with something at the back of my head, it hurts but I needed to keep my cool, and become conscious for Palesa. She needs me more, and more conscious for her sake. I had to pretend that I'm unconscious too. So, they picked me up to this other place, I kept peaking through to see where I am, unfortunately I don't know all the parts of Mokopane but some places I passed I recognize.

I was in pain but I needed my sanity for Palesa and Naomi's sake. I know for sure I am protected, my mothers prayers are keeping and I know for sure that God is on my side. I kept residing the Ephesians 6:10-18 in my heart.

Finally the car stopped and some people came to carry me inside the car that was very smoky. They laid me down on the floor.

Lady: "Is he still unconscious?"

Voice1: "Yes your majesty."

Lady: "Good, I think I might have a solution by the end of tomorrow. Make sure that the door is locked, if he dare run away make sure you disappear from the surface of the earth.

Voice1: "Yes your majesty. "

The door closed and the key turned after the door closed. Damn, how am I going to get out of here?

God please give me strength, I can't lose her, I just can't lose her, if not for me God please do it for Naomi, she is just a child, she doesn't deserve all of

this. Protect Palesa, Naomi needs her please God. I know I don't pray as often as I should but all I'm asking for today is for you protect Palesa, Naomi and their mother. Please Father...please...

[03/12, 15:29] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 57

Palesa Ella Motaung

I woke up feeling very weak and strained. I checked my surroundings and everything was snow white. I tried to get up from the bed but still I couldn't my body couldn't allow me to get up. On my far right seated a lady with a long black hair, very beautiful but I couldn't see her face, she was facing the wall. Where am I? Am I dead. I pulled the sheets, and she turned to face me. She was very beautiful.

Her: "You are up? i thought you will never wake up. How are you feeling?"

Me: "Who are you. Where am I?"

Her: "Urh, you are in your bedroom sleeping peacefully under my watch of course."

Me: "Am I dead?"

Her: "Dead? Never, but well, you nearly died because you never listened to me, even when I whispered to you and asked you to pray, you never listened and I don't want God to punish me, hence I brought you here so we can talk."

Me: "Who are you?"

Her: "Oh, I'm your guardian angel, Deborah."

Me: "So does this mean I'm dead?"

Deborah: "What? No, I said you are sleeping in your room."

Me: "What am I doing here?"

Deborah: "To sort out your life and your stubbornness."

Me: "I'm not stubborn."

Deborah: "If you say so. So what will make you to pray and trust God? Do you even believe in God?"

Me: "I dont know if I do anymore."

Deborah: "Why? I mean he has n't done anything to you?"

Me: "He has, so many things, I got raped by my brother, my father hated me, My mother is in hospital and the list is endless"

Deborah: "Hmmm, so you think all of that is was because of God?"

Me: "Who else could it be?"

Deborah: "I don't know, I was just asking but do me a favour, when you wake up please read the book of Job Chapter 1, the whole of chapter, maybe when we meet again, you will have change of hearts, just chapter one only before we continue to other chapters. Don't worry, I will give you a free Bible, I know you burnt yours out of anger. " She walked around the room like I didn't even exist.

Deborah:" One other thing, be careful of people around you. Had it not been of people praying for you, you wouldn't be here today. You want to highlights of what happened to you? "

I just looked at her and said nothing, she pointed at the wall in front of me and everything my aunt has done to me, leading to a point where I slept and on the other hand it showed Kgosi's mother and father praying. Every time the woman in black cut my wrist trying to mix her blood with mine, she will get burnt/ electrified and leave it and try to cut somewhere else and still the same thing happened.

Deborah: "Still think God doesn't care?"

I kept quiet.

Deborah: "I will see you tomorrow, don't forget to read your Bible, it's on your dressing table, Job chapter 1."

I woke and looked around only to realize that I was dreaming. I got up, my body was very weak and I was very hungry. My eyes landed on the Bible on

the dressing table. What the hell? I mean how did it happen? I was only dreaming right?

Kgomots o(Kgosi's baby mama)

We woke up in the wee hours of the morning, I swear if this wasn't for my baby's sake I wouldn't be here but look what I am doing now because of love. Tilly was driving us to meet the lady her aunt recommended.

I pray that everything works out perfectly and doesn't backfire because if this doesn't work out, I'm doomed for life. I know that Kgosi's parents don't like me, they are just tolerating me. So, if this works out I will force him to marry me, that's the only way out of poverty and the only way my baby and I will have a better future. I securing the bag baby.

We arrived and we parked the car and walked into the bush.

Me: "Are sure we are not lost?"

Tilly: "No we are not, come on we have to hurry up before the sunrise."

Me: "It's very dark, I can't see properly and I'm heavily pregnant for crying out loud. Can't we use the car to get there."

Tilly: "Do you really think I enjoy this? Come on, we are doing this for you and your baby, let's go and stop being a cry baby."

We walked a couple of minutes and we finally saw two houses and a hart by the gate. A lady welcomes us at the gate and she asked us to take off our shoes. We did as instructed and we walked to the two roomed house and waited outside as she went inside. She came out few minutes later and asked us to greet The great one, I didn't understand but it seemed like my friend had everything figured out. She took out a 200 note and placed it on the floor

and we walked in.

The room was smoky, and smelling very bad. It was also dark, the smoke was very bad, it forced you to close your eyes the minute you enter. She directed us where to sit and we did just that and we waited in silence.

My heart was beating out of my chest. A woman in a long black dress and a scarf covering her face only her eyes were showing appeared mysteriously in front of us. We jumped out in fear.

Dabulamanzi: "I believe you are here to see me."

I nodded and so did Tilly, I won't lie, I didn't expect all of this.

Dabulamanzi: "Speak out children. I'm here to help you."

Us: "Yes yes ma'am."

She laughed out loud. And suddenly we heard a snake hiss. I thi k I peed on myself right there. What have we gotten ourselves into?

Dabulamanzi: "I believe you want the baby daddy to marry you." Her eyes were looking straight into mine, they were those of a snake. I swear I was shivering.

I nodded a couple of times holding my breath, I couldn't even look at Tilly, what kind of evilness did she get us into?

Dabulamanzi:" Very well daughter fear bit you have come to the right place." She chuckled a bit.

Dabulamanzi: "I guess you and I have a common enemy, what do you have for the great one to fulfill your request?"

Tilly quickly went through a purs e and took out a stash of money and placed it on the floor. Her laughter filled the room again, followed by the hiss of the snake.

Dabulamanzi:" The Great One has plenty of that, what are you sacrificing to The Great One? Think

carefully, because I'm the only one who will make your mother in law to love you and worship the ground that you walk on, and all the family members will adore you but hate one person who is standing in your way of happiness. The boy will marry you without thinking twice. "

Me:" Am, I'm sacrificing my grandmother." I said without thinking twice, words just came in my mouth without a force.

I love my grandmother so much that I would never want anything to happen to her but what I just said there? It wasn't me.

Dabulamanzi:" Very well then. Your wish is granted daughter."She laughed again.

Dabulamanzi:" Close your eyes that I may pray for you." we closed our eyes and she spoke in foreign language for sometime. I opened my one eye and I saw a huge snake surrounding us, I held my breath and closed my eyes quickly trembling with fear. I opened them again and the snake was no longer

there. She said amen and we opened our eyes, mine were already opened. I just wanted to get out of the room, I was suffocating.

Dabulamanzi: "Follow my maid servant, she will take you to your man, and congratulations are in order." Her eyes dug deeper into my mine and I saw the snake I saw when I opened my eyes right in her eyes. This is some kind of a dream that I have to wake up from.

The lady came and took us out to the other house opposite the two roomed house we were at. We walked in and the interior on the house was breath taking. From the outside you will swear it I just an RDP house, but inside its a small heaven. We sat down on the couches she directed us to. Tilly and I has never said anything to each other, she also looked scared. Fear was written all over her face. I still want to ask her about the money. Where did she get such an amount of money?

But I dared said nothing, I couldn't, words were failing me. We waiting in anticipation because I didn't even know who we were waiting for. The lady came back followed by Kgosi, he looked bit disorientated.

Me: "Kgosi?" I jumped on him.

Kgosi: "Khomotso, what are you doing here? Are you okay? Is the baby okay?"

Me: "Yes we are both fine, are you okay?"

Kgosi: "I'm fine, where are we?"

Me: "Let's get out of here." I didn't know how to answer that one, I don't even know where we are.

He kissed my forehead and we walked out hand in hand.

We got the gate and something urged me to look back, and I saw the snake again behind us, as if it was accompanying us, I nearly had an heart attack if I didn't have one already.

Kgosi: "Babe, are you okay? What's wrong?" I tried to speak but words failed me. I looked back and I saw The Great One, standing at the corner of the house, she had a snake tale as feet, and she wasn't wearing her scarf around her 1186800 anymore, she hissed and smiled at me.

If today I don't die, then I guess I'm very strong. Kgosi tightened up his grip around my hand as we walked away....

[03/12, 15:29] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 58

Kgosi Mankoe

My head was burning, no scratch that, it was heavy and I couldn't think properly. I felt like I'm loosing my mind. One minute I see Kgomots o, the next

moment I see this other lady that looks very familiar but I can't put my finger where I know her from. I would remember her one second but fail to remember her name. It was all messed up.

Khomotso VS friend drive us to Pretoria, I don't even remember where my car is, I will call the tracking company to look for it. I just don't remember where I drove to.

Some puzzles just don't make sense. She dropped me at my house and she left. I rang the Entercom because I didn't have the remote. I spoke to my father and he opened the gate. We walked in hand in hand. Something is just not right, but then what can I say, she is my baby mama and I guess I love her and owe her that much.

We knocked at the door and my mother opened. Her eyes were blood red, she looked drained and the eye bags showed that she hasn't got some sleep for days now. I wonder why.

Me: "Mommy." I tried to hug her but she stopped me.

Mama: "Don't touch me Kgosi, come in." She was trying to be cold but her voice was betraying her, something is wrong and I don't even know what I did. She let us in and Dada was watching some gospel music Channel but his mind wasn't there, he was focused on us.

Me:" Hey Dada. "

Dada:" Kgosi, o kae?"

Me: "Ke grand Pops."

Dada: "I see, hi." He said to Kgomots o.

Kgomots o: "Greetings papa, how are you."

Dada: "I'm good and yourself?"

Kgomots o: "I'm good."

Mama: "Kgomots o what have you done?"

Kgomots o: "Ma?"

Mama: "May God forgive you from the wrath that is

coming." she walked out leaving all of us confused but my dad didn't look any confused

Me: "Dada what's going on with her?"

Dada: "I don't know, ask your girlfriend."

He also left me all puzzled up and followed my mother.

Me: "Okay, babe, let's go and take shower and I will feed you guys."

Kgomots o: "I don't have my clothes here remember?"

Me: "Oh okay, let me go take a shower and i will accompany you to where you stay and take some few clothes so you can come here."

Kgomots o: "Ncoo ain't you just sweet."

Me: "I try." She kissed me, it was so different but I tried to enjoy it. I kept on seeing the other lady whom I forgot her name in my mind...

Lethu: "And then? What's going on here?"

Me: "Baby sis? I walked to her to hug her but she

stopped me, what's wrong with everyone?

Lethu: "Don't you dare come closer to me, what the hell is she doing here? "

Me: "She is my woman? What's wrong with you? "

Lethu: "Your woman? Since when? Are you crazy?"

Mama: "Lethu go to your room and leave your brother alone." She walked passed us, changed into a dress carrying her purse. She didn't even bother to hide her eye bags with make up. Dada followed her carrying their bibles.

Lethu: "Can I come with you?"

Dada: "You will find us in the car, where is Lindo?"

Lethu: "He is at aunt Buhles."

Dada: "Hurry up."

He walked out following his wife.

Lethu: "This madness must come to an end before it even begins brother." She walked upstairs....

Londiwe Mankoe

I was very angry in my spirit, very furious that I felt if I stayed home I will do something drastic. I was not angry at Kgosi but at the person who thought she can get to me by using my own child. I know for sure that she wants me personally and it's a pity that all Men and Women of God suffer. The devil will do anything and everyt to get to us and they know that the easiest target will be our children. I feel sorry for Khomots'o because this might just be the begging of sorrows for her.

You don't make a deal with the devil and think he will stick to the deal. The devil will come for everything and anything that belongs to you and she has already began with her, I pray she doesn't wipe out all her family and even the child she is carrying.

Our children suffer because we refuse to be

touched by the evil one and if they don't pray for themselves, there's nothing we can do. Our prayers can only do a certain portion, and the rest is up to them.

We got to church, we didn't have any service, I just came here to pray and pray that Palesa doesn't become more stubborn than she is already.

I threw myself on the alter and whaled to God. If there's one thing I will never allow is for the evil one to play with my children. I refuse that my children become victims of evil. I have lost too many people in my life because of the evil one, and not this time around. I'm ready for war, I'm ready for a battle for those I love. I cannot loose the second time over the evil one. Affliction will not occur the 2nd time this time around....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I looked at the Bible on the dressing table, scared to even touch it. I closed my eyes and opened them a couple of times hoping it will disappear but it was still there. With the little strength I had in me, I went to the window to check if was closed but there was no sign that it has ever opened.

How did this Bible get here? Who put it there? I mean how? I tolaced my hand on it to check if it is real, and it is real. I opened it to check if it's written in a language I will understand and indeed it was written in a familiar language. Eh!

Voice: "For I know the plans I have for you," declares I the Lord, "plans to prosper you and not to harm you, plans to give you hope and a future. I watch over my word to perform it. My promises to you are yes and Amen. When you go through fire, it will not brun you, when you go through deep waters you will not drown for I am with you. Trust in me

and I will never put you to shame. I'm the Lord your God. "

The voice whispered in my ear, it was very gentle and soothing. I looked around to see where it comes from but I didn't see anyone around me.

What's going on with me? I opened the door to check if there's no one on the other side who is trying to talk to me, because I have never in all my entire life heard this kind of a voice. I went to further to the kitchen still trying to look for this person who just spoke to me right now.

Mokgadi: "Looking for something?" She startled me.

Me: "Rakgadi... Uhm no, I'm not looking for anything."

Mokgadi: "Okay, make breakfast I will prepare the kids for school since I'm in a good mood. You can go see your mother today after you are done with the house chores."

Me: "Oh, okay. Thank you."

Why is she being all nice?

Mokgadi: "You are welcome Sweety.."She left me all shocked in the kitchen. I went to brush my teeth then made breakfast and lunch boxes for the kids. When I finished, I I cleaned the house and she took the kids to school. I bathed and went to see my mother.

She was with her speech therapist when I arrived and she was slowly but surely recovering. Her speech was becoming better.

Me: "Mama how are you today?" She smiled.

Mama: "I'm much better today baby, how are you?" She slowly said with her lips curved to the side, you can tell she was trying be as auditable as she can but she was struggling.

Me; "I'm fine, you look happy."

Mama: "I'm happy to see you, I miss Naomi.. Can you please bring her?"

Me: "I will come with her during the weekend." She nodded and smiled.

Mama: "You need to pray baby." She said out of the blue. I didn't answer her as yet as she still wanted to say more.

Mama: "Don't forsake God. Don't ever do that. Trust Him, he will never leave you I forsake you. His promises are yes and Amen. He is a faithful God..."

Me: "Mama, calm down take it easy." She was struggling yet she wanted to talk more, I kinda like knew where this conversation is going, and truly speaking I know that I need to pray but where do I even start? I feel like God has let me down so much that I lost the little faith that I was having in me. All hope is gone, I didn't even know what to believe anymore. I feel lost, yes I do pray sometimes, but I'm strained

Mama: "I'm fine, Whatever is happening in my house it's only you who have power to stop it

Palesa. I might have failed you as a mother but please don't fail Naomi, please baby. She needs you to be strong and fight, fight on your knees. I'm not going to be there forever and I can't only do so much but the rest is up to you. If you are going to let every obstacles throne to you get you down, then you are not ready to be a mother to Naomi, yes, many things have happened, but don't let what happened kick you down forever, pick up the pieces and fight, God will also fight for you. Pray harder and trust God. His plans are not to harm you but to prosper you, they are to give hope and better future. Those that trust in Him, He never puts them to shame. I might not have taught you how to pray but there's a lady who comes here every morning, Mam'Thabita, she encourages me in the Lord, and I have been praying for you. That God may give you a forgiving heart, whatever your father did, release him baby, it's not worth it. God is seeing your tears and she will bless you with a good life. One day the sun will shine for us, for you and for Naomi. It will be better. " As much as she is struggling to speaking but she said all that in but and pieces and

she made sense but where do I start?

[03/12, 15:29] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 59

Kgomots'o(Kgosi's baby mama)

Kgosi is sleeping and I'm here restless. Ever since his parents went to church, I can't sleep. Everytime I close my eyes I see the face of that woman, and it slightly turns into a snake every now and then. I tried to avoid it but I can't anymore. It's freaking me out so bad. I called Tilly and she answered after a while.

Tilly: "How is like to stay with Bae and his parents?"
She sounded enthusiastic.

Me: "I don't know friend. I don't but, I don't like what we did. I keep on seeing that woman's face

Everytime I close my eyes."

Tilly: "Come on, you are just being paranoid, I mean you should be happy that you got your man back, that's all that matters."

Me: "I don't know Tilly, I feel like we made a gravious mistake. I can't help it. What if that woman turns us into one of her evil worships?"

Tilly: "Geez Motsso relax, nothing will happen. I guess it is all in your head. You will be fine. Trust me."

Me: "Fine, I have to go, there's another call coming through. Cheers."

Tilky: "Cheers." I hunged and answered my phone again, it was my mother. Me and her have a weird relationship, love and hate kind of a relationship. We only talk to each other if it's necessary or important besides that we will never talk until the day I go home.

She is not a bad mother, I can't fault her in anything,

she did her outmost best to raise me and my sibling and we are who we are today because yah, she did. My sister Katlego, she is studying pharmacy at UL, she is just a year younger than me. I have studied almost every course but I can't seem to find something I enjoy, she is doing her last year which is this year and she working at clicks pharmacy there in Limpopo. We are quiet close, we just tolerate each other just like our mom.

Her relationship with my mom is the same as mine. They only talk when necessary. She is much of a softie than I, hence she moved down to Limpopo after matrix because she couldn't handle mama's character and I can say she is doing pretty well. We do talk every now and then when necessary too.

Me: "Judith." that's my mom, that's how we call her and she doesn't seem to mind at all.

Mama: "Kgomotso, how are you?"

Me: "I'm good and yourself?"

Mama: "I'm good, can we talk?" She didn't sound like her normal bubbly self as people always say she is.

Me: "Yah, is everything okay?"

Mama: "Yes, no, I mean is Koko." My heart skipped few beats. My grandmother practically raised us, she has been all that and everything to me ever since I can remember.

Me: "What's wrong with Koko? Is she okay? Talk to me please." I could literally hear my heart beating out of my chest.

Mama: "She fell and injured her leg and and....we took her to the clinic and then,... And they they referred us to the hospital... She is no more."

Me: "What do you mean she is no more? Where did she go?" I asked breathlessly with tears streaming down my cheeks.

Mama: "She passed on baby, she is not coming back."

Me: "Maaaaaaa... " I screamed out loud in again

with my phone falling from my shaky hands. What have I done?

Kgosi: "Babe, what's wrong? Are you okay?" I don't know what time he got there, I threw myself in his arms and cried. He kept asking me what's wrong but I couldn't utter any word. Words were failing me. I was failing to even comprehend what happened.

Kgosi: "Please tell what happened. Why are you crying? What went down?"

Me: "It's my grandmother, Kgosi my grandmother has passed away, she is gone, she is not coming back to me and it is all my fault. It is my fault that she is gone."

Kgosi: "Shhh, it's not your fault. It was her time. I'm sorry."

....

I woke up from my sleep after a terrible nightmare...

Dabulamanzi wanted to kill my baby, but I tried with everything in me to fight her and she stubbed me on my arm. When I woke up my arm was very painful. Exactly where she stubbed me in the dream.

It was dark in the house, I must have falled asleep while crying, Kgosi was no where in sight. I got out of the bedroom and went downstaird. I found everyone settled on the table eating dinner.

Lindo: "Makoti has finally woke up, what time are we going to eat konje?"

Kgosi: "Lindo please, Mots o is not okay."

Lindo: "Eheh from Kgomots o to Mots o, my sister which muti did you use this around? Hai, girl it's very strong I tell you."

Kgosi: "Lindokuhle I said stop it."

Lindo: "Hey chill... Come and sit down our wife."

Kgosi: "Mommy please tell Lindo to shut up before I slap him."

Londi: "Lindo please keep quiet." She said absent mindedly.

Londi: "Come and sit down and eat. Are you okay?" Her eyes pieced through my skin, I swear I felt like she was reading my mind.

Me: "Yes, I'm okay thank you. Tomorrow morning I'm going to Rustenburg(they all looked at me and tear were already streaming down my cheeks.) my grandmother has passed on earlier during the day."

Londi: "Oh, we are so sorry about that. Condolences to you and your family. Please excuse me."

She left the table with her plate and her phone....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I got home in the afternoon and to my surprise Mokgadi cooked. I don't know which games she is playing but I don't like them already. Likely I bought myself KFC in town, I also bought for Naomi, I know

she won't eat Mokgadi's food. They don't click on some many levels. I hid it in my bag.

I greeted everyone and went to my room. The Bible was still on the dressing table. I took it and sat down. Naomi walked in as I was about to open it. She locked the door and came to sit next to me.

Naomi: "Sesi can we pray for mama?"

Me: "Why? What's wrong?"

Naomi: "I want her to come back home, I don't want to stay with Rakgadi anymore, she is very rude. I want my mother."

Me: "I know Nana, she will recover and come home I promise."

Naomi: "Let's pray first, did you buy this Bible? I also want mine."

Me: "I will buy one for you." She kelt down and I knelt next to her.

My phone rang before we could start praying.

Me: "Hello?"

Londi: "Palesa, it's me, Londiwe, Kgosi's mother."

I knew because I have her cell phone numbers.

Me: "Hey Ma, is everything okay?"

Londi: "Everything is fine, did Kgosi let you know that he is back?"

Me: "No, he didn't, I have been trying to get in touch with him but his phone is not going through."

Londi: "I don't know why his phone is off but he came back with someone."

Me: "Someone?"

Londi: "Yes, He came back with Kgomotso, they claim to be a couple."

Me: "What? How? I mean he told me that they are not dating she is just a babymama."

Londi: "That's what we all thought but ntombi I ask of you to start praying because whatever is going on, it doesn't smell good at all. Fasten your prayer

life because reality is about to kick in. Make sure you have all the weapons of war and don't expose them to the devil. The evil one is out there ready to destroy and conquer. Pray Palesa, prayer like you have never prayed before. If you really love Kgosi that much please pray for him and Trust in the Lord with all your heart. It's about to get dark before we can see the light again. Just promise me that whatever may happen you will not go back dn you will not give up. Promise me that you will continue to serve God, no matter the situation, no matter the pain, and no matter the challenge you may come across... Please. "

Me:" I promise, I will.. " My heart racing so fast, how can Kgosi do this to me? I mean I thought... I don't even know what to say, I wanted to cry but I couldn't because Naomi was next to me.. If there's one thing I promised myself never to do is to cry in front of her. This child has been through the most without even her noticing and now crying will just make it worse.

Londi: "Palesa, stay strong baby, stay strong in the

Lord. The battle is not yet over, the storm still coming but keep faith okay? And please tell Naomi the truth before it's too late, let her go see Mama and tell her the truth tomorrow, not a day later okay?"

Me:" Yes ma'am. " Tears were threatening to come out."

Londi: "Stay strong baby, may God be with you and bless you." she hanged up and Naomi looked at me expecting me to say something but didn't instead I bowed my head and said few words followed by crying, I think I was holding back so much emotions that didn't even know how to pray. Naomi cried too...

Lord give me strength, I'm so tired of doing this life like this. I'm exhausted, I'm not happy, I'm broken, I'm shuttered. Lord just give me strength, just a little so may carry on because I can't. I can't take it anymore, I can't go on like this...

[03/12, 15:29] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 60

Palesa Ella Motaung

Saturday, no one prepare themselves for the events of life. No one prepare themselves for whatever God decides. It only take courage I guess and faith in whatever you believe in to pull through. I guess, life has a funny way of making us realize that no one really knows the future besides God Himself. He knows our now and our tomorrow.

Today, is a very somber day, not that anything particular happened but this day is just heavy. Me and Naomi we are at the hospital to visit my mother as she requested to see her and here we are but the Energy that is here is just something else.

We were sitting in the waiting room as we waited for the doctor to finish with her. My phone rang, it was

a land-line phone. I answered and kept quiet waiting for the person at the end of the phone to say something but the person was adamant to keep quiet and trust me I was also adamant to not say anything and beside all of that, I'm just not in the mood today. All I wanted for today was to lie in my bed and do nothing maybe this somberness I'm feeling would've been much better when I am alone in my room with an ice cream tube, but who am I fooling. Where I stay, there's no piece of mind, I don't even know if that exist in reality, I don't even know their address because I would really love to visit them even if it's just one day, one day only will do me good.

Wisdom: "Hello." Wow, he finally spoke, I even forgot that I was on the line. And his voice send shivers down my spine, what does he want? Why is he calling me? Where did he get my numbers? The raw of emotions I was feeling right there were mixed with questions I failed to ask him...

Wisdom: "Palesa are you there? It's me, Wisdom."

His voice sounded uncertain and of course dammy
I know who you are, how can I forget the voice of
the person that change my whole entire life?

Me: "Hello" That's the only respond I had in my mind
even though I believe much wasn't expected from
me as he was the phone who called.

Wisdom: "How are you?" How am I? Really is he
going to ask me that?

Me: "What do you want Wisdom?"

Wisdom: "Nothing, I was just checking up on you
and I also wanted to say... I'm sorry."

I have heard that million times, I think it will be best
if you call your wife not me, I have nothing to say to
you, my mind say but I dare not say it out loud.

Me: "Is that all?"

Wisdom: "Yes, I hope one day you will find it in your
heart to forgive me."

Dr: "Ms Motaung, you can come through now, we
are done." the doctor saves me from this one phone
call that I didn't even know how to reciprocate from

it. I don't see any means for it or why the person bothered to even call me, no wonder this day is so somber like this.

Me: "I have to go. "I didn't wait for him to respond, I cut the line and I held Naomi's hand as we walked to mama's ward. She was seated down for the first time in forever with pillows supporting her back.

Indeed she was recovering so well and today she looks so much better than any other day.

Me: "Mama." I said with a smile and she smiled back. Naomi jumped in her bed and hugged her, this is the first time she is seeing her this close, she only managed to see there through the door.

Naomi: "Mama when are you coming home?"

Mama: "Today baby." She smiled and held out her free hand to her cheeks.

Mama: "How are you?" She looked at me and I shrugged my shoulders, I seriously don't even know how I am, all I know is that I'm taking each and

every blow as it comes. I'm tired of fighting, I'm tired of having it together, I'm just exhausted nje.

Mama: "You will be fine my angel. Nono, mama wants to tell you something." I sat down next to her bed, preparing my mind for Naomi's reaction. I don't know why mama doesn't give me a minute to breath. Naomi gave mama all her attention with her hands on mamavs face. I think she couldn't believe that she was seeing her.

Mama:" You know that mama and Ella loves you very much right? (she nodded, as slow as mama was talking she gave her all her attention) and mama will never do anything to harm you right. (she nodded again and mamavs tears betrayed her."

Mama: "I'm so sorry my angel. We didn't mean to hide this from you but it's done now, we can't change what happened." She took a deep breath and Naomi was also in tears, well we were all in tears. I feared for many things, I feared that she will hate me and she might not recover from all of this.

Naomi:" Mama please don't cry. "Her voice was

breaking.

Mama:" I'm sorry, I won't cry anymore I promise.

"She quickly wiped her tears.

Mama:" I'm sorry we lied to you because we wanted to protect you but I realised that it was only for our selfish reason, you are the best thing that has ever happened to answer and I want you to know that we love you so very much... I... I'm... God give me strength to say this... I'm not your mother, Ella is your mother and papa was not your father, he was your grandfather and I'm your grandmother. "

She just looked at mama as if she didn't say anything out of the ordinary, I don't know if her mind was still trying to process everything or what but her facial expression was blank.

She sprung out of mama's hands and ran out, I followed her with tears running through my eyes, I didn't have time to read mama's face. I called out Naomi's name but she kept on running away. I

followed her until I caught up with her.

Me: "Nono, I'm sorry, I didn't mean to hurt. I'm so sorry." I tried to touch her but she flinched away and the tears that she has been holding came out as a little scream and threw herself in my arms again and we cried together.

Me: "I'm so sorry baby, I'm very sorry."

She held on me for her dear life and I did the same. God knows how much I didn't reject her but situation didn't allow me to be a mother to her. This is all my father's fault, had he allowed me to be a mother I would've done that. Had he believed me when I told him that I was raped all of this would not be happening and look how the child is broken and he took an easy way out of this whole mess he created. He had it all easy while the rest of us are suffering because of him

I hate him even in death, maybe if I didn't know him, it could've been much better, he has never been a father to me anyways. I wish he can come back to life so that I can tell him how I hate him.

We went back into the ward and we found mama still crying when she saw us, she took a deep breath and Naomi ran to her and hugged her.

Naomi: "I love you mama."

Mama: "I love you too baby, and I'm very sorry. Lele, I'm so sorry my child, please forgive me, forgive me please."

Me: "It's okay mama, I forgave you long time ago, it wasn't all your fault." I hugged her and she kissed both our foreheads.

Mama: "I always know that I love you two. I love you so much."

Me: "We love you too mama."

Mama: "Let me rest now."

Me: "Okay mama, we will come back to see you

tomorrow.

Mama:" Okay baby, keep well and don't forget to pray always. God will fight all your battles. I love you, Nono, take care of her for me. "

Naomi:" I will, I know she can be glumsy sometimes mama, tomorrow I will bring you ice cream."

Mama: "Okay baby, let me rest now."

We kissed her and left....

Kgomots o(Kgosi's baby mama)

I have never been this broken before. Seeing her coffin broke me even more. Today we are laying my grandmother to rest and it has been the hardest week ever. Kgosi has been by my side since day one but guilt is eating me up, I can't even sleep at night, all I see is Dabulamanzi's face smiling with blood on her mouth. I know for sure that she is behind all of this

We were still at home all preparing to view her body for the last time. I couldn't even bring myself to that, all my cousins went in the room where her coffin is, I sat in the kitchen alone. My mother walked in.

Mama: "Why are you sitted here all by yourself? You have to go and see her so you can get closure." I shook my head no with tears streaming down.

Mama: "Come on baby, koko was old, and it was her time. "

Me:" I know but why is it hard to believe? She wasn't even sick mama, Koko was healthy and strong. "

Mama:" I know my child, is better you go and see her for the last. Come on. "She helped me to get up but my mind was battling with this whole thing.

We got to the room and my aunt(mom's sister) and uncle were in the room standing next to her coffin that was in the middle of the room. Mama held my

hand as we walked around the coffin until I saw her face. I was shaking, thinking she will wake up and ask me what did I do but nothing happened.

We went through with the service at home, Kgosi's parents did come, as much as they didn't approve of whatever is going on between me and Kgosi they came to support their child.

We finally went to the cemetery, the program went by and when the coffin went down the whole, I literally peed on myself

I saw my grandmother standing next to her grave crying, with her heart in her hands bleeding. I was very shaken by what I saw...she was filled with disappointment, her eyes couldn't even hide how disappointed she was at me. She blinked few times and a tear dropped. People must have thought I was taken by her passing but it beyond that....

[03/12, 15:30] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 61

Kgosi Mankoe

I don't know what was wrong with me, ever since we came back from the cemetery I have been feeling little out of place, one moment I feel like I'm losing my sanity the other moment I feel strangely okay.

My parents suggested that I come home with them today to rest since I have been up and running since I arrived here playing the perfect son in law.

Kgomotso's family is very lovely, her mother is an easy person but she loves money, one trait I have learnt about her. Kgomotso's cousins and siblings are welcoming too.

I finished packing my things and I was feeling light headed, like I will fall any time but I managed to finish packing and sat down the bed to rest a bit..

My mom walked in. She sat down next to me and placed her hand over my shoulder.

Mama: "Whats wrong? You don't seem good."

Me: "I'm not feeling okay, I feel like I'm coming down with flu or some kind of virus. I don't know but I'm not okay."

Mama: "I think you need some rest, I will ask your father to drive your car and I will drive ours so you can rest."

Me: "I don't think that will be necessary, Kgomotso is coming with us, she also needs some rest, remember she is pregnant."

Mama: "Oh, okay, fine let's get going then." She looked very disappointed. One thing with my mother is that she is not the arguing person, she doesn't love to force things. She just let things happen nje.

Me: "Mommy, am I doing something wrong?" She turned and faced me with her beautiful smile that soon turned into sadness that filled her eyes.

Mama: "I don't know boy, but I pray that God will open your eyes to see for yourself if you are doing something wrong. Can you please do me a favor."

Me: "Anything for you mommy."

Mama: "From tomorrow, can we fast for 3 days, just you and I. For your baby's sake and her and also for yourself, so God may reveal if you are doing something wrong?"

Me: "Okay, we can do that, I don't mind."

Mama: "Thank you, and call Palesa to check up on her." Palesa? Who is she? I know the name but I don't even remember how she looks like or who she is. I stared at my mother blankly.

Me: "Oh..."

Mama: "Finish up so we can leave, I will be outside."

Me: "OK." She walked out.

Wisdom Mofokeng

I have been battling with loneliness in this place. As much as I tried to make friends here and there I just couldn't. I didn't know that prison can be this hard, it's very difficult, being far away from everyone, far away from my family and more especially my wife and daughter, I have been refusing to see them simply because I don't want them to see me like this. I know it sounds selfish of me but I'm not coping, I'm losing touch with reality at some times. All I want is to be strong for my daughter and hopefully I will be out on patrol for good behavior soon.

I received news from Oratile that our evil mother has been admitted here is the only person I have seen so far a couple of times. She explained that her condition is not well, it is deteriorating slowly, part of me doesn't really care, I want her to die because she has caused us so many pain that I don't we will survive it or our relationship will ever be restored. Maybe it's best if she dies because I seriously can't bring myself to forgive her and Palesa in the other hand, she wants nothing to do with me. All I want is

to apologize, during the trial I just pleaded guilty to avoid prolonging the case and I didn't even have a lawyer I didn't want one, I just agreed that I did it and that was it.

I finished writing the letter for my wife, Palesa and Naomi's letters as I always do every 2nd week. I pray and hope Palesa will find courage to these letters....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I finished cooking and served everyone their food and went to lie down, the heaviness I was feeling was beyond me. I couldn't even figure out what was wrong. I took my Bible and read through the book of Job chapter 1. I had so many questions after reading, I mean how does one person go through so many tribulations all at once?

I mean from where I have read so far, loosing everything and even your own children all in one day, they pain must have been unbearable. Do you still continue to serve God and trust Him even when this happened? I don't know hey, maybe I need a little bit of teachings about how this God works because I don't think I can survive all of that, I don't think I can bring myself to trust someone who continue to disappoint me and break me like this. Isn't a little bit unfair?

Yoh, I knelt down and when I was about to pray my phone rang, it was Kgosi's mother, I answered...

Me: "Hello."

Londi: "Hey sidi, ujani?"

Me: "I'm good Ma, how are you?"

Londi: "Ngiyaphila nami sis, can I pray with you? That's if you don't mind."

Me: "Of course not, I don't mind at all."

Londi: "Let's pray, Father you are so kind, you are so

good, there's no one like you, there's no one we can compare you to. You are alone are God. You are the lily of the valley, the rose of Sharon, mighty warrior, great in battle. Jehovah is your name. Your name is our strong tower, the righteous run to it and they are saved. Father in you we live, we move and we have our being, you are indeed our sanity in the midst of this busy world. You are our hiding place in time of trouble. Them that runs to you are always safe. Father when our hearts are weary, you become our peace that surpasses all human understanding. Lord right now, I stand in the gap for Motaung's family, Lord give them strength, you have been their God before even today I still believe that you are still their God. Make a way for them where there's no way, where all hope is lost, restore their hope in you. Father whatever that troubles their minds stop in and comfort them.

When situations are above human control take charge and be with them. You are God of I'm possibilities, changer of every situation. When you

step in things begins to happen and situations stabilize, there's no challenge that doesn't know your name. At the sound of your name every knee bows and every tongue confess that indeed you are God.

Father, give Palesa's strength, situations will come that may try to move her, but shock her with your overwhelming love. Keep her rooted that she may not doubt you. Whatever seed of doubt in her mind about you unroot it.

If this cup of suffering cannot pass her by unless she drink, not her will to be done but yours to be done, let it be for Glory oh God. I know that you have good plans for her, plans to prosper her and to give her hope not to harm her. Whatever that happens in your will is forever perfect for her. Her help to acknowledge your will in everything, things might turn, but let her love for you never turn.

Gracious God be her father in this trying times. I know that those that calls upon you, you always answer them. Hear my prayer and plea today. Also help me God to be there for her, to guide her, and to be patient with her. For I know that when things are hard it's also difficult to cope, but help me to be her safe place. I open my heart and my home for her, I'm stepping in as a mother to carry her through everything as I also had a mother before to carry me when things became dark for me.

Let your unfailing love fill her up tonight, I pray that she may have Devine encounter with you tonight in her sleep. I seal every entrance of her house with the blood of J esus Christ. Every spirit that is not of you in that house tonight it has to leave. I charge the atmosphere in their house with your Fire and the blood of J esus, even the ground they step on, no demon in hell will step their feet there. In the might name of J esus Christ I pray. AMEN. "

Me:" Amen, thank you. "

Londi:" It is well babe, it is well.. Never doubt that God loves you and I also love you. "

Me:" Thank you. "

Londi:" You are welcome, let me love and leave you. We will tomorrow. "

Me:" Okay, bye. "

I hanged up and laid on my bed and wiped my tears, I have seen eople praying for people and I have also heard people praying for others but this woman has something, I don't know what it is but her words always have an effect on me.

My phone rang again as I was still lost in my thoughts my mind.

Me: "Hello."

Dr: "Hi, Palesa, is doctor Morwetsi here."

Me: "Hi, doctor, is everything okay?"

Dr: "Uhm, do you mind coming to the hospital now? It's very urgent and unfortunately I cannot talk on the phone."

Me: "It's late but I will make a plan."

Dr: "Please do."

I got up with my heart pumping out of my chest. I called Nthabiseng, maybe her mother will take me to the hospital.

Nthabi: "Chomie, O sharp?"

Me: "Yah ke sharp, but I need a favor."

Nthabi: "What's up?"

Me: "My mother's doctor called, she said she needs to see me urgently, and I don't think I will find taxis to town now, can you please ask your mother to accompany me, I will give petrol money."

Nthabi: "Don't sweat, I will talk to her, just get ready, we will come and fetch you just now."

Me: "Okay, thank you."

I got out of the room and I found everyone seated on the couch watching TV, Naomi was doing the dishes, that's just a norm of this house. When she saw me she smiled with a frown on her face.

Naomi: "Where are you going?"

Me: "To the hospital." She let go of the dishes and came to me.

Naomi: "Why? Whamy so late? Is mama okay?"

Me: "I don't know, her doctor called me, I'm still going to see if she is okay."

Naomi: "Can I come with you?"

Me: "No, you have to stay her, I will call you." I gave her my phone.

Naomi: "Are you sure?"

Me:" Yes baby, be a good girl and don't forget to lock the bedroom door and to pray. "

Naomi:" Okay. "I briefly hugged her and went to tell Rakgafi that I'm going to the hospital, she didn't even seem to care about it when I told her, she didn't even look at me. Nthabi and her mother indeed came and we drove to the hospital. No one was talking in the car, the silence was too much and I believe no one had anything to say.

When we arrived the nurse at the reception, led us to Dr Morwetsi's office, she ushered us in and we waited for her to come. My heart was literally beating out of my chest, the breeze was becoming chilly in my skin giving me me chicken skin. I rubbed both my hands on the arms to keep myself warm and intact before I loose it.

She walked in after some time and took off her coat and hanged it nicely behind her chair, her eyes were unreadable. I don't even know how to explain the emotions that where there.

Dr:" Thank you for coming in such a short notice, it's your mother, we took her to theater to check her wounds and to change her bandages and to give her medication but she didn't respond to anything, unfortunately we tried our best to resuscitate her but she didn't make it. I'm sorry we lost your mother about 1hr 30 minutes ago.....

[03/12, 15:30] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 62

Londiwe Cele-Mankoe

I'm standing on the window in our bedroom, overlooking our beautiful, peaceful garden. My mind and heart was far away with Palesa, as much as she didn't call me yet, but I knew what has happened. It's my prayer that she doesn't seek deeper and deeper into another episode of withdrawal.

I hope she will come around and fight the pain with prayer, as much as I wish to be there for her always, some of the pains is better you go through them alone that they may mold you. I don't want her being too dependent on me that she forgets to stand up for herself and her child. She is another and I pray she snaps out of the pain quickly before it's too late. I pretty much understand her pain, I can relate to it in so many ways because I have been there.

It's more like she is reliving my life. Lost both parents in short space of time, being a mother in this cruel cold world where no one cares.

It's the first day of our prayer today, and I'm glad that it's Sunday, we are all going to church. Last night I couldn't sleep, I spend the whole night in the prayer room with God speaking to me about Kgosì and I know exactly what happened. He revealed

everything that Kgomots'o did and the only way out of this mess is for him to separate himself from her just for 3 days. I want him to focus, I want us to go far away from home after church, so that she can focus. When he is around Kgomots'o, it's more like she is intoxicating him all over again, whatever she did is drawing him to her more and more.

If there's one thing I know is that my God has never disappointed me, He always come through for me. He fights all my battles and he always reveal the hidden things to me.

When God said touch not my anointed and do my prophet no harm, he meant it because his revenge has no mercy. God's anger is too much, no one can stand it.

A knock came through disturbing me from my thoughts. Kgosi walked in, he looked ready for the day. We are all going to church. I feel so strongly

about today's service, my husband left around 05:00 am for intercession. I don't know what made him leave that time but I know something in the spirit was provoked, I felt it when I was praying the whole night. There's a great move that I feel and things are about to change in the right direction.

Kgosi: "Earth to mommy." he snapped his fingers at me, I must have been lost in my mind.

Me: "Sorry, you were saying?"

Kgosi: "Are you okay?"

Me: "Yah, I'm fine, I'm just worried about about Palesa, her mother passed on yesterday." He looked at me blankly, I know he forgot about her.

Kgosi: "Oh, my condolences to her, is she one of the ladies at church."

Me: "No, you probably forgot her, but it's fine. Are you ready to leave?"

Kgosi: "Yes we are all waiting for you."

Me: "I will be there in few minutes, please take the

car out of the garage for me. I'm driving."

Kgosi: "Okay, may I have the keys?"

Me:" I'm the key drawers, and tell Lethu that I won't wait for her. "

Kgosi:" Okay. "

He walked out and finished dressing up, and I called Palesa but her phone rang unanswered. I took my bibles and handbag and left for church, everyone was in a good mood, including Lindo himself, they were all conversing and laughing out loud to his lousy jokes. He was in a better mood today, at least he was not mocking Kgomotsu...

Palesa Ella Motaung

I have been numb since yesterday, everything refuse to sink in. My mind refuse to believe that my mother is really gone. I don't even remember how we got home last nigh, I don't even know what to say to Naomi, I haven't slept the whole of last night,

I couldn't even bring myself to cry, so I asked Nthabi and her mother to go home because I need time to think.

I got out of bed and took a quick shower and dressed up for church. I haven't told anyone about my mother's passing, I don't even know where to start since my father's family hate us so bad. In times like this I wish I had someone from my mother's family who will help me with the preparations for the funeral. With my father, his sisters took over the the arrangements, now I'm all by myself. I looked at the letter the Doctor gave me, she said it's from my mother. I don't have strength to read it. Maybe when I come back from church I will read it.

I prepared Naomi for church, she has been talking for ages but I wasn't hearing any of the things she was saying. She ate and we left everyone still sleeping.

Nthabi: "Chomie." She was standing by the fence when we were by the gate.

Me: "Nthabi."

Nthabi: "how are you? Where are you going?"

Me: "I'm fine, we are going to church."

Nthabi: "Haibi, we're you not supposed to be going to the morg..."

Me: "Not today please, I'm not in the mood."

Nathabi: "Lele..."

Me: "Nthabi Please..." I gave her the pleasing eyes and she finally let go. I don't have the strength to be dealing with this now, I'm physically and emotionally exhausted the pain I felt this year is too much for me to handle. I'm tired of being strong, I'm exhausted of all of this.

We went to the church nearby, not pastor Mofokeng's church, I wonder if he is back yet. Ever

since the whole sagnar with my dad and his wife, I doubt the church is still standing. He is well by leaving.

After church we went back home, Naomi kept asking about mama, I need to find courage to tell her where she is because I can't keep on lying to her about this whole thing. When we got home there was no one. I made food Naomi and went to my room. I took about the letter from my mother....

"My beautiful baby, my Ella, my Lele,

I know you are sad that mommy is no more, but don't be sad, mommy was tired, she need to rest in her father's bosom. It was hard for me to live daily with the pain I was feeling. Forgive me for not being able to fight, my body was failing me each and everyday. I was only holding on because of you and my little Nono.

Wipe those tears my little angel, know that mommy is with her father in heaven resting peacefully. Now, I want you to be strong in the Lord and the power of His might. Don't let my death weary you. Soldier on, never look backwards. Give every battle you are fighting to God because on your own you won't conquer. Stay in God my baby, He is a friend that sticks closer than a brother. He will never leave nor forsake you. His love will carry you.

Remember that the battle is not yours, but it's for the Lord. Cast all your burdens unto him and He will help you carry them take His yoke because is lighter than yours. It is my prayer that you don't allow my death to break you, but instead let it be a revival in your life.

I have been asking sister Shirley to write down verses for you daily, there in the next letter. Please read them daily, they will encourage you in the Lord

to keep on keeping on.

Don't give up hope my angel, don't give up on God, always remember that there's God in heaven who is watching over you, He is your faithful father. Don't forget to pray, when the going gets tough look up in the sky and see how free the birds fly and sing because they don't worry about anything, because they know that God is taking care of them. The same God that takes care of the birds in the sky and the fishes in the water He will take care of you too.

Now, listen carefully, there's a card and the pin. It's all the money I have been saving for you, I know you still have the money from your dad, I don't want you to play with money. Use this one I left for you to go back to school next year, in my closet there are documents of the house, sell it and move to Gauteng, I spoke to your uncle Kwezi Mbatha, he is my brother, he will accommodate you and Naomi until you are done with school. Then there's another

file with the documents of the farm, sell everything and make sure you have enough cash to take Naomi to the best school. Even the dealership documents are there, sell everything that belonged to your father and His will is there, call advocate Molly, she is your father's lawyer, she know everything about your father's properties and Naomi is the only beneficiary on them.

There are also my policies documents in there, I don't need any fancy funeral, I don't need unnecessary attention from people who didn't even care about me. Call these numbers(072..)its your uncle Kwezi, He will come and assist you with whatever you need.

Be strong sthandwa Sami, don't forget to pray always. When you feel lost, pray, when you are sad, pray, when you feel like giving up, pray. Don't stop to communicate with God, let him know all your fears and worries. He is a good good father.

I love you so much my angel, don't cry for me, I have lived my life and God has called me home and I have answered, now it's your chance to live, and don't be apologetic. Just be a good mother to my little angel Naomi, take care of her and make sure that you raise Her in the ways of the Lord. Teach her how to pray, teach her self worth. Make it known to her that she is worth it every single day. Seek the kingdom of God and its righteousness and the rest shall be added, never worry about tomorrow, God will take care of tomorrow for you.

Good night my angel

Love

Mama"

[03/12, 15:30] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 63

Kgomots o (Kgosi's baby mama)

Church was something else today. I really can't say I enjoyed because I was burning inside, something was burning deep inside. When Kgosi's mother held my stomach I felt like jumping out of the church because of the sensation I was feeling, I can't even describe the feeling but it wasn't a pleasant one.

She prayed for me through out the service even though she didn't say much to me like she said with others. She would just stand next to me out her hand on my tummy or head then the sensation will start. I didn't really enjoy the service that much and we haven't said anything yet ever since we got home. She prepared lunch for everyone then she went to her bedroom with Kgosi. Kgosi did tell me that they will be in prayer for 3 days and he would like that I give him space that he needed and I

respected that.

My phone rang while we were busy eating lunch. It was my father. I excused myself.

Me: "Papa."

Papa: "Motso, how are you?" His voice was trembling.

Me: "I'm good papa, how are you? You don't sound okay."

Papa: "You have to come back home, it's your mother." My heart began to beat faster

Me: "What's wrong with her?" He took a deep breath and I heard my aunt's voice in the background saying be strong buti.

Me: "Papa, ke eng? What's wrong?" I couldn't hold back my tears and the fear that engulfed my heart.

Me: "Papa where is mama?" my voice came out harshly than I intended to.

Papa: "Your mother is gone. "

Me:" She is gone where? Where did she go? "

Papa:" She fainted and she passed on on our way to the hospital.

My phone slipped out of my hand and I sinker on the floor with a loud cry....

Lindo:" Baby mama what's wrong? Are you okay?"

I kept on crying.

Lindo:" Dada, please come. Baby mama is in labor. "

Trust Lindo to say that when you are in great pain.

Tebogo: "What's wrong with, she doesn't seem like she is in labor, let's help her up."

Lindo: "But she is screaming, what more can make a woman scream like this if she is not having sex?"

Tebogo: "Lindokuhle?"

Lindo: "Sorry, I'm just saying, come on baby mama get up." They helped me up and put me on the couch, I didn't even know what to make out of the situation yet.

Tebogo: "Bring her a glass of water and call your

mother."

Lindo: "I can only do one thing at the time dude."

Tebogo: "Then do two at once and make it snappy."

Few minutes later Londi walked in followed by Kgosi, he pulled me into his embrace the moment he walked in.

Kgosi: "Baby talk to me, what's wrong?"

Me: "It's my mother, she passed on."

Lindo: "Eh death at a funeral part 2."

Londi: "Lindo stop it"

Lindo: "Sorry, I'm out of here, I'm going to see Kenzie." He walked out.

Londi: "What have you done Kgomotsi because if you don't tell the truth, this is only the beginning of sorrows in your life? Why don't you just save yourself this and get help before it's too late? It was your grandmother now it's your mother, who is next? You don't make a covenant with the devil and think he will run around free. He is nobody's friend. He doesn't love you and he will not start now, you

will end up all alone in this world. " Her words hit right at the core. What have I done?

Kgosi:" Come on Mommy, you can't be saying that to her right now, she is broken. "

Londi:" And so? Because she is broken we must all bow or walk on egg shells around her? The only way her family member will not die is for her to be honest, or they will be burning every week from now on. The ball is in your court sis, roll it carefully. I won't be sitting here comforting lies, she brought all of this on herself." She got up and left, I don't know want to lie her words echoed in my ear like a piercing sword. So many things are at stake right now, I tell the truth I loose Kgosi for good, I keep quiet my family members dies like dogs, God knows how much I hate this feeling...

Palesa Ella Motaung

Me: "You know mama loves you so and she wouldn't do anything to harm you right?" This was

the hardest thing I ever had to do, telling Naomi the truth about mama was something I never thought I will see myself doing here I am. I have to be honest with her about everything. I haven't said a word to anyone yet. Only Nthabi and her mother knows and I asked them to give me time to tell Naomi first and then tomorrow I will tell everyone else, I want to thread carefully with everything, I don't to be jumping around and being careless. Right now it's just the two of us, is us against the world. No one will think for me and my child hence I need to be emotionally and physically strong to deal with everything else head on. Running away is not an option. In this world people changes it doesn't matter when or how but people can wake up being different people hence I have to be careful on how I do things.

Naomi: "Yes, is she okay?" I shook my head no and wiped my tears.

Me: "Nono, mama has gone to be with the Lord in heaven, she is an angel now watching over you and

me." Her faced changed and she cried without asking many questions. That's one trait about Naomi, when needed to cry, she cries, she doesn't hold grudges or any offense within her.

Naomi:" I will never see her again? "She asked in between her sobs

Me:" Yes baby, but she told me to tell you how much she loves you and she wants you to grow up and be a big responsible and beautiful girl." I squeezed her in my arms and let her cry.

Naomi:" I'm going to miss her. "

Me:" I know baby, I know. Can you do me one favor please." she quickly wiped her tears and looked at me

Me:" Don't say a word to anyone about this today, please be strong for me. There are few things that I need to do before we can tell anyone okay? "

Naomi: "Are we in danger?"

Me: "No, we are not in danger but mama asked me to do some paper work and you know how Mokgadi

is right?"

Naomi: "Okay I won't say a word, can I not go to school tomorrow? Just tomorrow only please?"

Me: "It's fine, I will send your teacher a message. Lie down and rest while I clean the house, I will wake you up."

She nodded and I went to my mother's bedroom and locked the door. I went to her closet and took out all the papers she told me about. I went through each and every detail on it and it was exactly as she said.

I took them out and filed them nicely and called Nthabiseng to keep them safe in her house until the funeral pass. Whatever I need I will get it from her. She is the only person I trust right now.

When I got back I went to sit in the study room and called my so called uncle.

Kwezi: "Hello."

Me: "Hello." We both kept quiet.

Kwezi: "Hello?"

Me: "Yes, you are speaking to Palesa Motaung, Nomzamo's daughter"

Kwezi: "Mshana? Is that you?"

Me: "Yes."

Kwezi: "Oh thank you God, I never thought you will call. How are you? And where is your mother, I have been trying to get hold of her lately but she is not answering my call."

Me: "Malome, mama has passed on yesterday, hence why I called she write me a letter before she died and said I should call you."

Kwezi: "Haibo? When did that happen? How did it happen?"

Me: "It's a long story Malome, rather I explain it in person, I mean that's if you will be able to come."

Kwezi: "I will be there first thing tomorrow morning,

please send me the location, I will come with your other uncles and aunts."

Me; "Thank you Malome. I will see you tomorrow then."

Kwezi: "Alright Mshane, keep well."

I hanged up and and leaned back on the chair and looked at the letters I have been receiving from Wisdom, unfortunately I don't have time to read all of this....

Me: "Lord I need strength from now on, supernatural strength to carry me through because this is beyond me."

Kgosi Mankoe

Kgomotsu was now sleeping, she was very heart broken, even know we didn't know why she was

crying but mommy said someone in her family died. I wanted to go through her phone but my instincts didn't allow so I just let it be. I went to sit outside with my mother, so I can get clarification of what she was said. I know my heart believes what she is saying but head refuse to believe her. Maybe she is right. She was reading her Bible when I found her. Dad's was sleeping for sure as for Lethu she went to aunt Maya's house and Lindo too.

Me: "Mommy.

Londi;" Son. "

Me:" What's going on? "

Londi:" With what? "

Me:" I dont know either, everything I'm confused, something is not right somewhere somehow, I don't know maybe I'm hulucinating. "

Londi:" Kgosi, i didn't want to be the one to tell you what's going on but time is not on our side. Son, witchcraft was used on you to love that girl. The

reason why I'm not doing anything is because I'm giving her chance to come clean because whatever she did has a very deadly repucations I doubt she will be able to stand them."

Me:" Mom, what are you talking about you are not making any sense, how can the mother of my child use witchracft on me? I have known Kgomots0 for years, she is not capable of doing such. She is very kind and loving. "

Londi:" Sometimes love makes people to do horrible things and this time around she did that and unfortunately even your son paid the price for his mother's sins, there no child there anymore. Her mother and grandmother were the price she paid for loving you too much. If she doesn't come clean, the evil will wipe out all her family members and she will die a slow painful death. "

Me:" Can't you save her? "

Londi:" I'm not God unfortunately, I don't save people but God does and again unfortunately of the time for grace is finished there's nothing I can do

from that person. The anger of God is too much no man can ever stand that. Kgomotsi touched the wrong one and she will have to pay the price. As much as God is a forgiving God, He is also the killing God. You don't play with Grace and expect to live. "

I was not too confused, my head was spinning, I understand what she is saying but I don't understand at the same time.

She looked at me and smiled, why is she smiling while I'm too confused to understand a single word she is saying? Ain't she supposed to be helping me?

Londi: "Get up."

I did as she asked and she placed her hands on my eyes

Londi: "Lord open his eyes to see, and may you give him the spirit of forgiveness because it's only you who avenge for men. Spirit of understanding fill up right now under the sound of my voice. Make him see beyond his natural eyes and give him wisdom, lead him with wisdom, knowledge and power. I release

you from bondage of any witchcraft. Any enchatation made in any evil pot, I cancel it, I nailfy it right now in the name of J esus Christ. Every evil pot that has your name in, I break it right now in the name of J esus Christ. Any evil handwriting that wrote your name I erase it with the blood of J esus Christ. Anywhere your photo is represented or any image of you represented in the camp of the enemy, I burn it up with the fire of the Holy Ghost.

I plead the fire of the Holy Ghost upon your life. I command the angels of God to encamp you from now on, in the name of J esus Christ. I release you from any bondage and chains of witchcraft in the name of J esus Christ. Be free right now in the name of J esus Christ. Amen...

[03/12, 15:30] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 64

Palesa Ella Motaung

Today I went to the hospital to sign the release forms for my mother to be transferred to a morgue, it was a long draining process but thank God I managed to do everything. Nthabiseng took a leave from work just to assist me. Her mother is at home with Naomi and she took it upon herself to let our neighbors know about my mother's passing, I asked her to tell Mokgadi for me. I don't have strength to be dealing with and I want to avoid her as much as I can this whole week. I don't want her negative energy all around me. She can be a pain in an ass when she wants to.

The only thing left for me to do today is to call Advocate Molly about the will. I already called the policy company, I'm just waiting for death certificate to be issued and the claim will be released.

We went to McDonald's when we returned to the

mortuary, her mother gave us her car.

Nthabi: "It's been a long day."

Me: "You can say that again. I just want this week to move fast nje."

Nthabi: "I feel you, how are you feeling?"

Me: "I don't know chomie, I don't have time to be thinking about how I am feeling. I just want to bury my mother and move on. I don't have the energy to cry."

Nthabi: "But you know that you don't have to keep it all together with me? I'm here for you to help you carry your pain."

Me: "I know and I appreciate that but friend, this whole thing is emotionally exhausting, revisiting my emotions right now will just be a huge set back which I don't need. Naomi needs me and I have to be sober to be there for her. She has been through a lot in a short space of time. I think she will need therapy after this whole thing. "

Nthabi: "I know friend, but don't forget about yourself too in the process or else you will lose yourself again. You also need to heal so that Naomi can also heal. Remember negative energies are easily transmitted to the next person, especially those close by. Just tread carefully and take time to learn your emotions, they don't really have control you but just know how you feel, or rather journal everything you are feeling so that you don't explode on wrong people, especially Naomi."

I nodded and pushed back the tears that were threatening to come out, God knows how much I don't want to break down. I can't afford another setback. This whole week is still too long for me to keep it together. I know that my father's siblings will drive me nuts I need to prepare myself mentally about that too before I go crazy.

Me: "Thank you friend."

Nthabi: "I'm always here for you. I'm your ride or die." She smiled and I returned the smile.

Nthabi: "You are going to be okay, I know that." I nodded, my phone rang, it was my uncle.

Me: "Malome."

Kwezi: "Mshana, ujani?"

Me: "I'm good thanks and how are you Malome?"

Kwezi: "Hai, siyaphila, sesifikile la ekhaya kwaMotaung."

Me: "Okay Mqlome, I'm still at the shops to buy some few things I will be home in the next hour."

Kwezi: "Okay mshana."

We hanged up.

Me: "We have to go home, my uncle has arrived."

Nthabi: "Okay let's go then, we will eat on our way home."

We went to pick'n pay to buy some veges and few

things before we went home. When we arrived the yard was full, with people going up and down, that's how community funerals are. I went inside and indeed I found people in the sitting room having tea and scones. I wonder who made them...

I sat down next to a lady who looked like my mother, her big eyes and sharp nose were those of my mother, you couldn't miss. Nthabiseng's mother was seating on the floor with Rakgadi Ditiro, I wonder what time did they arrive.

Ditiro: "Palesa these are you relatives from your mother's side. I just don't get who called them since we were not notified about our brother's wife's passing. We were supposed to be the ones to call them." she screamed her lungs out, well that was expected, that's just how she is.

Me:" I'm the one who called them as my mother requested. And it's so funny it's only now you realize that my mother was your brother's wife but

you and your family never bothered to go and see her or to even ask me how she was doing, yet you brought another woman into my father's house who claims to be my father's wife. You are not even ashamed of yourselves." They make me so angry these people. They always want to be seen as good people yet they are so evil. Their hearts pump evil.

Ditiro:" Have you told us that your mother is sick? Did we know that she was at the hospital?"

Me:" Oh wow, so typical of you Rakgadi. So typical of you but why am I even surprised because all you care about its money? It's fine, I will bury my mother since you buried your brother. "

Uncle:" Mshana, calm down. Anger has never solved anything, we are all here and I believe families needs to be united in times like this. Yes Motaungs have wronged us in so many ways, but we are not here for that, what has happened in passed stays there. We want to bury our sister in dignity. At least that is the least she deserves. " His

voice made me realize that he is uncle Kwezi, he came with another men who looks like him but not too much and the 4 ladies.

Stella:" It's so funny how you all realize that she is your sister in death. I don't even remember how we wronged all of you because it's your sister who agreed to come here, no one forced her."

Kwezi: "Rakgadi, we are not here to fight as I have said, but if it's war you want, we will give you war, but like I said before we are here in peace, but since it seems like peace doesn't exist in your vocabulary and I can't be dealing with uneducated people, you people have robbed us so many years with my sister and her kids even in her dead you still want to be selfish?"

Stella:" Oh we are selfish now? Okay fine since you are all trying to be better people, please get out of my brother' house. Leave with your peace and education sies. "

She walked out followed by Ditiro and quiet

Mokgadi who have been sitting there playing with her fingers.

This family is something else.

Me:" I'm so sorry Malome that you have to experience this, this is just the bits pieces of how this family is. "

Kwezi: "It's okay Mshana, it's not new to us. Bhuti, this is your niece, Palesa Nonz's child. Palesa this is your uncle, Busani. He is our eldest brother but we don't share a mother and this one is Nokubonga she comes after Busani, this one is Noluthando she comes after Nohlaha. We all share the same father but their mother is the eldest wife of your grandfather. Then from my mother's side it was just me and your mother, our brother died long time ago after our parents passed on. And this is our Aunt MaButhelezi and this is our other from our father's side MaMbatha. Ncane this is your grandchild Palesa, her mother told me that she has a child, I

believe she went to school since it's mother. "

The 2 aunts were in tears.

MaMbatha:" Mbatha, Shandu ka Ndaba

Gumbi Lama Gwala

Sontshikazi, Mthiya othiya ngenkomo abafokazana bethiya ngamahlaha. NDABEZITHA! Woza kugogo baby. "

She hugged me so tightly while saying the clan names. I cried, I have never had a family that accepted me like this.

MaButhelezi:" We have failed Nomzamo, and this our chance to make things right by even in her death. We can leave this children here again, we are the only people close to family they have."

Busani: "I agree with you Ma, Mshana we are sorry for neglecting you, some of the mistakes were made by our parents but we were also wrong for not correcting them."

They all apologized and Nthabi's mother suggested that they come spend the night in her house and we will see everything else tomorrow... P

Kgomotso(Kgosi's baby mama)

I was going home today, the house was very tense, even Kgosi was cold towards me, I don't know what happened but his mind was far away from here. Her mother asked him and Lindo to drive me back home since I wasn't in a good state of mind.

To be honest, I was tired between the two world. At night I can hardly sleep, I keep on seeing my grandmother or Dabulamanzi. Last night I dreamed of my own mother, her cry pierced my heart in the dream. She kept on asking me what did I do. I also don't know what I did. I wish I can reverse everything that happened that particular but I can't because I don't know what I have done. Kgosi has been lost in his own world since last night, since we

don't sleep in the same room, his mother has never allowed that not in her house according to her own words.

My bags were packed ready to hit the road. We were gathered in the lounge. Lethu was at work and her father too was at work. Londi handed me a 20 litre bucket of scones, I don't know what time she baked them.

Londi: "I hope everything goes well at home. And stay strong in the Lord, he will give you strength to face whatever is happening."

Me: "Thank you so much."

Londi: "You guys should get going so you don't come back late."

Lindo: "Okay Mommy Bear. I will be the driver since Papa Salkom and Mama Salkom are in a bad mood today."

Londi: "No funny business Lindo, be mindful of your

words."

Lindo: "Me? Always Mommy Bear, I'm always mindful of what I say I only tell the truth. You will find me in the car."

He walked out with my bags.

Me: "Ma, I have thought about what you have said and honestly speaking, it's eating me. I might have done something, something that is hunting me. I don't know if I can live with what I did... MA I'm so sorry...I...i..." I saw a figure standing at the door, on the face there was a smoke, I couldn't see the face, as I tried to speak my tongue was twisted, I was struggling to find words, and my throat was getting dry, I was getting choked...

Londi: "Mots'o are you okay? What's wrong?" she lightly shook me but still I couldn't utter any word...

Londi: "Kgosi bring me glass of water, quickly."

He ran out, I was very much aware of my surroundings but my speech was gone.

Londi: "Shesha Kgosi...Look at me, keep your eyes

focused on mine, don't look anywhere else but in my eyes. Kgomots'o focus baby, focus on me.

Repeat after me..." I followed through the prayer, though I wasn't auditable but I managed to say

Londi: "J esus, I believe you are the Son of God, that you died on the cross to rescue me from sin and death and to restore me to the Father. I choose now to turn from my sins, my self-centeredness, and every part of my life that does not please you. I choose you. I give myself to you. I receive your forgiveness and ask you to take your rightful place in my life as my Savior and Lord. Come reign in my heart, fill me with your love and your life, and help me to become a person who is truly loving a person like you. Restore me, J esus. Live in me. Love through me. You said in your word that when repent from our sins you are faithful and just you will forgive us. Cleanse me of my sins, renew the right spirit in me. Create in me a clean heart in the name of J esus Christ. Let your blood wash every stain of sin in me. Live in me Spirit of the Loving God, dwell in me. I'm your child, I'm yours, deliver me from

myself in your name. Thank you, God. In Jesus' name I pray. Amen..."my voice was very audible now and I was in tears... I can't believe I was this heartless...

[03/12, 15:30] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 65

Palesa Ella Motaung

It has been the most hectic week ever, I don't even know how I pulled through with both families always fighting and arguing over simple things. I took it upon myself to do everything my mother would have loved. I'm giving her the best send off ever, well her family decided to pay. Apparently this people are monied. When my father stole from my grandparents that didn't stop them from accumulating more wealth in agriculture. I don't know how huge their business is but from what I

have got, they are all involved in agriculture and they own few properties if not hotels. I haven't gotten a chance to ask about them but I heard aunt Nonhlanhla and Nokubonga talking about yesterday when we went to town to buy some groceries. Aunt Noluthando drove with uncle Busani and the Gogos and I believe Rakgadi Ditiro and Stella joined to the mortuary to bath my mother and dress her.

They decided to top her casket since the policy was covering the coffin, and the grocery.. Let me just say they topped everything else that I thought I will keep simple. Naomi was forever with Nthabiseng and her mother, I knew she was more safe with them than any other person.

All my cousins arrived earlier on today, uncle Kwezi and Busani's wives and children came along with the aunt's children and my grandfather's first wife. I thought she passed on but she was very much alive. She was very old but she forced to come, when she

saw me earlier on she cried and it broke my heart to see her cry like that, she kept asking my uncles if it's truly me.

Saturday Morning

Everyone is still busy going up and down, I have just finished bathing Naomi and dressed her in her white dress. We decided to wear white today, I know it's not ideal for a funeral but this is how I want it to be done. My mother has suffered the most cruel accident and her last days on earth, she lived a happy life, she was always smiling, full of life and peace. And this is how I want to send her off today.

Kgosi's parents came last night, I was bit disappointed when I didn't see Kgosi but I didn't ask if he will be coming or not. I still don't understand what happened between us, he just went cold and quiet and I decided to play the part too. His mother did tell me the other day that u should pray for him

but she didn't go to an extent of what went through but I heard that he got back with his baby mama and I saw a couple of pictures on Facebook where his baby mama tagged him they were all together and they seemed happy but I didn't have time to dwell on that so many things have been going on in my life.

We were called in the bedroom after we were done dressing, the family honored my wish, they were all wearing white as per my request. My Rakgadis were so quiet recently, I wonder what happened or what are they planning but they were also there too.

Naomi tighten her grip on my hand when we walked into the room. Her coffin was in the middle of the room. They moved the bed and the dressing table to create more space.

MaNkosi: "Come in bantwana bami, wozani."
MaNkosi is my grandfather's first wife and
MaMbatha is my grandfather's sister and

MaButhelezi is the Mbatha's Makoto, her husband passed on, he is grandad's brother.

MaNkosi: "Nonz has gone to be with the Lord, I have read the letter she gave you, your uncle showed me. Take heart my children. We are now here for you. We are going to bury your mother with dignity, like an ambassador of Christ. She was a soldier in deed and Lele be strong my child. Cry if you need to, we are here now, we are not going anywhere. We are your family now. Come and see mama, and take your time. Can we all give them some space, Kwezi, you will remain with them. "

Me:" Thank you Gogo. "They all walked out leaving Naomi and I, she was already in tear. Uncle Kwezi stood at the door.

Naomi:" Sesi, is mama in here? " I crotched down.

Me:" Yes baby, she is in here. Mama is resting now my angel. She has gone to be with the Lord. She was tired, her body couldn't take it anymore."

Naomi: "I want to be with her too sesi, can't we go

with her?"

I shook my head no and quickly wiped my tear.

Me: "No my angel, but one day we will be reunited with her again. Right now we have to keep on keeping on, we have to continue to love this life without her but we both know that she will forever remain in our hearts, when you miss her, just look in the sky, you will see a cloud and know that she is there smiling in peace. Okay? "

She nodded with more tears falling down.

Me:" Come and see her for the last time, always remember that she is at peace, she is not hurting anymore, okay? "she nodded again and let out a heavy sobb

I got up and we went to the other side of the casket where it was opened. I pulled the chair for her to climb on since she was short and the stand was bit high for her.

She placed her hands around my neck.

Naomi:" She is sleeping so peacefully Sesi."

Me: "I know Nana, I know." I couldn't contain my own tears.

Me: "Mama..." that's all I managed to say, this moment became real, too real for me to know that she is no more, she is not coming back to me. I have been hiding in for such a long time, hoping maybe it will be a dream, maybe a nightmare that I will wake up from but it's not, it's real, she is gone.

Me: "Nonz, why Mara? Why..." I Malome Kwezi brushed my back gently and he carried a crying Naomi on his other hand.

Kwezi: "It's okay, take it all out Mshana, All is well. Uyabathwala bakhe uJ ehovah, nawe uzokuthwala, Akasoze akushiya noma akushiye. Phepisa sisi." (J ehovah will see you through, he will never leave nor forsake you. Be comforted. "

Kwezi: "Naomi, mama is at rest now baby, she is happy wherever she is and she wants you to always be happy and remember her in the most beautiful way. Don't cry Nana, don't cry my baby, all is well."

We went out and allowed other family members to see her for the last time, it was heart breaking for her family because they don't have any other memory for her beside this one. They were all in tears even the grannies. It was hard for us not to cry when they were crying.

We went the tent erected outside decorated with all white and beautiful flowers. We sat down down and the Mc let the program, speeches were made by few people and my mother's friends. I also spoke...

Me: "My mother and I we were not that close, our relationship didn't start off the best way but I'm grateful that we managed to find our momentum and we made it work. She was a very kind person, she was my bestie, and her last day proved to me that she was my rock and pillar. I don't want to say much because much was said between her and I mostly from her, but I thank God for allowing her to be my mother, all the moments we shared were

priceless. She is a special kind of breed that had her own vocabulary, when she ran out of words she will a word to patch and make you understand whatever she wanted to say. She smiled even in her pain, on her sick bed in hospital she taught me how to pray and she left me with a scripture that I have been meditating in this whole week in the book of Joshua 1:9 'Have not I commanded you? Be strong, vigorous, and very courageous. Be not afraid, neither be dismayed, for the Lord your God is with you wherever you go.' and that's exactly what I'm planning on doing, to keep faith and keep on going. May your soul rest in peace mama, I will always love you. Thank you. "

I went to sit down and the service continued Londi was to lead the sermon as always, bless her soul.

Londi:" Joshua Chapter 1 from verse 1. It's not a coincidence that your mother has left you that scripture sisi. This scripture speak profoundly

about the death of Moses, Moses was a leader, he was leading the children of Israel to the promise land, and I believe that your mother too was leading you to your promise land. She was a leader in your family and in your life. But now she is no more...

Joshua 1:1-2

[1]AFTER THE death of Moses the servant of the Lord, the Lord said to Joshua son of Nun, Moses' minister, [Deut. 34:4-8.]

[2]Moses My servant is dead. So now arise [take his place], go over this Jordan, you and all this people, into the land which I am giving to them, the Israelites.

Palesa, now your mother is no more, akekho umama, so now arise girl, get up and dust yourself, unfortunately they will not tell you, but I'm here to remind you that Moses had to go so that Joshua can step in. Moses had to leave so that Joshua will stop relying on him. We rely too much on people that we forget that one day they will go and we will

have be alone. The only reason why J oshua couldn't rein when Moses was there is because he was still in the process. Umama was here because she was taking you through the process, she was teaching you how things are done so that when you get older you will be able to do them without her.

Akasekho umama Palesa, unfortunately people will tell you that we will be there for you but the honest truth is that people get tired. People get tired of us, hence when Moses dies God didn't appoint someone to go hand in hand with J oshua, he told J oshua to arise, and lead. Maybe in J oshua's case it might have seen more hectic since he was leading a whole nation, but still you have a nation too, your baby is a nation, the responsibilities that you have resume from tomorrow is the nation. The decisions that you have to start to make by tomorrow it's a nation. It will be difficult, it will be hard, but arise ntombazane. Take over this responsibilities, take over this challenges. God makes a promise in verse 3 through to 4 J oshua 1:3-5

[3]Every place upon which the sole of your foot shall tread, that have I given to you, as I promised Moses.

[4]From the wilderness and this Lebanon to the great river Euphrates– all the land of the Hittites [Canaan]– and to the Great [Mediterranean] Sea on the west shall be your territory.

[5]No man shall be able to stand before you all the days of your life. As I was with Moses, so I will be with you; I will not fail you or forsake you.

Whatever promise that God has made to your mother, because you are the seed of your mother it will manifest through you. No man shall be able to stand against you, He will not fail you or forsake you.

And there's a catch in verse 8 Joshua 1:8

[8]This Book of the Law shall not depart out of your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night,

that you may observe and do according to all that is written in it. For then you shall make your way prosperous, and then you shall deal wisely and have good success.

Never forget God and His word even in your pain. This book of law, is the only legacy that your mother left. Izwi lika Nkulunkulu lithi kuyakudlula izulu nomhlaba, kepha amazwi ami awasoze adlula. (The word of God says Heaven and earth will pass away but my word will remain) peoples promises will pass, will not be fulfilled but those that trust in the Lord will not be put to shame.

Hit the word of God in your heart sisi, hallelujah. Joshua had to make a decision to keep on keeping on and trusting God even when Moses was not there. Moses was there only to take him through the process, but had he stayed forever Joshua wasn't going to learn anything. We always have to remember that God allow people to stay in our lives

for a certain period, and if we don't learn anything within that period then it is us who has to be blamed not God. When God gives you a friend, mother, sister or father, learn as much as you can because you don't know when the time will come for that person to go. The reason why we are still unable to let go when we are hurt, broken is because there's no lesson learnt. A learnt lesson is a legacy.

Be strong and I say again be strong and courageous. God is on your side, let's get up on our feet we are going to pray. If there's one thing God loves is a death of a Christian because He knows that heaven has gained a treasure and hell has lost. I want us to pray for Palesa, THAT God may give her strength, not only that, but for peace that surpasses all human understanding.

You know the pain of death is not on the day of the funeral but it's when everyone is gone, when people

who promised to be there no longer avail themselves for you. Right now it looks easy because we are here but later on, we will all be in the comfort of our homes, some will be fighting for the legacy her mother left, but today we are going to pray, we are going to shut the mouths of the devourers. The word of God says in the book of Malachi 3: 11 I will prevent pests from devouring your crops, and the vines in your fields will not drop their fruit before it is ripe," says the LORD Almighty. Pests can be people that seek to eat where they s is nt plough and today we are closing every corner that will try to steal for this children. We are tires of family members who feel entitled to our children's legacy when we die, it ends now, it ends today. I rebuke that spirit right now, I put a leash on it. No longer shall we plough in vein, no longer shall we built houses and we and our children stay in them. Isaiah 65 verse 21-24 says

[21]They shall build houses and inhabit them, and they shall plant vineyards and eat the fruit of them.

[22]They shall not build and another inhabit; they

shall not plant and another eat [the fruit]. For as the days of a tree, so shall be the days of My people, and My chosen and elect shall long make use of and enjoy the work of their hands.

[23]They shall not labor in vain or bring forth [children] for sudden terror or calamity; for they shall be the descendants of the blessed of the Lord, and their offspring with them.

[24]And it shall be that before they call I will answer, and while they are yet speaking I will hear.

Hallelujah, open your mouth and pray wherever you are, God wants to revive the houses of widows in this place, God want to revive the broken homes in this place. The death of righteous shall never be in vein... I declare a massive revival in this town, I pray for a Devine encounter today, in this place....arise J ehovah and let your enemies be scattered.....

[03/12, 15:30] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 66

Kgomots'o (Kgosi's baby mama)

We were back from the cemetery, I wasn't feel too good. I had minor cramps on my abdominal. I tried to ignore them the whole day but now they will come and go becoming intense every now and then.

Letago: "Sis, are you good? You haven't been eating lately and you haven't said anything to anyone since you arrived." Letago is my baby sister, she comes right after me. And truly speaking I haven't said anything to anyone. My sis'n were eating me up. Guilt was too much for me. I didn't even see my mother in her coffin, I didn't have the strength for that, I just wanted everything to pass. And I'm going to tell Kgosi the truth.

Me: "I'm fine, I just want to be alone."

Letago: "Come one sis, we all..."

Me: "I said I want to be alone, which alone don't you understand?" I shout at her and attention was drawn to us instantly.

Me: "J ust give me space, please." I wasn't sure if I was auditable enough for her to hear me.

Letago: "I'm sorry..."She walked away and i was left dotted on my own to drown in my own thoughts as usual.

The pains intensified as I was sitting there all myself, I tried to get up but I couldn't, I screamed and my aunt saw me and she rushed to me.

Aunt:" Mots o are you okay? What's wrong?"

Me: "I don't know but ahhhh, my abdominal..."

Aunt: "Get up, let me help you." She helped me to get up.

Aunt: "Kgomots o, you are bleeding." I looked down and blood was streaming down my legs. I don't know if it was tears of pain or what and fear...

Me: "Auntie, am I loosing my baby?" Fear creeped in me. At the back of my mind I knew what was happening, yet my mind didn't want to believe it.

She called for my in uncle to take me to the hospital, yah, indeed when it rains it pours....

Mercy M Mofokeng

After the burial of Palesa's mother I went pass by my inlwas, God knows how much I have been worried sick about my mother in law. As much as I don't like her at the moment, I know that what she did is not right, but she doesn't have to be all alone. I haven't seen or heard from her in a while. She has been drowning her sorrows lately and she will pass by the house when going to buy her drinks but it's been weeks now.

I got in the gate wasn't locked. I went inside the

house and the smell wasn't that pleasant.

Me: "Ruth? Can you hear me? Ruth..." I went to room after room but she wasn't there, I went upstairs and I found her laying in the floor, in a very disturbing manner, her clothes were scattered on the floor and she was all naked, with blood on her vagina. The smell was terrible. She was still breathing but she seemed to be very weak.

I called an ambulance, and I called my mother notifying her about the events I found in this house. I think she was raped... I couldn't let my mother come since she was babysitting my baby. I called Oratile and she answered after a while.

Me: "Oratile is your mother, she is unconscious."

Oratile: "So? Where do I fit in the equation?" She wasn't even moved by what I said, she actually sounded very bored.

Me: "Come on, we are talking about your mother here, your own mother?"

Oratile: "Seriously Mercy? Did you really call me to tell me about that woman? Unfortunately sisters I don't care, I don't give a damn even if she dies, I wouldn't care. She deserves whatever happened to her and more. Bye."

She cut the line, wow. I know she hasn't been a good mother to them but this? A little sympathy will do, this woman also suffered a death of a lover. She is going through the most, or maybe I just don't know or understand but being a human is not a crime.

After a while the ambulance came and they took her I went with her to the hospital to do the admim for her...

Palesa Ella Motaung

We were back at home and people were gradually leaving, even some relatives were leaving. I was seating outside the gate with my cousins, they are a bunch of crazy people. They were drinking wine in the cups. I wasn't drinking, not that I haven't drank before but I just didn't want to. Not all of them were drinking but we were having fun just chatting. They were telling me stories about their childhood. Naomi was sitting in my lap, she has been clingy ever since we came back from the cemetery.

Naomi: "Uncle Kgosi..."She jumped off me and ran to him and he picked her spinning her around.

Zandi:" whoa girl who is that? "

Me:" J ust a friend if mine. "

Neo:" Your friend you say, girl he so damn fine. "

Kgosi:" Ladies, gents. "

We all greeted back.

Kgosi:" Can I steal her for a minuet?"

Lolo: "You can even spend the night with her."

Me: "Lolo?"

She laughed

Zandi: "Don't keep the guy waiting girl, and take your time."

I laughed and walked away, Naomi was holding on him for her dear life. She really missed him.

We went to his car, he put Naomi at the back and we sat in front, no word said. He drove out to the mall. The music killed the awkward silence in the car.

We went to McDonald's and he ordered food, well, I didn't eat at home, for obvious reasons.

We sat down waiting for him to finish ordering, he never asked us what we are eating, I assume he knows best.

Helaced everything before us, and Naomi dugged in without asking any questions.

Kgosi: "How have you been?" His eyes were piercing holes in my skin.

Me:" Good I guess. "I wanted to be angry with him for leaving me without any explanation but right now, I can't, the anger vanished the moment I laid my eyes on him.

Kgosi:" Hmmm. "

Me:" How have you been? "He shrugged his shoulders before he answered me any further.

Kgosi:" I don't know, I don't even remember some parts of my life, I mean the recent events but I guess I have been good. "

Me:" Okay, I heard that you and your baby mama got back together. "Why did I even say that? Maybe is because I wanted to know what is really going on between them. Him saying it will stop me from caring so much for him.

Kgosi: "Where did you hear all that? "

Me: "News travel fast Kgosi, I'm sure the whole world knows now."

Kgosi: "I didn't know that I was that famous."

Me: "Now you know." The fact that he was not denying anything, or agreeing to anything was hurting me, at least he should out me out of my mystery.

Kgosi: "Wena? Have you been seeing anyone?"

Me: "And why are you interested in knowing if I'm seeing anyone or not?"

Kgosi: "Since you were interested in my business first." He had a smirk on his face that annoyed me very terribly.

Me: "Why am I here Kgosi?"

Kgosi: "I just wanted to spend time with my two favorite girls."

Me: "Your favorite girls? I don't think this is appropriate what will your baby mama say?"

Kgosi: "Cab we not talk about her please?"

Me: "Oh and why is that?"

Kgosi: "She is not part of my life anymore, and I would rather focus on important things."

Me: "What are important things?"

Kgosi: "You and Naomi are important right now."

Me: "Please take us home. My family must be worried sick about us."

Kgosi: "But we are not done talking. Nono can you please go sit there, I want to talk to sesi about something." He pointed at the sit at the corner where he will be watching her from where he is seated. She took her food and went there.

Me: "What's there to talk about Kgosi? Haven't you made your point clear that you want to be with your baby mama?"

Kgosi: "Have u said that to you? Have you heard me saying that I want to be with Kgomots o? Did I say that Ella?"

I folded my arms and looked at him. I can't believe this guy, he just came back out of no where and now he want to act as if everything is fine? Is he being for real?

Me:" You haven't said it but actions speaks louder than words. "

Kgosi:"I know, and I'm sorry, but everything that happened it was unplanned, I was n't aware of it. All I remember is that I came here the other day and I found you on the floor with your aunt doing some weird things on you and the following day I woke with Kgomotsu by my side and that's it. That's all my mind can remember. "

Me:" Hmmm, can you please take me home. "

Kgosi:" Are you angry with me? "

Me: "Why should I be angry? Akere you have said your piece of mind and I have listened, isn't what you wanted me to do?"

Kgosi: "Okay fine, let's go then." He got up and took the doggy bag and called Naomi for us to leave. He opened the door for Naomi to get inside the car and

he placed the doggy bag at the back and came to my side, instead of opening the door for me, he pinned me against the car.

Kgosi:" I know I messed up, but it's wasn't my plan to mess up, whatever happened I had nothing to do with it and if it will make you feel any better, Kgomots o lost our baby, so we don't have any connection between us . Meaning I will never see her again in my whole entire life. Palesa I love you, and if I have to spend the rest of my life proving to you that I love you, then so be it and I suggest you call it quits with the guy you are seeing because I'm not about to fight for my girl with another man.(He kissed me on my forehead) Get inside the car. "I moved and he opened the door and closed it after I got in...

[03/12, 15:30] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 67

Mercy M Mofokeng

I left the hospital late last night because there's no update, the nurses asked me to leave since the doctors were still busy with her.

Mama: "You should stop worrying about Ruth and eat, you will see her later. She is not even your problem to start with."

Me: "Haibo Mama, is there a need to be this heartless though? The poor woman had been through a lot."

Mama: "So? Didn't she put people through a lot? Look at your husband? He went to jail all because of his mother's actions, unfortunately I won't feel sorry for her, she might as well die. Who knows? Maybe she is even responsible for the explosion of Annahvs car."

Me:" Yoh, Hai, you are bitter shame, I don't even understand why. Even if she did all those bad things she also deserves a break, I think she learned from her mistakes."

Mama:" Mistakes? Her own son impregnated his own sister, she was quiet about. You see Mercy some mistakes are deadly, and when things are tough like this, no one will feel sorry for you. I'm not moved by shame, God forgive me but I can't sit here and act like I care. She deserves everything and more."

There's no point in arguing with her, she made it clear that she doesn't care about Ruth, the only person I feel sorry for is Wisdom in everything. I know what he did is wrong and there's no reason to justify it but having your mother being sick and you being in jail. He is already paying for his sins, isn't it too much already?

I finished up and pumped some more milk for my baby girl before I left for the hospital. My mother wasn't thrilled with me visiting Ruth at the hospital, but my human side doesn't allow me to just give up on her, she is still my mother-in-law. I just pray that Wisdom will call me this week so I can update him. He doesn't want me to visit him, he always writes me letters telling me about his well-being and also do

some cards for our baby. I pray that maybe, Palesa will drop the charges one day and forgive him. I don't want to push her over the limit, space and time is what she needs.

Her feelings are understandable and me being far away is because I want to allow her to be for now and give her time to mourn her parents peacefully. I just want peace between us...

Oratile Mofokeng

Kenzie: "Oratile you need to get your shit together, I can't keep on looking out for you if you will continue to wrecklessly drink your life like this. My mother is coming back tomorrow and girl you better be sober for that."

Oratile: "What do you want me to do Mekenzie? Huh? What do you want me to do? Since you have a perfect life, perfect family and perfect mother, you

have nothing to stress about... So leave me to live my life anyhow I want."

Kenzie: "Oh so you think I have it easy? Let me break it down for you girl, I don't have it easy, never had it easy, my biological father spend almost half of his years in jail, I lost the only man I saw as a father, the list is endless and you think sitting here wobbling in your pain will make it easier? Please, don't bore me wena. Get up and go bath, I will fix the bed and I hope and trust that this is the last time I'm doing this for you. And this lie you have of you being in Cape Town I hope it doesn't blow up in your face because I'm not getting involved in your nonsense."

Oratile: "Yes mother Mary." I got up with my head spinning like crazy and went to the bathroom to shower, that's the only thing I can do, I don't see myself going down the bathtub.

Im blessed to have a friend like Mekenzie, even though recently I haven't been a good friend to her

but she has been there for me suking my bad ass attitude. Her mother was in Cape Town with running some few errands concerning her company. Her baby brother is also in Cape Town, in some boarding school. I have been staying with her in her apartment for a while now, eversincebthe whole saga in my family, I can't keep up, I drink my pain away.

When Wisdom got arrested everything was just too much for me and I felt betrayed by my own father, when he walked away without fighting for us, yes he might not be our biological father but I only know him as a father. But he was selfish, very selfish to just walk away and never say anything....

Kgomots o(Kgosi's baby mama)

Dr: "Ms Tsobane, how are you feeling today?" He went through my file.

Me: "I'm much better Doctor, is my baby going to be okay?" He cleared his throat and fixed his glasses. Fear crippled in.

Dr: "Ms Tsobane, there's something I need to discuss with you, nurse, please excuse us." the nurse left what she was doing and left.

Me: "Dr what's wrong with my baby?" Tears were already on the edge of coming out.

Dr: "There's no easy way to put this but Ms Tsobane..."

Me: "Doctor no, no please don't tell me that my baby didn't make it, please."

Dr: "Ms Tsobane, I need you to calm down, please..."

Me: "Dr please..."

Dr: "Just listen to me please..." I looked at him with my chest raising up and down, my fears were on another left. I have never been this scared in my life.

Dr: "There's no baby, and I doubt there has ever been a baby before."

Me: "What? How? I'm pregnant doctor, look at my

tummy, I'm very much pregnant, why would I have this huge tummy if I'm not pregnant?"

Dr: "That's what I'm trying to explain, we have an unusual tumor in your tummy, almost a size of a infant, that explain the the growth of your tummy."

Me: "What? What are you talking about, I'm pregnant Doctor, I swear I did the test and it came out positive and I heard my baby's heartbeat, I swear I did." I was crying.

Dr: "I'm so sorry Ms Tsobane, is there anyone I can call for you?"

Me: "I swear I was pregnant, I was pregnant doctor..."

Dr: "Okay, let me call the nurse for you.." he left me crying on the bed...

Oratile Mofokeng

Me: "Come on Kenzie, I can't go to church, I have a hangover."

Kenzie: "And that's my business because?" She was throwing my clothes in the basket all dolled up and ready for church.

Me: "I'm not going anyone."

Kenzie: "Hard luck because you don't have a choice, you will wear this and be downstairs in the next 10 minutes. And oh put your leash on your behavior today, we are having lunch with Lindo and his family and girl I dare you not to behave, you will swear you have never met me. 7 minutes. "She banged the door on her way out. Damn, who died and made her my mother? I swear Kenzie is an easy going person but today? Whatever I did to her, I regret it, this lady doesn't take nonsense.

I wore the maroon dress she placed on the bed with the black shoes, I don't have time for make up, I will do it in the car.

I found her downstairs eating breakfast, I took a green smoothie she made for me and gulped it down. She is the best I know.

Kenzie: "Ready to go?"

Me: "I was born ready."

Kenzie: "Good, and hide those eye bags and remember to behave, are we clear?"

Me: "Yes ma'am"

Kenzie: "Good, let's go." She let the way..

Kgosi Mankoe

We arrived home late last night, today I'm not doing anything, no church for me, I'm too exhausted and I need time to be on my own.

Speak of the devil, she knocked and opened the door.

Mama:" We are leaving in the next 20 minutes."

Me: "I'm not coming with you guys, I want to rest."

Mama: "We only rest when we are dead son, and I believe if you still stay under my roof you have no choice but to follow my rules. So, get up."

Me: "Damn, does God mark a register every Sunday."

Mama: "Yes, he does, get up Kgosi."

Me: "I'm up, please leave I want to take a shower."

She walked out and took my phone and called Palesa. I haven't spoken to her since our last encounter yesterday.

We arrived very late last night and I didn't want to disturb her.

Palesa: "Hello."

Me: "Hello who?"

Palesa: "Hello Kgosi."

Me: "Wrong answer, let me drop and call again." I cut the line and called her again.

Palesa: "Hello Kgosi?"

Me: "Who is Kgosi?"

Palesa: "I believe I'm talking to one right now."

Me: "I'm not Kgosi to you."

Palesa: "Oh, okay, hello Mr Mankoe." She is very
fiesty this one.

Me: "Fine, I will forgive you only for today. How are
you?"

Palesa: "I'm good thanks and how are you?"

Me: "I'm good, I missed you."

Palesa: "Okay."

Me: "Just okay?"

Palesa: "What do you want me to say?"

Me: "I miss you too babe."

Palesa: "You wish."

Me: "Wishes do come true Mrs Me to be, so I don't
mind to wish or even dream more."

Palesa: "What do you want Kgosi?"

Me: "Did you just smile? Or no she just blushed." I

know she was blushing but trying hard to get with me.

Palesa: "Oh ps hhh, don't flirt yourself Mr."

Me: "Oh, is that it? Okay it's fine we both know the truth. How is my baby cakes doing?"

Palesa: "I don't know what you are talking about, I good thank you."

Me: "I was just checking up on you and I wanted to tell you that I miss you and I love you."

Palesa: "Oh, okay."

Me: "Is that all you are going to say?"

Palesa: "Yes, what did you expect?"

Me: "I know that if doroo this phone now you will sulk and you will be checking my profiles and statuses every now and then."

Palesa: "Hahaha, you are really feeling yourself I see."

Me: "Is that so? You want me to prove it?"

Palesa: "Try your luck."

Me: "I dare you to drop this phone call now and if you drop it, I will never call nor text you ever again."
She went silent for a while.

Me: "I'm giving you a chance to deny me, cut the line and I promise I will never bother you again, ever again."

Still she didn't say anything....

Me: "See what I mean? You are mine, and mine alone. I will see you on Friday and don't forget to blush when I cut this line okay? I love you."

I cut the line, not giving her chance to say a single word....

[03/12, 15:30] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 68

Kgosi Mankoe

2 weeks later

I have been very occupied with work lately, Palesa asked me to help her sell her parent's house and check if her father's will was faked. I was working with her father's lawyer to nail everything in her behalf. I don't want to lie this is proving to be the most difficult case I ever had to handle in my whole entire life.

I had move down to Polokwane to be closer with her lawyer, which was working perfectly on my advantage because I get to spend more time with her. All he relatives left recently and she has to move to Joburg, to stay with her uncle. At least she will be closer to me when she is that side. But they will be moving next year when Naomi finishes school, which in 3 months from now on.

Molly: "I think we should call it a day, now, I'm exhausted."

Me: "I thought you wouldn't say that." I packed my

stuff and so did she.

Molly: "Before we leave, I spoke to the Estate agent, she sent me figures but I will forward them to you, as soon as I go through them, the house will be up on the market."

Me: "Hallelujah, at least one nail down, two more to go."

Molly: "We need to threat carefully, the aunts aren't that stupid and for them to fake the will like that, there are high chances that the money might also be gone by now, tit must have caused them an arm and a leg to do it. So, we can't afford to loose more money. We strike silently for them to have no leg to stand on. "

Me:" I couldn't agree more, but let me love and love you mother, I will see you tomorrow. Cheers. "

Molly:" Bye. "

I left her still packing up her thing, this woman can work for days without a rest. When she invest her

energy in a case she makes sure that she nails it.

I went to Palesa's house, well I have been coming her almost everyday after work, it has become my second home. Even though I can't stay but seeing her just completes my day. Her aunt hates me so bad, she doesn't even want to see me anywhere near the house. The unfortunate part of it all is that, I'm not going anywhere, if she can't stand me, she can excuse herself.

I texted her when I was at the gate, she came out wearing shorts and a vest, her shirt hair looks so beautiful on her. My natural African mama.

Palesa: "Hey, how was work?" She hugged me and I held on to her and kissed her on the neck. This is my home. I said in my mind.

Me: "I'm fine, just exhausted, I can stay like this all day."

Palesa: "Unfortunately you can't, and you are very heavy."

Me: "Oh wow, okay. How are you?" I kissed her lips. Well, nothing is happening between us that's what she always says, but I beg to differ. We haven't really spoken about our relationship status. All I know is that I love her and she loves me but no one is brave to say those words. I

Palesa: "I'm good and how are you My King?" She doesn't know how that makes me feel. I literally become a dance when she calls me my king.

Me: "I'm okay, can't we go in? Is Auntie Monster at home?"

Palesa: "Yep, she is sound and very much alive and kicking as we speak, I'm sure she is cooking for her brats."

Me: "Why are you still staying her again? I mean you and Naomi can come and stay with me until this case is done."

Palesa: "We don't want any suspicions remember? And I'm not about to vat and sit with you bra."

Me: "Then marry me." Those words just came out of my mouth, my heart believed that they were true and honest but my mind was in fear that she might reject it.

Palesa: "Stop joking like that." She playfully hit my shoulder but I didn't laugh because I was damn serious. I need her in my life. I want her to be part of every experience of my life. I want her to be there on my darkest days and on my happiest day but most importantly I want to do this life with her. She is the reason I don't see myself with no one else but her.

Palesa: "Are you being for real?" She noticed my seriousness and she sat back on the sit, with her eyes not leaving mine, but I know she will look elsewhere anytime from now...and she did look outside

Me: "Like a heart attack baby, if there's one thing I need, is for you and Naomi to be part of my life. I don't want to do this life ll by myself. You give me a sense of being alive. Please say yes." She moved uncomfortably.

Palesa: "Kgosi... I can't, I mean you and I are not even dating and now this? I don't know you that much and I just lost my mother about 2 weeks ago, and now this?"

Me: "Do we have to date to get married? Come on cakes, I have spend enough time with you to know exactly where I want to be in the next 100 years to come with you. Yes your mother passed on two weeks ago, and so what? Will saying no to my proposal bring her back? No, just allow me this opportunity to love you, please. "She looked in my eyes with her teary eyes. I was holding my breath to hear what she will say.

Palesa:" I can't Kgosi, the timing is not right. "

Me:" Okay fine, I won't push you. "

Palesa:" Are you angry? "

Me:" No, I have to go now. I will see you tomorrow." I kissed her forehead and waited for her to get out of the car. I can see that she was hurt but I was also hurt, my heart couldn't take the rejection, so I need to be alone to dream with it.

She got out and I drove away...

Mercy M Mofokeng

Ruth has been recovering so well physically even though she hasn't said a word to anyone. She never spoke or got out of bed. She literally became a zombie. I asked my mother to let her stay with us until she recovers, she didn't like the idea but hey, we can't let this woman stay all by herself, she is a threat to her own self.

My father never agreed or disagreed to her staying her. Well my father is a yes sir no ma'am kind of a man.

Today Wisdom has promised to call again, it's been a while since I spoke to him, about a week now. I need to update her about his mother's progress

even though he always dismiss me. Today, I'm planning to force him to talk, Oratile also is out there doing God knows what, if there's one thing I will have to do is to force then to talk it through.

Yes, we had our own ups and downs as a family but we can't continue like this. This is not how family affairs are ran. We fight but we also get up and fix our mess. I don't want my child growing up in this broken family. I won't allow it and if I have to intervene, let it be. I'm prepared to go to the end of the earth to fix everything...

Kgosi Mankoe

I have been ignoring Kgomots o's calls for a while now and she has been calling like a headless chicken, I mean doesn't she get the message? I don't want to talk to her. But I guess I don't have a choice, since I'm in a bad mood, I might as well answer.

Me: "What do you want?"

Kgomots o: "I'm sorry, Kgosi. I'm at the hospital."

Me: "Well, good for you I guess?"

Kgomots o: "I deserve that, but there's something I want to tell you, can you please come and see me?"

Me: "I'm not coming anywhere near you, you can say whatever you want on the phone Leave me alone."

Kgomots o: "Please Kgosi, I beg you. I'm at Morningside hospital, please Kgosi I beg you. This is the least I owe you before I die. The truth, I beg you. I'm in ward G12 if you ever decided to come, bye."

She hanged up and threw the phone on the bed, vigorously rubbing my face. Why should I hear out? I already no the truth, why now when she is in her sick bed?

Couldn't she have thought about that before she

went to be witch herself and implicate me? Look at what she did now? It has greatly affected my relationship with Palesa, she doesn't even like me enough to marry me. What kind of evil is she arguing man.

My phone rang again.

Me: "What."

Dada: "I'm still your father thank you, how are you?"

Me: "I'm so sorry Dads, I'm fine, how are you

And how is mommy?"

Dada: "She has a phone remember? I'm good thank you for asking. The Tsobane family are here again and I suggest you come home immediately."

Me: "What do they want now? Didn't they get whatever they wanted when they accompanied their child to betwix me?"

Dada: "Anger has never solved anything son, I suggest that you come home and we solve this the best way we all can. It is your mess by the way. "

Me:" Fine, I'm coming with a guest, ask mommy to prepare a room for her. "

Dada:" Whatever pleases Kgosi I guess, just get home. "

Me:" fine. "

Dada:" I still love you too sin. Cheers. "

Me:" Cheers. "

I called Palesa right away, she is coming with me and I'm not going to take no for an answer.

Palesa:" Hello. "

Me:" Plqck an overnight bag. I will pick you up in the next 30 minutes."

Palesa:" Where are you taking me? And I can't just uo and leave Naomi have school tomorrow."

Me: "I know, I will speak to Nthabiseng to take care of her for a night or two, I will see you in 20 minutes." I hanged uo because had I listened to her

we were going argue for a very long time because of her stubbornness. I packed few items into my bag and called Nthabiseng to take Naomi for 3 days, well, new plan on place, we will come here tomorrow, that's if we do return tomorrow...

Is time to put an end to Kgomots'o and her family family drama, somethings will never change until you decide to get up and change them yourself.

[03/12, 15:31] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 69

Mercy M Mofokeng

Sometimes life hit us where we don't expect, but feeling sorry for yourself is not a solution. When life throw you lemons, get up and make a lemonade, some of us our lemonade ain't as sweet as we

expect it to be, but for a mere fact that we are given a second chance to live, then we grab it and run with the opportunity to fight again.

Me: "Ma, you have to eat, you can't continue like this." I was pleading with Ruth to eat but she wasn't bugging.

Me: "Ma, I know you blame yourself, but you can't continue like this, if you really want to make things right, then you should start with yourself. God gave you second chances at life, and you better use this chance wisely because is not everyone who get the opportunity to fix their mess. "

Ruth:" How do I even begin to fix everything Mercy? I'm a very bad person. Very horrible person on mercy, I don't deserve to live among people. "

Me:" Are you God now to decide what you deserve or not? You are given a chance to clear your mistakes, yes people might not forgive you, but is better than nothing. Try. "

Ruth:" Can you please organize a meeting with

Wisdom for me?"

Me:" Lucky you, he agreed to see me tomorrow, we will go together on one condition. "She lighten up a bit.

Ruth:" I will do anything. "

Me:" You finish this food, and take your medication and then you agree to see the the therapist the doctor recommended for you. "

Ruth:" Do I really have to talk to a stranger? "

Me:" This is a step at the right direction and you need it."

Ruth:" Okay fine."

Me:" Good, when you are done you can come and play with Khuts o in the garden, she will really love to play with her grandmother."

Ruth:" I will really love that too. "

Me:" Okay, then, let me leave you. "I walked away...

Ruth:" Mercy. "I stopped

Me:" Yes"

Ruth: "Thank you for being so kind to me. I know I don't deserve your kindness but, thank you. You really have a good heart." Her eyes were teary.

Me: "Everyone deserves a second chance in life Ma, as long as you have learnt from your mistakes." She nodded and I smiled and walked out. I found my mother in the kitchen, her stare was enough to let me know that she wasn't impressed with what I was doing. Funny enough, she was never against me bringing Ruth here.

Me: "Come on Ma. "

Mama: "Come on Ma for what? Whatever you promised that woman, I hope it won't back fire. That woman has hurt so many people Mercy, even your own husband, I doubt he will forgive her."

Me: "But she is trying mama, ain't you tired of this fights between the families? I want Khuts o to have a stable family mama. I want my child to grow up surround by love. I'm tired of this bickerings going on. I'm exhausted to be honest."

Mama: "Okay Mercy do what you think is best." She

walked out. Wow, this is going to be harder than I thought.

Kgomots o Tsobane

I have been in pain for the past few weeks. The pain is very severe. The doctor confirmed that the tumor is cancerous. I have a womb cancer. I'm supposed to be going through the chemo therapy and the radiation but I refused for now, I don't have the energy and the strength to be going through that. I have read the advantages and disadvantages of doing through all those processes and I doubt I'm ready to go through them. I just want to confess and die in peace if there's such.

I pray and hope that Kgosi does come. My family on the other hand have been trying to convince me to go through the chemo and radiation but I can't. Maybe this is the reward of what I have done. Indeed the wages of sin is death.

Palesa Ella Motaung

We have been driving for about 2 hours now in complete silence, we were only saved by the soft music that was playing. I have been stealing glances at Kgosi but he was focused on the road. He wasn't paying any attention to me.

The only time we spoke was when we stopped to get some refreshments. He only asked me what I want and I told him and that's it. Funny enough, his silence is killing me. I wish we can talk like good old days when we spent hours on the phone talking about everything that came to our minds and he would laugh at every silly joke I made, but now? I feel like he feels rejected when I said no to his proposal and he doesn't know how to react.

We made a turn to his parent's house, I still

remember this road from last time when we came here. The houses this side are very beautiful. They never seem to get older, everytime you look at them they always look new. The lights made every house looked more beautiful We stopped at the gate and waited for the gate to open. His mother's car was on the driveway.

Kgosi: "We are home, welcome."

Me: "Thank you." He opened the door for me and we walked hand in hand into the house.

Kgosi: "Dada, where are the guests?" His mother was washing the dishes and the father was rinsing them.

Dada: "They left, we asked them to come back tomorrow."

Londi : "You didn't tell us that you are bringing Palesa, Hey sweetie, ujani?" She wiped her hands on her apron and opened her arms for a hug.

Me: "I'm good Ma, how are you?" We broke the hug

and the father hugged me.

Londi: "We are also good baby, where is my little Naomi?"

Me: "We left her at home, she has school tomorrow."

Londi: "Okay, next time don't leave her behind. Kgosi make food for our guest."

Kgosi: "But mommy I'm also a guest."

Londi: "You love to dream I see, I suggest you make it snappy and also fix the guest room for her. The Tsobanes will be here very early in the morning, and you must fetch your grandmother at the airport, her flights is landing at 10:30, and don't be late." Who are the Tsobanes now? What exactly are we doing here because it's clear that I don't even know why we are here. I was just asked to pack my things and here I am.

Kgosi: "Wow, I should have went to my apartment, what will Lindo be doing tomorrow?"

Dada: "Lindo is going to the office since I will be

here to fix your mess."

Kgosi: "Wow, okay fine. Let me go offload our bags."
He kisses me on my cheek and walked out, his parents smiles were on their ears and it kind of melted my heart too. Kgosi is affectionate, just like his parents. Maybe this thing is in the blood.

Londi: "Make yourself comfortable sis, you can serve yourself, food is the fridge, I doubt Kgosi is capable of serving himself. We are calling it a night. Others are already sleeping, you will see them in the morning."

Me: "Than you Ma, even Lindo is sleeping? I mean that's so unlike him."

Dada: "He got his heart broken by a girl. He didn't even eat supper."

Me: "The mighty Lindokuhle heart broken? Wow, okay thank you for the warm welcome."

Londi: "You are a welcome Nana. Goodnight."

Dada: "Don't forget to say your prayers."

Me: "I won't forget, Goodnight."

They both walked out with Kgosi's father's hands on his wife balancing with her while they were laughing their way out. I made myself useful and served food for Kgosi and I since he has been gone forever. He must have been parking the cars in the garage.

He walked in the I was done warming up his food. I put warm water in a bowl for him, with a dish towel. He was seated on the kitchen chair.

Kgosi: "Thank you." He smiled and I did the same.

Me: "There you go." I handed him his food.

Kgosi: "Thank you." I smiled and we ate in silence.

Kgosi: "I'm sorry about earlier on."

Me: "You are sorry for what?" I asked still focused on my food.

Kgosi: "For just running off like that and for giving you a cold shoulder. I should've pressurized you like

that. You have been going through a lot lately and you also deserve a break from everything and if you need more time, I will give you that."

Me: "Thank you, that's all I need. Kgosi look...(i Paused) Kgosi I like you, a lot but I'm still hurting, a lot has happened in my life that I think I need time to deal with. I have been raped, twice Kgosi and I haven't healed from that, I fear even to revisit those memories. Everytime I try to go over that I get a panic attack. I feel dirty sometimes, too dirty, sometimes I feel unloved, I feel like I don't deserve to be loved. I blame myself for two rapes. Some other days I look at Naomi and I wish I can spare her the pain I have went through, I feel like I can just squeeze the life out of her because she is a constant remind of that day but my love her wants to kill myself instead of her. Then I have to go through the pain of losing my father, a man who never loved me. Sometimes I ask myself what I have done to him to hate me this much. As if that isn't enough he died without saying sorry. And now? Now I see him in my dreams apologizing for

everything he has done and he still doesn't want to take the blame even in death, he says its not his fault.

Then if that wasn't enough, I lost my mother, the only woman who has ever loved me. She is gone and now I'm all alone. Kgosi, I am a baggage, I don't want to weigh you down. You deserve so much better. I will never be enough for you, I'm too dirty for you. Maybe you should go back to Kgomots o, she loves you and maybe you guys are meant to be together, but for me? I don't think I'm capable of loving a person or being loved in return. I'm a broken girl.... "I couldn't contain my tears and h was also crying....he got up from his chair and stood next to me hugging me so tight and I cried more...

Kgosi:" I still love you in your brokenness...i want to help you heal... I love you... "

[03/12, 15:31] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 70

Kgosi Mankoe

I couldn't sleep the whole night after Palesa poured out her heart to me like that and to think I was very selfish to think for myself and not for her too is killing me too. She has been through a lot and God knows how much I want to be there for her, and help her find the healing she wants. It pains me to know that she is keeping so much to herself and yet she still manage to smile while behind that pretty smile is a broken girl crying for her help. I wish I could carry half of the load she is carrying for her.

Somehow this is the same thing my father went through with my mother. When I finally had the courage to read her book I knew about everything she went through. It wasn't an easy road and I doubt it will be one with me and her.

I tossed out of the bed and took a quick shower, and dressed up. I found everyone already eating breakfast, Palesa included. Her eyes were still puffy due to the crying for sure. I'm pretty sure she didn't get enough sleep just like I didn't.

After everyone ate, she cleared the table and I helped her of course. Lindo and Lethu left for work and my parents went to get ready for our guest. I still have to tell her about the Tsobane's visit. She washed the dishes while I dried them.

Me: "How did you sleep?"

Palesa: "Fine and you?" Back to square zero.

Me: "Fine. Kgomogso's family is coming over today."

She looked at me and she found my eyes on hers and she quickly looked back at what she was busy with.

Palesa: "Oh."

Me: "Yah, I also don't know what they want, Kgomots'o lost the baby." Well that's the least I know from my mother, I haven't had the guards to ask her about it. Part of me is quiet happy that she lost the baby while the other part is sad, I might have been excited to be a father but that could have caused more problems or even trust issues between Palesa and I. I want to be her safe place. I want her to trust me with everything in her. I want her to be comfortable with me in every aspect.

The baby might have/could have complicated things between us because one way or the other I had to have a relationship that will be conducive between Kgomots'o and I for our child sake and it could have been very hard for Palesa to accept in a way.

Palesa: "Uhm, I'm sorry for your loss."

Me: "It's okay." The fact that I still have to tell her that I'm going to see Kgomots'o later on is

something else. What if it doesn't sit well with her.

We went silent again.

Me: "You should go back to sleep, I will wake you up later on when they leave."

Palesa: "Your mother won't mind?"

Me: "No, I will finish up here and don't worry."

Palesa: "Thank you." She tried to move but I blocked her. She tried to move again and I moved in the same direction with her, it wasn't intentional.

I held her closer but she wasn't comfortable as most days, I kiss her forehead.

Me: "I love you." She just looked at me with her big round eyes.

I let her go and I finished up cleaning the kitchen.

Later on indeed the Tsobane's arrived unfortunately I had to pick my grandmother up first before I attend to them. I guess Gogo just wanted to be here nje. This woman doesn't get old for her age.

She landed at the said time and we drive home with her telling me stories about her church members and her neighbors, well since she moved to her old house that she shared with Mkhulu she has become too dramatic. Now she stays in the "burb" as she refers to it. She said she wants to die in a double storey house, and my father fulfilled her wish, she has a driver and a live in helper. She also stays with Amahle, her grand daughter.

We arrived home and our guests had already arrived, I sat down opposite Kgomots'o's dad and her aunt.

Gogo: "Why are we here again? I mean the slay queen lost the baby mos."

Mama: "Gogo please, let's here them out. We are sorry you can continue."

Gogo: "Yazi I don't know why you are so kind to this

evil people."

Mama: "Gog'J ane as omblief tog, little kindness won't kill anyone."

Gogo: "Okay fine."

Bab'Tsobane: "We are here to let you know that our daughter miscarried your grandson and she has been on hospital for 2 weeks now."

Dada: "OH you even know it was a boy? Please enlighten us here, since your daughter has been in the hospital for two weeks and no one has ever informed us that she is in hospital nor did you bother to inform us that she miscarried two weeks ago, what brings you here today because I'm sure that is not the main reason you are here? "

Gogo:" Ehehe, tell them... "

Dada:" Gogo, please, let me deal with this one. "He cut her off.

Bab'Tsobane:" Eh, Mankoe we are sorry for not informing your family on time. We were caught off guard too and a lot was happening in our family

then. And we apologize for that. "

Dada:" I hear you but you still haven't answered my question."

Mots o's aunt:"Ntate Mankoe, our daughter is very sick, and we are here because we need your help. She's on her death bed as we speak. She has a cancerous tumor in her womb and the doctor said if there's nothing done in the next few days to come we might talk another language since it's spreading quickly in her internal organs. All we request is for you to pray for her. If we have to ask forgiveness to God on her behalf, please do. We just lost her grandmother and her mother recently, and her child too, please I beg of you, as parents, the pain of losing a child is the one a parent cannot bear, plead her case with your God and we believe He will rescue her from this pain she is right now. We don't know what evil she committed, we were not there and she didn't tell us, for my sake and her weakly father, all we ask is forgiveness, that's all. "

The while room went dead quiet for few minutes, we were all in our own world of thoughts. What has Kgomots o gotten herself into?

Gogo:" Yah kushubile. "

Mama:" Which hospital is she at?"

Mots o's aunt:" We took her to Morningside hospital last week ever since her condition wasn't getting any better."

Mama: "Can you give us time to pray about this before we make any decision and we will hear what God says and we will get back to you."

Mots o's aunt: "We will appreciate that a lot."

Me: "Have something to ask, if the elders will allow me to ask."

Bab"Tsobane: "You can go ahead."

Me: "Since Kgomots o was 7 goint to 8 months pregnant, I'm sure the baby was found in her womb what happened to y baby if she mis carried? Did you bury him?" they all looked among themselves.

Me: "I had every reason to my child since I paid damages for him, and how do you bury my child without me? My own son without his father, I was supposed to be there." I was hurting, how can this people be so cruel? He was my child too, if they didn't want me to have a relationship with him, they shouldn't have come here to let me know that their daughter is pregnant but they wanted me to be part of the child's life hence they came here. Now they do things behind my back? Yes, I take the blame for not answering my phone when Kgomotso called but the parents should have called my parents as they did when they came to announce the pregnancy.

Mama: "Calm down my boy, it's going to be okay. It's going to be okay."

Mots'o's Aunt: "We are very sorry son. It wasn't our intention to do things without your knowledge. We apologize Mankoe."

Dada: "So, have you buried him yet?"

They both looked at each other before they answered.

Bab'Tsobane: "Erh, we asked the hospital to terminate and throw."

Gogo: "Hmmm something smell fishy here. But it's fine, if you are lying to us, the thunder of God will strike you I tell you."

Mots'o's Aunt: "We are telling the truth."

Mama: "Its fine I will call you to let you know when will we be able to come and see her."

They thanked my mother and we served them refreshments and they left.

I went to check on Palesa as my parents and Gogo were still arguing, she was watching videos on her phone.

Me:" Hey are you good? "

Palesa:" Hey, done with the meeting? "

Me:" Yah, did you bath?" I sat down.

Palesa: "Yah, are you okay? "

Me:" Yah I'm okay, can you accompany me? "

Palesa:" Where? "

Me:" To the hospital. "Worry was written all over face.

Palesa:" Kgosi, are you okay? What's wrong? Are you sick? "

I got up since she was already up and took her hands into mine.

Me:" I'm okay, I'm going to see Kgomotso. "She tried to take her hands out if mine but I held her...

Me:" Wait, it's nothing out of the contrary, I don't want to hide anything from you, she asked me to come and see her, she said she wants to tell me everything."

Palesa:" Kgosi please, I don't want to be involved in your life with her please."

Me: "Please Baby cakes, this is part of my life that I want you to know, if we are going to get married, I want to be open with, I want you to know everything

about me. Get dressed I will wait for you in the car. I love you."I kissed her cheek and walked out.

She found me waiting for her in the car, she was looking beautiful. I guess me and my father have a thing for plus size women. They are just everything nje.

We drive in silence to the hospital, honestly speaking I'm not ready for what lies ahead. Kgomots'o has done enough damage and I fear that there will be more where we are going... It's about time the truth comes out. The truth shall indeed set you free...

[03/12, 15:31] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 71

Ruth Mofokeng

I'm nervous as hell, last time I saw Wisdom we were not on good terms and I don't expect him to be forgiving or to like me either. Truth is haven't been a good mother, and I don't even deserve to be a mother. I have done so many evil things and I don't even to live among people.

I have lied, so many times just to save my skin and even now I still hold the deepest secrets I doubt I will be able to tell a living soul but I need to make things right with my children. God gave me a second chance to fix things with them

When i was raped by 4 men, I thought it was over, my private part is sewed and it's still difficult for me to pee because of the pain I feel down then. One of the guys was even suffocating me because I know him, I even know his mother, he wanted me to die on the spot. To be honest i thought I deserve to die, I didn't even lay charges against them that's how I

wanted to die to badly. What they did is a pay back of what I did to my son and of many other bad things I did. Burning Palesa's mother out of jealous that her husband loved her more, it's obvious...

William loved his wife more than anything in this world, he loved his child too he would go to the end of the world for them. Jealous got better of me and I worked with his devious sisters to make him fall for me and me alone.

But things changed when their sister involved another woman in the picture. To be honest, Wisdom and Oratile are not William's children, jealous and hate made me say that, they are both William's brother's children, Sammy. Sammy and I dated back in high school well he was my side nigga if I can put it that way I was dating Mark, I didn't know William then, things were good between Mark and Sammy. Mark was a city boy by then, a pastor child from a wealthy family he only visited his grandparents on school holidays.

Sammy got involved with a wrong crowd and began doing bad things but that didn't stop the burning desire and lust I had for him. I fell pregnant with Wisdom when I was doing Grade 12, and Sammy knew even his sisters knew. I slept with with Sammy first, and then when I was about a month pregnant I slept with Mark and William the same time. Mark and I our relationship was not that good since it was along distance relation, we will talk sometimes and sometimes we will go silent for a whil.

William was staying with his aunt in Gauteng, he didn't come home much often, but that year he came and he was still fresh from the city of Gold and so did Mark, I was very good in hiding my affairs. Even my family didn't know anything, including my best friend.

William was every girl's dream, well dressed and well behaved and he always had money to buy things, I got jealous when every girl threw themselves at him and I also played along, I mean

Mark was not around and Sammy always hanged around with his gang, he will only avail himself whenever he wanted to have sex, and we will hit it raw nje. So I played long and one day I visited their house I knew his sisters were not around but hey I wanted him all to myself. He allowed me to come in and offered me a drink and we catch up here and there.

And I decided to seduced him that night, he was telling me about his girlfriend Nomzamo and I wasn't even listening, all I wanted was him, it was clear that he loves this Nomzamo girl and he was planning to come with her on his next visit.

A guy is a guy, he fell for my seduction, I just took off my clothes in front of him and that was it. It was the end of Sammy and I in my mind because all I thought about was William and how he sexed me, how he touched my body and took care of it unlike Sammy who will just come with a boner and never

think about me. Then he went back to the city I was already pregnant because Wisdom came a month earlier meaning he was Sammy's child. Mark also came the very same month I slept with William, I didn't have a guarantee that William will buy my story I needed a scapegoat, unfortunately Mark was one. I also slept with Mark and few months later, I called him and told him that I'm pregnant.

There was no way he was going to deny it because we slept together and he didn't even know that I had couple of guys that I already slept with.

So, Sammy got arrested when Wisdom was born, he was sentance 2 life sentaces and the possibility of him coming out were zero. He knew about Wisdom, we used to visit him in pris on. When Wisdom was 3 years, I went to visit him again in pris on and we slept together and I conceived Oratile and I pinned her on Mark again.

Sammy was killed in prison before Oratile was born, which was okay for me because he was going to cause a lot of trouble for me.

Then Mark and I got married....

I saw him coming through the door, my hands were literally shaking, he looked so thin, he had lost weight. How can one gain weight in this kind of place. This is hell and it's all my fault, indeed children will suffer for their parents' mistakes and what Wisdom is going through, is proving that.

Mercy: "Are you okay?" She brushed my hand gently.

I nodded, I didn't trust my voice to say anything?

Wisdom: "What is she doing here?" He tried to keep it down but anger and resentment were already consuming him.

Mercy: "Calm down, we come in peace. Your mother wants peace, I also want peace."

Wisdom: "She wants peace? Which peace? Does she even know the spelling of peace? Please don't insult me."

Mercy: "Please baby, please."

Wisdom: "If you really want to continue to see me, please tell her to leave."

Me: "It's okay Mercy I will leave."

Mercy: "No, you are not going anywhere. Wisdom she is your mother, please hear her out, don't you want peace? For your sake and our daughter's sake? Are you not tired of always fighting? Please Mofokeng, do this for our daughter."

Wisdom: "For our daughter. She lost the right to be my mother long time ago, Mercy I am in this place because of her. I don't have a mother she is dead to me. She is dead."

Mercy: "Hear her out please, or else you won't see our daughter ever again. I want our daughter to grow up in a loving home..."

Wisdom: "I dare you to play that card on me, Khuts o

is my daughter and I forbid you to take her any close to this woman. I won't have my wife disrespecting me, I am your husband and you listen to me. She didn't marry you, I did and she is not my mother and I believe you don't have any relation with her since I'm not related to her. Am I clear? Am I damn clear?" He shouted a bit

Mercy: "She is Khuts o's grandmother..."

Wis dom: "Mercy I don't want her anywhere near my child, do you hear me, Ruth if I dare come any closer to my daughter I swear this time around I will rot in jail for your murder. And I don't want to see you anywhere near my wife am I clear?" His eyes were very intense and his chest moving up and down...

Me:" Y.. Yes, I'm sorry. "

Wis dom:" Keep your sorry in your ass, I hope I won't repeat myself Mercy, she will never be a topic again. Kiss my daughter for me."

He got up and left, Mercy and I were both shaken by

his reaction. I have seen him angry before but today he is furious and I don't wish to get Mercy into any more trouble....

Palesa Ella Motaung

We arrived at the hospital and he held my hand as we walked down the corridors of the hospital after were directed to her ward. My heart was racing, what if she confess her love for him and I'm standing there clueless?

I had so many things running through my mind. We found the ward she was in, and she was alone, the other bed was vacant and the nurse just walked out with sheets.

Stood next to the quiet Kgosi, we were quiet for sometime, waiting for her to settle down. Funny enough her tummy was still huge, as if she is still

pregnant, I mean heavily pregnant. I have been pregnant before and I know that 2 weeks is long for the tummy to keel being that huge. What's wrong with her? Did her family just lie to Kgosi's family?

Did she fake her own miscarriage to get Kgosi to come to the hospital? Drama of this people is too much.. Kgosi was also dumbfounded with what he was seeing.

Mots o: "HI Kgosi, hi." She turned to me, to greet m, her smile wasn't as huge as it was when she was greeting Kgosi, or maybe I'm just being paranoid.

Kgosi: "What's going on? You.. You said you lost the baby and this? What's going on Kgomotso?"

Mots o: "Kgosi I can explain..."

Kgosi: "Explain what? Explain how you faked your own miscarriage? Was this all part of the plan? To lie to me?"

She began to cry...

Mots o: "No, Kgosi, there's was no baby there was never a baby."

Kgosi: "What do you mean there was never a baby?"

She sniffed, words failed to come out of her lips, Kgosi let go of my head and took few steps to her bed.

Kgosi: "What the hell do you mean Kgomots o? What is going on?"

Me: "Kgosi calm down, you are scaring her?" Who am I lying, I'm also scared because I have never seen him this furious.

Mots o: "They found....they found a cancer tumor instead of the baby...."She cried

Kgosi:" But your family? Kgomots o what the heck is going? Your family.... I swear I'm going to kill someone today... "

He walked out furiously, his eyes turned red within seconds.... I ran after him...

[03/12, 15:31] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 72

Mercy M. Mofokeng

Me: "I know he will come around, he is just overwhelmed. You need to stop beating yourself up about this." Wisdom's behavior really shook all of us. I didn't expect him to be that mad and his mother is not taking it very well. We arrived home about an hour ago and she has been crying ever since.

Ruth: "Maybe is best if I leave nje, it's obvious that I'm not welcomed here."

Me: "You are not going anywhere Ma, we will find a way to fix this. I will talk to him again."

Ruth: "Mercy I don't want you to put your marriage at risk for me. I will go back to my house, I don't mind at all and beside try at you have already done

so much for me."

Mama: "At least you have spoken some sense ever since you got here. Mercy if I were you my baby I will distance myself from this woman because you don't know her like I do. Unfortunately I don't have any amount of pity in me for her. Until she tell the truth, of what she did her soul will remain restless."

Me:" Mama come on, give her a breakhle. She has been through a lot already. "

Mama:" She hasn't even served the punishment of half of the things she has done. This woman is so evil, filthy and ruthless. She doesn't have a heart. She can kill you without you know, that's how I know her and you my child, I feel sorry for you because you are playing with a snake's tail and it will turn around and bite you. I didn't say anything. "She walked out leaving me and Ruth.

Me:" Don't mind her, she is just bitter. Should I make you something to eat? "

Ruth:" No, I'm still fine, I just want to lie down a bit. "

Me:" Okay let me leave you then. Please don't think

too much about this whole, everything will be okay. I promise you."

Ruth:" Thank you so much, God bless you. "

I smiled and left her, mama need to calm down shame. I found her in the kitchen cooking with Khuts o on her back.

Me:" Mama was all that really necessary? The poor woman is going through a lot. Can't you just feel sorry for her? "

Mama:" Mercy you have always been the stubborn one out of all my children and you always learn the hard way. It's fine, I'm sorry for not being nice but one day you will cry. I will be right here to wipe your tears. Akere wena you are the boss, you can accommodate a snake, and feed it, it's alright, one day it will bite you and still I will be here to mend your heart, because I'm a good mother. "

Me:" Aowa mama, you are not being fair, she is

trying to change her ways, give her a chance hle,
just this once. "

Mama:" I will see that when she tells the truth and
right now, I will give you a chance to get hurt and
broken again. I'm too old to be running around
WITH Ruth while I know what kind of a monster she
is. I have learnt the hard way with her. "

Me:" You keep on talking about the truth, what truth?
"

Mama:" We are giving her a chance right? Let's do
that. "She continued with her pots leaving me
puzzled.

Me:" Let me help you with her, she is asleep. "

Mama:" Thank you. "

I took Khutso and went to out her to sleep but my
mind was running around now, could it be that Ruth
is still hiding things? But what can she possibly
hide when she is so knocked out like this? All she
wants is peace right? Yah, she just want peace with

her children and I have to help her. We all fall short in this life but never have we been casted out because of our mistakes and I'm not about to do that with her. She needs me now more than ever...

Palesa Ella Motaung

I found him seated on the bench outside, he was sad, broken and angry. I'm still shocked that there's no baby but the state in which Kgomots'o is proven us otherwise but what happened? Didn't she run the test or something? I mean the doctors could have ran the test or they could have seen detected something. Now cancer?

Now I have many questions and less answers. I mean I don't even know how the meeting went with the family and I won't ask until he is comfortable enough to let me in but I'm curious and eager to know what really went down.

Me: "Hey, are you okay?" I put my hand around his back and gently brushed him. He just went quiet flipping his fingers lost in his own thoughts. I let him get lost in his own thoughts as he needs time to gather himself.

Me: "Take your time, but remember that Anger never solves anything. For you to understand whatever is going on, you have to listen to her, maybe that will give you closure if you need one.." He still remained quiet and I was running out of words to say to him. I leaned my head on his shoulder and she slightly bumped down his and our heads collided gently.

Kgosi: "I just don't understand why would her family lie to me. They say there and lied about the baby. I'm pretty sure they knew what happened but lying?"

Me: "I also don't know why they lied, but maybe she will give you the answers you need."

Kgosi: "I know, I'm just hurt and angered by all this thing. What were they trying to achieve in lying to

us?"

I held his hand to assure him, I mean I didn't even know to say to him.

After some time he gathered himself and we went back inside. We found Kgomots o curled on the bed, still in tears. I honestly felt sorry for her.

Kgosi: "Ready to talk? "

Mots o: "I'm really sorry Kgosi."

Kgosi: "I didn't ask you if you are sorry or not, I said are you ready to talk?"

Me: "Kgosi, please calm down, breath."

He took a deep breath and he pulled the chair and said next her bed, i stood behind to keep him sane since he tend to loose it.

Mots o: "It all started when you were loosing interest in me, I know we agreed that no strings attached, but I caught feelings, and I knew having your child

will keep you around. And I did fall pregnant, well at least that's all I know and I did the pregnancy test and it was positive, and I even showed you, I did with you present Kgosi. It had two lines. (She paused a bit and wiped her tears) Then you told me that we can't be together because you don't love me. That hurt me Kgosi, it broke my heart. I thought our child will keep us together. When you bought me and our baby the apartment I thought you will visit but you never did, but you were always with her and you posted pictures of her in your social media, (she was looking at me) even though much weren't said on those pictures I got jealous. Jealousy consumed me, and I feared being a single mother too. So, my friend Tilly suggested that we go see her aunt's friend, she is a Sangoma, and she assured me that I will have you back and we did. The lady we went to see said I need to sacrifice one of my family member, and I didn't think much of it and I just said my grandmother. (She let out a painful cry). I just don't know how you arrived at that place that day but we left together and you were all over me. I swear I didn't mean no harm Kgosi. All

I wanted was to be with you. I wanted you to be mine.

And the following day my grandmother died. I didn't know that Sangoma was behind it until she came to me in a dream and congratulated me. Even on my grandmother's funeral she was there, standing there and my grandmother too. I swear I didn't want anything bad to happen, but things took any-turn, I dream of that Sangoma everyday, the other day, while we were still together, I dreamt being in labor, the contractions were so intense, and she appeared out of nowhere, I was laying on the bed and she parted my legs as if she was a midwife. She placed her hand in my private part and I felt some cold sensation and then suddenly the pain was gone and she smiled at me and walked away.

The following day when I woke up, I saw traces of blood on my thighs, it wasn't too much, but nothing seemed suspicious because I thought it was nail

polish the way it was and I didn't mind it. Then after my grandmother's funeral then it was my mother and she told me again in dream that well done, the sacrifice is complete, the trinity of the dark world is fulfilled.

Kgosi, I swear, I didn't plan everything, I didn't think that things will take a u-turn like this "

Yoh the whole revelation was just too much. Can people really do this for love? Go all black magic on a person in the name of love? End up sacrificing your own grandmother and your mother?

Kgosi:" Wow, I can't believe you right now. You sacrificed your own child, your own baby for what? For love that doesn't even existed? Then your family? Why did they lie?"

Mots o: "The plan was for them to ask your family money for my operation, but I told them I don't need

any operation, I deserve to die. I didn't even know if they went through with their plan. I swear I was never part of their plan coming to your place."

Kgosi: "Wow, I don't even know what to say to you. Cakes let's get out of here."

Motso: "Kgosi please..." Her plead fell on a deaf ear as we walked out with Kgosi pulling me. I guess I was still dumbfounded by everything going on.

We got in the car and drive away, I couldn't tell if he was angry, sad, mad or what. His emotions were not showing. His driving wasn't bad at all to show any frustration...

Wow...

[03/12, 15:31] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 73

Mercy M. Mofokeng

It's been a month now with Ruth living in her house, she left just a week after we realized that Wisdom has some people watching us and he made it clear that he doesn't want his mother anywhere near his child. So, to keep peace I decided to do as he says.

I have been visiting Ruth on regular basis to check up on her. She wasn't doing well, health wise and physical maybe even mentally, I mean she just get lost in her own world and that will be it.

I have been tell her to get someone to talk to but she refuses. I wish I can do something more to help her but she is not hearing any of it.

Just like any normal day after work, before I go to work, I passed by her house. I found her sitting outside on the shade already. The heat this side will

make you wake up and seat under the tree.

Me: "Ma, how are you?" She smiled faintly. Her eyes are no longer bright, there no life there anymore. That beautiful, elegant and stylish woman is gone. Her sins are eating her away and she refuse to forgive herself. Her children wants nothing to do with her. Yester I spoke to Oratile to come to see her mother but hey, she refused, she told me that she doesn't have a mother. She died the day she betrayed them.

Ruth: "Mercy, I'm fine and how are you?" She couldn't look me in the eyes. Her eyes were just wondering on the floor.

Me: "I'm good, I brought you breakfast and lunch, I will send one of the drivers at work to bring you food later on because I'm going to see Wisdom later on after work."

Ruth: "Thank you so much child. May God bless you. Can you do me a favour?"

Me: "Yes."

Ruth: "I'm coming." She quickly got up and limped her way into the house and returned after a while with 2 envelopes.

Ruth: "Please give this to Wisdom, ask him to read. I was hoping that Oratile can come home but it seems like she hates me too much, I also want to give this to her." She handed me the envelope.

Me: "You can give me both, I will find a way to look for Oratile and make sure she reads this."

Ruth: "Thank you so much. I will see you again tomorrow?"

Me: "Of course, I was thinking we go out tomorrow for lunch, just you and I. You need some fresh air."

Ruth: "I would love that, thank you." She smiled.

Me: "I will see you tomorrow then, let me go."

Ruth: "Okay baby."

I bit her goodbye and I left...I hope my husband will read this letter. He really needs to let go of the anger. I know his mother has not been the best

mother but she is still his mother after all. Nothing will change the fact that she gave birth to him and he is a man he is today because of that woman. She might have done so many wrongs dlthan right but who are we to judge her? If only he can let her explain maybe, or just talk it through and take it one day at a time...

Oratile Mofokeng

Staying with Kenzie's family has been a blessing but I really need to get my life together. I can't keep on doing this to myself. I lost my job about two months ago because I was always drunk, I feared to be sober and deal with reality. The fact that my so perfect family wasn't as perfect as everyone thought it is. And the fear of being alone creeped in and I lost it all to alcohol.

Kenzie has been a great help eversince and her mother didn't mind me staying with them but I'm

becoming a burden now, I need to get up and dust myself up and go back into the battlefield.

I went downstairs, Kenzie was not around, she must have left for work already. She is doing an internship in the accounting company in town. She didn't want to work in any of her family company, she is very ambitious if you ask me. I would have taken the job offer I'm sure it was coming with lots and lots of benefits but what can we say? Rich children's problems.

I found Kenzie's mother having breakfast all by herself on the huge Italian 16 seater build in dining, very classy and elegant, laptop and papers were all over the table.

I turned immediately when I saw her, I mean this woman is very intimidating but luck wasn't on my side, she saw me before I could even reach halfway through the door.

Maya: "Good morning to you too Oratile, please join me for breakfast." When I turned she was still looking on her laptop screen.

Me: "Good morning Ma'am." Her eyes landed on my, I can see she didn't like the fact that I called her ma'am through her eye glasses that made her look even more beautiful. She wasn't dressed up, she was in a white t-shirt and a Jean but she looked very beautiful hey.

Maya: "I told you to stop calling me Ma'am, Maya or mom, whatever you prefer."

Me: "I'm sorry."

Maya: "It's okay sweetheart. Fruit salad or gresy breakfast?"

Me: "Gresy breakfast please." I settled down opposite her.

Maya: "I will go make it for you then, make yourself comfortable."

Me: "Oh no, please ma'am...i mean Ma, I will make it

myself."

Maya: "Relax, relax, I invited you for breakfast, so I will make it, sit down and pour yourself some juice in the mean time."

I nodded and mumbled thanks and she disappeared to the kitchen.

Few minutes later she came back with tray of breakfast and she placed it before me. It looked so appetizing.

Maya:" Pleae enjoy. "

Me:" Thank you."She sat down and got back to her work while I enjoyed my breakfast.

Maya:" So, Oratile, what did you study? "Her focus was still on her laptop.

Me:" I studied Economics. "

Maya:" Nice, so what do you plan to do with your life? Wake up eat and sleep? "

Me:" No ma'am,... I mean Ma, I'm sorry. I'm looking for a job. "

Maya:" You don't look like someone who is looking for a job to me Oratile. You don't even come across as one."

Me: "I'm sorry..."

Maya: "Stop being sorry. We ll go through things in our lives but we don't wallow in our pain forever. Get up and dust yourself, no one will ever feel sorry for you in this world baby girl. If you don't change your attitude towards life, attitude will change your life. I'm not interested in knowing what went down in your life but I have been watching you for over a month now, drinking your life away, is that how you want to live your life? (I shook my head no), then change it, face your fears head on and fight, and fight to win. Drinking never solves any problems but it makes you a coward. Is that what you want to be?"

Me:"No" Tears ran through my cheeks.

Maya: "Then stop it, forgive what's hurting you. You

can't forever keep that pain deep inside you, it will destroy, let go baby girl. It doesn't help to hold on to something that keeps breaking you."

She got up and helped me to get up too

Maya: "Let go, it doesn't matter how bad it hurts, it's not worth it, it's not worth your life okay? Come here.(She squeezed me on to her comfortable chest and brushed my back smoothly) cry it out." boy did I cry? I cried...

Palesa Ella Motaung

Today it's a very big day for me. The agent managed to sell the house and she gave me the papers. I have only 30 days to move out, but my mother's family suggested that they buy me and Naomi a house around here but in town, so at least we will have a place called home.

The house was purchased about a month ago, and the renovations were being carried out recently by uncle Kwezi and uncle Busani, that's the least they wanted to do for us. We will be moving in soon, jst after we are done with the packing and everything that is necessary in the old house.

My aunts won't know what hit them this time around. I have been acting very innocent with them, like a pupet they take me for. Even Naomi doesn't know anything because she my have a slip of tongue and tell them our plans. Everything is coming together as planned

Advocate Molly and Kgosi managed to get hold of the faked will and the funny thing is that even the signatures are not the same. It was made clear that my father's will was updated when Naomi was born, both my parent signature is on that will and they have a written agreement for everything.

The farm has been operating under a different name, when my father's affair was made public, and my mother made sure that no one knows anything. I think it was because the farm was very close to her heart, it was her family business.

Now, everything is making a perfect sense.

The lawyers advised me not to say anything until the final day of moving.

Mokgadi: "Did you cook? I have important guests coming over today and I want you and your brat sister out of my way tonight."

Me: "Can I go out with Nthabiseng then?"

Mokgadi: "As long as you take your keys and you don't come back later."

Me: "I won't come back late, thank you."

She walked out and I texted Kgosi that I'm free today we can go eat out. He didn't take time to respond and he said he will pick us up in an hour. Music to my ears..

I enjoy going out more often than to sit here with my pretending fake aunts and listen to them talking rubbish about my mother all day. It has been their assigned duty to talk about my parents and bad name them.

I have began my therapy sessions again with Dr Matthew,, I only attend one session per week and I have been having another sessions with Kgosi's mother over the phone lately, she has been teaching me how to pray and forgive, especially to forgive my father. She told me that soon many things will come to light and I will understand.

My phone rang while I was finishing up to cook so I can get ready to go out...

Me: "Mercy?" I was shocked to receive a call from her. We haven't been the best of friends lately, we have been very distant especially after her whole husband saga coming to light.

Mercy: "Hey, Palesa, how are you?"

Me: "I'm fine, I'm fine, how are you?" I was still caught off guard

Mercy: "I'm also good thank you. Look, I know we are not best buddies, but can we meet for dinner tomorrow? I will pick you up."

Me: "Uhm okay, sure."

Mercy: "7 PM?"

Me: "Yah sure."

Mercy: "Sharp."

I hanged up and texted Nthabi and told her who just called and she called me back.

Nthabi: "If you dare go out with that witch, trust me

I'm not coming to pick you up when she dishes you out of nowhere."

Me: "Hiabo, who said she is going to dish me out of nowhere?"

Nthabi: "I don't know, but why would she want to meet with you at night?"

Me: "I don't know that's exactly what I want to ind out too."

Nthabi: "Dude you have a baby with the girl's husband and she was your best friend and now she wants to meet? Wake up chomie, mogirl wants to do something evil to you, revenge."

Me: "Hai suka, you are just reading too much into the line wena."

Nthabi: "Hehehe, Lord J es us Your child does n't want to listen ooo, okay fine I'm coming with you."

Me: "You are not going anywhere."

Nthabi: "Well she won't even notice that I'm there, just to keep an eye on you."

Me: "Bye Nthabiseng, I have a date to prepare for

tonight."

Nthabi: "Wena nah? Heee mogirl ke gore you have this guy eating from your pulm nje. You go girl but don't do anything I wouldn't do. We ain't want baby number 2."

Me: "We are not even dating relax."

Nthabi: "Only if you were not day dreaming about the guy, I will believe you but right now? I'm not a fool. Bye."

She hanged up... She is crazy this one.

[03/12, 15:31] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 74

Mercy M Mofokeng

Today I knocked off early to take Ruth out for lunch

she did enjoy it so much, just being out really lighten up her mood and when I told her that Wisdom agreed to read her letter she was over the moon.

I told her that I will drive to Joburg to see Oratile she posted a picture of herself a week ago with a tagged location and she has been lying when she said she is in Cape Town, she will definitely agree to meet up with me. Maybe this can be a mini vacation with my daughter, plus we haven't been anywhere since she was born, this will be our weekend together to just breath, away from everyone else.

I wish I can take Ruth with but with the state that Oratile is in right now, I doubt it's a good idea. She really needs to calm sown and find a way to deal with everything else because drinking your pain away is not a solution, when you wake up the problem will just be there maybe the pain even much deeper than yesterday.

I finished bumping the milk and dressed up, ready for my dinner with Palesa, I know for sure that I caught her off guard but we can't ignore each other forever. She has a child with my husband and it is our responsibility as mothers to get along for the sake of the child.

I really want Naomi to have a relationship with her father, that's the list I can do for her. If there's one thing I'm exhausted doing is to fight, I have been fighting all my life and somewhere somehow the fights needs to stop, I need to grow up and start acting like a responsible parent.

One day whatever happened to Palesa might happen to my child and I will need to step up for my child and not shy away from the problem and I will support from outside too because sometimes the burden shared is better than the burden kept on yourself only.

Me: "Mama, I'm going to pass by Ruth to give her super, I might come back late."

Mama: "Okay, don't forget to take your keys."

Me: "Okay, bye."

I drove out and stopped at Ruth's house, the lights were on. I will have to look for someone to keep the house clean and the yard clean for her.

I knocked twice and opened, I found her washing the dishes.

Me: "Ma, how are you?"

Ruth: "I'm good and how are you?"

Me: "I'm good, I'm not staying, I have to meet up with Palesa, I'm running late, I'm here to drop this." I placed the containers on the curboard.

Ruth: "Thank you so much Mercy, you are very kind."

Me: "It's nothing Ma, I really have to get going."

Ruth: "Before you leave, I know I'm asking too much but can you do me one last favour please."

Me: "Okay, what is it?"

Ruth: "I need to meet up with Palesa to apologize to her, I didn't treat her well when I heard that her daughter is Wisdom's child. I would really love to apologize to her."

Me: "Ohh, well okay, I will talk to her and see if she will agree to meet up."

Ruth: "That's all I'm asking. Enjoy your evening."

Me: "Thank you Ma, and please don't overwork yourself, I will find someone to help you tomorrow."

Ruth: "That will be unnecessary, I don't mind cleaning around, it helps to clear my mind."

Me: "Of you say so but you will need help to clean the yard, and that's none negotiable. I will see you tomorrow."

Ruth: "Okay Baby, bye."

I rushed to my car I drove to Palesa's house, I called when I was at the gate and she came out, wearing a Jean and floral top with sandals, she loved very nicely hey, I even feel over dressed in my short black dress and heels.

She got in.

Palesa: "Hey." She smiled and I smiled back.

Me: "Hey, you look beautiful."

Palesa: "If I didn't know any better I will say you are lesbian, but anyway thank you and you look beautiful, I even feel under dressed."

Me: "Come on, don't do that, you still look good."

Palesa: "Thank you. So, where are we going?"

Me: "I booked a table at the Ranch."

Palesa: "Hmm, you are monied neh?" I laughed and we drove away....

Wisdom Mofokeng

I went through the letter for the 3rd time and I couldn't believe my eyes. Every detail of that letter made my heart with pain. What kind of a monster is my mother?

Why would she lie about do many things?. God knows that I'm paying for my mistakes but I want my own mother to play triple what I'm already paying right now. I wonder if Mark knows about this nonsense his wife is telling me in this letter. The poor guy took us in and my mother was lying to him all along and not only that she also lied when she was supposed to tell us the truth. She made us believe that Palesa's father is my own father. The guy died knowing that he is our father and now this?

And she wants me to forgive her? How do you forgive such things? How do you even begin to comprehend everything that is happening? How do you forgive your own mother for this kind of pain? She denied us a right to know our father, yes he is dead, yes he was in jail and died there but we had a right to know who our father, she robbed us a chance to know our family from our father side. I'm so angry with her right now.....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I ordered a lamb shank and veges, I mean I'm not paying after all, I'm invited her and I really to make sure that I'm full before whatever she needs to tell me. She ordered and Ostrich mean and veges. We ate in silence but the silence was very awkward, we didn't have much to talk about. Our friendship lost value long time ago, I wonder what it is that brings us here because I doubt our friendship will ever work out even if we try to make it work.

Mercy: "I know you are wondering why we are here."

Me: "Hmm, I'm wondering why did you want to meet with me?"

Mercy: "Palesa, look, I know we haven't been the best of friends lately.."

Me: "Ahaha, hold it right there Mercy, you haven't been a good friend, I have been nothing but a good friend to you, but money changed you, or should I say 5 second fame changed me? If we are here to fix things? Let's be honest please." She moved uncomfortably but to be honest I don't want to build another relationship on lies or mend the previous relationship with lies.

Mercy:" Okay, I'm sorry, I know I haven't been a good friend to you in so many ways, a lot has happened that made me angry and jealous. You having a child with my husband really hurt me, I know it wasn't your fault, and you didn't plan to have a chd with him, but i wish you could have been honest with me Palesa when you were pregnant

with him, maybe I wouldn't have fell for the guy. I wish you were honest with me and trust me as your friend with your secret. I really thought we were close enough to share everything and only to find out when the child is 10 years old that Wisdom raped you and left you pregnant? Wow, so much of you being my friend. The reason I changed is because you drifted apart when you left, you didn't allow me in Palesa. Lele I was your friend, your ride and die. I shared everything with you but this? Maybe you should have saved me from making a fool out of myself but look now? My ex-best friend has a child with my husband. "

Me:" I feel you Mercy and I understand that I haven't been a good friend either but the question is would have believed me had I told you that Wisdom raped me? Would have believed me had I told you that I'm pregnant with Wisdom's child? Would you? "

Mercy: "Wow, what an insult Palesa. Really now? Dude you were my best friend. I knew you would have told me if you were dating but you never said a

thing, the only way to answer this question right now is this way...maybe you should have trusted me enough to tell me. Because clear it shows that you didn't trust me to tell me the truth. After so many times I tried to get reach of you. I called you so many times yet you lied with each and every call. You lied to my face everyday. You lied about having camed and you lied even about your own child saying she is your adopted sister. "

Me:" Okay, I get you but everything was beyond me Mercy, I didn't plan to lie to you, I didn't plan to keep everything from you. I didn't plan all of that but situation forced me to. My parents were ashamed of me, hence they moved me, I was also ashamed of myself Mercy, it was very hard for me to be out there pregnant and all by myself. Telling you meant more hate from father. And I didn't want to risk that, I was young and naiive and I do apologize for not being open with you. I apologize for hiding my pregnancy from you. I'm sorry, but just know that I didn't have it easy, it wasn't by choice that I hit the pregnancy from you but I did for the sake of my

family, I did for the sake of my mother and I'm sorry for trying to protect my parent's dignity by hiding the pregnancy, sorry for not trusting you enough. "

Maybe I was also wrong for not trusting her enough but how can a 15 year old keep such a secret from people. As much as I want to give her the benefit of a doubt I can't but had to apologize because I was wrong again.

Mercy:" I'm also sorry for being ass, I'm sorry for making fun of you, I'm sorry that I turned into something when I had to be your friend. I'm sorry for everything Palesa. We are mothers now and destine choose not to separate us. I want Naomi to be part of my family(I tried to stop her but she didn't let me) let me finish first please. Even if it's not now but in the near future, when you are ready and have healed from everything. I know what Wisdom did to you is unforgivable and I don't expect you to forgive him and I'm not here to speak for him, but Naomi

has every right to know her father, even if it's not now in the future when you are ready just know that my home is always welcome for her and you too. I really want to make this work, not for me only but for all of us. I'm exhausted of fighting Palesa, I'm tired to be honest. I want my child to have a stable home. I want her to grow up in a loving home. "

Me:" Thank you, in due time I really hope it will happen and I heard about the loss of your baby, I'm sorry. "

Mercy:" Thank you, it's part of life, we win some and we loose some. I'm also sorry about your parents. "

I smiled faintly, every time thinking about the fact that I dont have parents will always linger a sad taste in my heart. The pain will never go away but I guess with time i will learn to live without them.

Me:" Thank you. "

Mercy:" To new beginnings? "She raised her glass with a hopeful smile.

Me:" To a new beginnings"... We clicked our glasses and smiled

[03/12, 15:32] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 75

Palesa Ella Motaung

I'm nervous as hell, Kgosi and advocate Molly insisted that they serve my aunts with the court order today and she serves them with the notice today. Rakgafi Mokgadi is in a good mood today, she even bathed the kids and took them to school, Naomi included. I wonder if it was because of the guest she was hosting yesterday, I know better to ask her about that.

As for me, my night with Mercy went better than I anticipated it to be. At least we managed to sort out our differences even though I'm not sure about Naomi going to her house, but I will give it time maybe one day I will be able to look past what Wisdom did and forgive him but everyday I think about him now, I only see that fateful day and I hate to torture myself like that.

I will attend my therapy sessions and take it one day at the time. Take it easy on myself, I don't want to force myself to forgive anyone that I'm not ready to forgive.

And on the other hand Mercy said her mother in law wants to see me. For what? Is the question that leaves my mind all over the place and a bitter taste in my mouth. That woman hates me so bad, she actually hates everything about me and why now? Why now after everything she has put me and my

family through?

Indeed healing is a journey to a foreign land where you can only enjoy when you have finally healed. There's just so much to deal with right now.

My phone disturbed my long trail thoughts, it's a text from Kgosi telling me that they were outside, just as I was about to go to the gate my aunt walked in.

Mokgadi: "Your rich boyfriend is at the gate."

Me: "Oh, he sent me a text." I will never ever be comfortable in the presence of this woman. Ever since I started praying and reading the word of God, when I'm around her I always sense this heavy darkness around her but I can't just figure out what it is yet.

Mokgadi: "I hope he won't stay forever because Stella and Ditiro are coming over and you know how

much they don't like that boy."

Me: "Uhm, Rakgadi, actually they are here to see you and Rakgadi Stella and Ditiro.."

Mokgadi: "They? Him and who? And why do they want to see us?"

Me: "Can they come in and we wait for the rest to come and hear what they want to say?"

Mokgadi: "Palesa I hope you are not in trouble because you are enough problem for me already, I really hope you didn't get into trouble."

Me: "No, no, I didn't get into trouble Rakgadi."

Mokgadi: "Then why are they here? Are you getting married?"

Me: "No, let me go and get them"

Mokgadi: "Okay, I will call your other aunts."

I walked out, and went to fetch them at the gate. I didn't even want to look at her because her eyes were boring wholes on my skins already.

Me: "Hey." Kgosi and I hugged and he kissed me on the side of my face.

Kgosi: "Are you good?"

Me: "Yes but very nervous."

Kgosi: "We got you and I got you, no matter what." I smiled

Me: "Thanks, Advocate, how are you? "

Molly: " Couldn't have been any better, how are you? "

Me: " I'm good, this way please. "

We walked into the house and they all settled down after greeting my aunt, who was just sitting uncomfortably. She kept looking at her phone and starting outside hoping my other aunts arrives maybe? Well I don't care but the drama that will unfold here today? I'm not sure if I'm ready for it because truly speaking I have been anticipating this day for some time now.

Me: "Can I get you something to drink?" I tried to break the cold awkward silence.

Molly: "Water will do for me."

Me: "Okay, you Kgosi?"

Kgosi: "I'm good for now babes."

Me: "Okay, Rakgadi do you want something?" She shook her head absently dismissing me.

I went to the kitchen and I prepared refreshments for everyone because we are going to have a serious conversation and I believe some will be left thirsty and dry.

Mokgadi walked in.

Mokgadi: "Who is that lady with your boyfriend? What's going on here Palesa?" She try to keep it low.

Me: "I will introduce her when everyone gets here, relax. You have nothing to worry about."

Mokgadi: "Don't you dare tell me I have nothing to worry about while there are people with huge bags in my house. If I find out that you are in trouble, you are leaving with your aunts right away, I don't want any trouble here."

Me: "You have made yourself clear Rakgadi, there's no problem, trust me."

She nodded and Rakgadi Stella walked in making noise while Ditiro followed.

Stella: "I really hope that whatever you called us here for is important because I left a very imp...."
She stopped when she saw Advocate Molly. She nearly fainted I swear, luckily Ditiro was behind her back to hold her before she fell.

Ditiro: "What is she doing here? What's going on here Palesa? Mokgadi why did you call us here?" I

placed the tray of glasses on the table and sat next to Kgosi with my feet shaking.

Ditiro: "I asked a question damn it."

Me: "If you sit down I will explain why they are here."

Stella: "Your explanation better be good young girl, it better be." They all sat down around the table.

Molly: "I believe I don't need no introduction since you two know me, I'm here regarding this papers and this papers here." She handed them the court order and the eviction letter.

Stella: "What nonsense is this? You can't just evict us in my brother's house, he left this house for us."

Molly: "Unfortunately that's no longer up to you to fight, the new tenants will be moving in in two weeks time so, I suggest you start looking for a place to stay. And this court order, you are request to appear at court next week, you might bring your lawyers if you want to, but that will be unnecessary because we all know that you faked Mr William Pontsho Motaung's will. Here is the last Will and

tastement of Mr William Ponto Motaung and the letters that were updated before his grand child was born. And I have it on record on how he wanted his assets to be distributed. If you really want to contest that you are more than welcome to do that. Mr Mokoena, let's go. "

Ditiro:" Hey, you can't just throw this papers at us and up and leave. "

Mokgadi:" Stella, Ditiro, what the hell is going on here? Didn't you promise me that everything is taken care of? What nonsense is this? You promised me that the house is mine, where will I go with my kids now? "

Stella:" Stop making everything about you wena Mokgadi, we are in deep trouble and all you are thinking about is your brats? Those little brats of yours are not even William's children. " Eheh secrets are being revealed.

Mokgadi:" Oh now that things are changing you call my children brats, the very same brats that you

used to tame your own brother? Because what? You hated the fact that he loved his wife and child more than you guys? Because you guys were against him marrying Palesavs mother and you punished the poor woman by taming her husband to hate her and hate her own children? You used my children for this nonsense of yours, and you think I'm just going to sit here and watch you walk over me like some trash, you owe..." What? Wow, let's reverse what did she say? They made my father to hate me? My own father? Wow, how evil are this people Kante? What have we done to them to hate us so much?

Ditiro:" Stop it you too, this is not the time for backering. This is not the right place to talk about that. Stella put a leash on your anger and I suggest you also do the same Mokgadi. Wena Advocate, how did you get hold of that will? That's not my brother's will. I have my brother's lasted updated will and he was in a rocess of divorcing that good for nothing wife of his. This is not my brothers' will."

Molly: "Oh well you have right to contest the will, but make sure that everything is in order. And one more thing, if there happen to be nay physical, emotional threats on my client, that will also be used against you in the court of law."

I want even paying attention to them anymore because I was hurt by what they just said. I mean my father died while I knew he hated me. I my father so much because I believed he doesn't care about me and now this? Why, why?

Mokgadi: "I believe the game is over for us ladies..."

Stella: "Shut up wena, if you still want to have roof over your head and have floor to feet those million kids of yours, I suggest you shut up, zip your lousy mouth."

Mokgadi: "Call me whatever you Stella, but we both know that you have a roof over your head because of those million brats, you are driving German cars because of those million brats. So I suggest that

before you talk, you count your words because you can wake up homeless. Don't forget me Stella. Don't you dare, I will turn your life upside down within a second. "

Ditiro:" We heard you Ms money, we heard you, so advocate, please excuse us, we need to discuss this matter as a family. Thank you for bringing this and we will make sure that we don't come anywhere near your precious client. "

I don't even feel safe with this people, with so much said, they have every right to kill me to keep whatever it is they stole from my parents.

Molly:" Remember if anything happens to her, you will be the first suspects and obviously the first to arrest and I'm pretty sure that the locks will be thrown into the sea this time around. Take this as a friendly warning. Have yourselves a good day."

They got up and walked them out.

Kgosi:" Are you okay? "He asked as we walked out.
Advocate Molly was already in the car.

I shook my head no.

Kgosi:" You want me to stay?"

Me:" Please? " He kissed me on my forehead.

Kgosi:" I'm here now, we are in this together and we are in it to win. I will come back in few minutes, I have to drop Ms Molly at the office and I will come back, okay?"

Me: "Than you."

Kgosi: "I love you." He pecked my lips and walked away.

When I turned the 3 ladies were standing at the door looking at me deviously, what do I do now?

[03/12, 15:32] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 76

Palesa Ella Motaung

Their eyes were filled with rage, anger, bitterness and so many other evils that I can't put across. I didn't even know if I should step closer or just run by the way they were looking at me. If silence can kill, I will be dead by now. I took a deep breath and managed to gain a second courage and I walked towards them.

I can't continue to live in fear anymore. I remember Kgosi's mother's words when my mother was in a coma she said, when two powers collide, the lesser power must bow and right now, I don't think my power will bow to theirs. The little I have learned about God recently is more than enough to carry me through.

I walk past them, no scratch that, I passed right in between them they actually made a space for me to pass. Yes, that's it. I walked to my room and I laid on the bed. Just when I was getting lost in my fantasy world my door opened and Stella was standing at the door.

Stella: "What would like to eat?" Hahaha is she kidding me? Does she really think I'm that stupid?

Me: "I'm fine thank you."

Ditiro: "Ngwana buti, you have to eat something. It's been a long day phela."

Me: "Rakgadi please cut the crap, I want nothing from you guys, ke sharp. I'm good I'm fine. And please close the door on your way out."

Ditiro: "Wow, Palesa is it really you doing this to us? Your own aunts? Do you even think that boy loves you? He will chow all this money your father left you and leave you dry."

Me: "At least he didn't fake my father's will and he didn't perform any witchcraft on my father to have me. At least his intentions are right and innocent not like yours. Evil, you stole from my grandparents and now you still want to still from me? Please leave me alone. "

Ditiro:" Fine, don't come crying on us when the world turned against you. "

Me:" Trust me I wouldn't even bother myself. Ke sharp. "

They harshly closed the door and walked out....

Mokgadi Motaung

I drove to Dabulamanzi's house, I can't afford to lose everything to that little brat. She doesn't know me this one. If her aunts are going to beg her, I'm not about to do that. I worked very hard to get to where I am today and if they really think I'm just

going to let her go free then they are crazy. Not with my money. William was forever mine.

I found her in her consulting house. I took off my shoes and walked in and sat down.

Dabulamanzi: "Your soul is weary and heavy child, what could be wrong?"

Me: "She won great mother, she is taking everything and now she is even selling the house."

Dabulamanzi: "But I told you child that the inky way for you to have everything is to sacrifice your own blood. Other people's blood don't satisfy the great mother of darkness. Your first fruit is needed that's the only way the great mother of darkness can be satisfied and you will have all the disers of your heart. You won't even have to work a single day in your life."

Sacrifice my own child? My first born? Phela my first born is William's child the only link I have to get

the wealth if I fail in this ev route, maybe the legal way I can win something.

Me:" Can't I sacrifice William 's daughter of the first wife? "

Dabulamanzi: "Your blood and Williams are the one needed here. William and the other woman' s daughter won't work and don't forget that that daughter of yours is the daughter of the darkness. She was conceived because the great mother of the darkness made it happen. If it wasn't for the great mother, she won't be there. Give Siza what bongs to Siza. You have only 3 days to bring the sacrifice or everything will crumble down even more. Go now, Go, and don't look back. "

Damn it...

Londiwe Cele-Mankoe

I was having a divine visitation from Mam'Tabitha. I was dreading this day and now it is here. I knew this will happen with how things have been going with Palesa and Kgosi.

Mam'Tabitha:" Child, the time has come now. We have to move very fast before the underworld capture her."

Me: "I know Ma, I know, I just didn't think it will be this soon."

Mam'Tabitha: "I know child, but there are many souls out there that are waiting for you. The people of God are perishing because of lack of knowledge. You have stayed too long in this area, now it's time to break the camp and move. She needs to realize her call. They need to step up now. You and your husband have to leave not later than next year. By this time next year you are supposed to have been in more than 6 countries. "

Me:" But she still need to be taught about her gift, and how to go about it. She still needs mentoring on

ministry. "

Mam'Tabitha:" No, leave that to God. God needs no scholar of ministry to use a person. When God avails himself in a man, that's all she needs. From tonight she will have Devine encounters along with your son. Their dreams will be the same. Her eyes will be opened. One thing I believe will be difficult for her is to forgive those who have done wrong to her, but that's nothing we will work on it. You have to move. You have to hand over the church sooner that we have anticipated. Don't worry about anything. Let the peace that surpasses all human understanding guard your heart.

Prepare yourself along with your husband. 40 days and 40 nights fasting, God will direct you where to do it and He will order your steps. The time is now. "

I nodded as she held my hand and prayed then left.

Me: "If it is your will Lord, let it be done. I have nothing against your will." Going on missions has been one thing I have been dragging in my life and now it is here. Taking Jesus to the world, I hope Palesa won't freak out about this whole thing. That child has been through the most and now she has this huge responsibility on her shoulders. Hmmm, indeed things of God need no qualifications and there are too complicated to understand.

I got out of my prayer room and went downstairs, I found my husband in his own thoughts on the kitchen counter.

Me: "Are you okay?" I wrapped my arms around him from the back.

Tebogo: "Yeah, I'm fine, I just didn't know it will be so soon."

Me: "Me either, but what can we say?"

Tebogo: "Do you think they are ready for this kind of

responsibility?"

Me: "I don't know Sugar, but who are we to go against the will of God? I have seen this coming with the way things has been happening in Palesa's life but I didn't anticipate that it will be her. I mean when I connect the dots with what happened to me before I met you, the events are nearly the same. "

He turned and held me closer to him.

Tebogo:" Yah neh, I know understand it. So, the prayer? How are we going to do it? "

Me:" I don't know, we will pray for more direction. I just pray that they don't drag their feet in this Sugar.. "

Tebogo:" We will pray for them Snuggles. We really have to pray for them really hard. "

Me:" True, are you angry? "

Tebogo:" For you, yes I am." He smiled mischievously...

Palesa Ella Motaung

I felt this heavy presence around me, I don't know how but I felt like there was someone in the room but when I looked around there was no one. I guess I'm just paranoid with how things are in the house. It was close to school out, I don't know if Mokgadi will agree on going to fetch Naomi after the whole event that happened today. I called Nthabi's mother to ask her to come with her when she come home and she agreed. I slowly got up on the bed with the heaviness that I was feeling and I slowly opened the door and walked out.

I was intrigued by the conversation that was going on in the lounge. They must have not heard me when I opened the door.

Stella: "The only way out if this mess is to kill her and her child. In that way we will avoid loosing everything and going to jail."

Ditiro: "How do we kill her? Did you hear what her

lawyers said, if anything happens to her we will be the prime suspects."

Stella: "I know, but we have Dabulamanzi in our corner. We can arrange that she makes it look like a natural death. We will leave tomorrow and go home and we arrange with her to mix something up, right now it's just the two of us. I don't trust Mokgadi at all. She might turn against us and she might want to inherit everything by herself. Hence we need to move. We have to be one step ahead of her and be very vigilant."

Ditiro:" Yah, that can work in our favour too, right now we have to make her trust us. We must make sure that she trust us, even that advocate. We follow all the protocols and we show up at court so they don't become suspicious of anything and when they are still in it, we strike. "

Stella laughed, her laugh was very evil and I woke up.

What the hell? I was dreaming all along?

Me:" Jesus, what's going on?"

Voice:" Be wise as serpents and innocent as doves. I looked around and there was no one around. I saw my Bible on the sideboard. I know those words they sound very familiar. I took the Bible and I opened Matthew 10: and my eyes landed right on verse 16. "Behold, I am sending you out as sheep in the midst of wolves, so be wise as serpents and innocent as doves." " what?? What's going on? I held my head, hoping maybe it's another dream...

I checked the time and it was just after 3, Naomi must be very mad wherever she is. I quickly got out of bed and went out, I found them in the lounge, it was Stella and Ditiro. Just the two of them laughing??? Could this be the dream I had?

[03/12, 15:32] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 77

Kgosi Mankoe

I'm on the phone with Palesa, she is talking gibberish to me because I can hardly hear what she is saying. The only thing I hear is Naomi, what Naomi is doing I can't figure that out because she is talking faster than I can catch up with.

Me: "Cakes, slow down I can hardly hear you, you are not making any sense."

Palesa: "Kgosi are you even listening to me?"

Me: "I'm listening but I don't understand what you are saying and I can't be on the while I'm driving."

Palesa: "Why didn't you connect to your Bluetooth what what?"

Me: "Because I didn't think I will have any phone call. Are you calm now."

Palesa: "How can I be calm when I don't know where my baby is? Naomi is not home, she didn't come from school."

Me: "Okay I will be right there, I'm coming."

Palesa: "Make it snappy."

Me: "Okay."

I'm exhausted to be honest with you, this past few weeks has been hell to me. I just need a day to rest and adjust back to reality.

I can't take it anymore, my eyes are slowly shutting down each and every second. Maybe I should stop just for few seconds and stretch my feet.

Something in me was eager to stop the car but I just kept on going, I kept driving with no care. In my mind. I thought I'm within the speed limit. I don't know how I saw a lady right in front of me out of nowhere, I tried so hard to control the wheel but it

got out of control I did u-turn to the side I hit the tree.....

Mercy M. Mofokeng

Wisdom asked that I come with his mother to see him today. I asked for half a day at work to see him. I told Ruth that I will pick her up. She wasn't that thrilled that her son want to see her and I convinced her otherwise. She is the one who wrote the letter to her and maybe he want peace with his mother.

When I arrived at the house she was all set and ready to hit the road. She was very quiet throughout the ride, I didn't want to disturb her maybe she is just nervous about this whole visit. I think I will feel the same if I was in her shoes. I mean knows what's in Wisdom's head.

We were now seated in the waiting area, she is very uncomfortable by the look of things or maybe too nervous as she taping her feet on the ground.

Me: "Are you okay?" She nodded

When the inmates door open she quickly got up, maybe ready to run away but she didn't her chest was pounding up and down.

Wisdom sat down furiously, he didn't even greet us like how a normal person should greet when you see people you haven't seen in a while.

Me: "Hello to you too Wisdom, we are good thanks and how are you? Yes even Khutso is fine. She is missing her father." Sacam.

Wisdom: "How could you Mama? How could you be so cruel?"

Me: "What are you talking about?"

Wisdom: "I'm not talking to you Mercy,."

Me: "You can't just come here and start shouting at us Wisdom. You don't even greet us and yet you come up here with your lousy attitude, what's wrong with you?"

Wisdom: "Mercy I said this is not your business, stop being noisy because you are annoying me so bad."

Ruth: "I'm sorry, I'm very sorry Wisdom. Please forgive me."

Wisdom: "Forgive you? Are you even listening to yourself? How many times were you given a chance to be honest and you kept on lying and lying and being manipulative." he was trying to speak calmly but anger continue to consume him each and every second. The wardener was even looking at us suspiciously.

Me:" You seriously need to calm down."

Wisdom:" Don't you dare tell me to calm down. Did she tell you that she lied about who my father is? Did she tell you that Palesa's father is not my father as she claimed. Did she tell you that she is

responsible for Palesa's mother's explosion? Did she? Yet you walk around with her like you bestie. This woman is very cruel. She doesn't deserve to live. You lied to Mark, the man who loved you unconditional over and over again and you were not even ashamed of it. I no longer want to see you, you are not my mother but just a woman who carried me...maybe my father could have been a better parent than you could have ever been. You don't deserve to be called a mother. "

What the hell? Ruth was in tears. I did even know what to believe or what to say

Palesa Ella Motaung

Kgosi's phone was taking me to voicemail. I tried so hard to get in touch with him but he was not available.

It was getting late and I didn't even know where to

begin to look for Naomi, I know she is frustrated where ever she is, not only that but scared too.

I went to Nthabiseng's house and I knocked a couple of times. Her mother opened the door.

Naledi: "Palesa, I thought you were not around, come in."

Me: "Thank you, I'm so sorry for bothering you, I have been trying to get hold of Kgosi but his phone is taking me to voicemail, I forgot to fetch Naomi at school and...".

Naledi: "Naomi is here. You called me and asked me to fetch her earlier on."

Me: "Oh did I? My mind must be playing tricks with me. I'm so sorry."

Naledi: "It's okay baby sit down. You need to take it easy, you need to rest or else you will get a mental block."

Me: "Yah, where is she?"

Naledi: "She went to the mall with Nthabi, I thought you were not around."

Me: "Oh, I had visitors earlier on. Let me get going then. I will fetch her when they return."

Naledi: "Okay and do rest please."

Me: "I will do so, thank you Ma."

Naledi: "You are welcome sweetheart."

I went back home, now I'm worried about Kgosi. Where the hell is he? He was supposed to be about 20 minutes ago and he is not here and his phone is no longer going through. I hope for his own good he is fine.

I found my aunts cooking, Mokgadi was also back she was seating in the couch with her kids eating take aways. We are used to this kind of life now. Everyone eat whatever they cook and what they buy. With her it's a norm. She can but takeaway for her kids and don't buy for Naomi. It used to hurt me and

Naomi a lot but we are used to it now. I make sure that every Fridays or Saturdays at least I treat her with something junkie and special so she doesn't feel left out. I'm just happy that soon, everything will be a history, we won't have to live like this anymore.

Stella: "Sesi, we are making lamp chips and veges. Your favorite, please go and bath, food will be ready in few minutes." Eh, is she talking to me?

Me: "I'm fine, I already ate."

Stella: "Come on, we are just trying to be nice here."

Me: "That's the thing, I don't need you to try to be nice to me. You don't have to, I don't need your niceness."

Stella: "Oh wow, I see that money really does change people."

Me: "Speaking from experience?" I raised my one eyebrow.

Stella: "Wow, I can't believe this. I don't even know why I bother myself."

Me: "You shouldn't even try to bother hey, because I don't care. I'm going to sleep."

Stella: "I hope you will die of hunger."

Me: "Oh and be the the main suspect of my death."

Ditiro: "Come on you too, stop it. Is there any need for you to always be at each other's throats like this?"

Stella: "She is very ungrateful this one. She thinks she own us."

Me: "I'm sorry that my presence shakes you madam, it wasn't my intention. Relax, I'm very harmless but I'm watching you."

Mokgadi: "I wonder where you got the audacity to talk back this days. Ms lawyer and Bae lawyer give you one?"

Me: "Nope, unfortunately they didn't. The very same way you get the courage to always threaten me in my house, is the same way I got the audacity to talk back."

She charged at me with her hand up ready to slap

me and I held it.

Me: "Don't, don't even think about it even in your wildest dreams, I'm not your child not even your toy."

I walked out and locked my room...

ER

Nurse: "We are losing him doctor, sir please don't close your eyes, look at me, we are getting to the hospital right away. Hurry up please."

The paramedics were trying very hard to stabilize the stranger they found on the road side. He kept on slipping in to slumber and waking up. The drivers were trying their level best to drive as fast as they can but the traffic was bad.

Nurse: "We are losing him Malcom, please hurry

up, his pulse is fading, please Malcom."

Malcom: "We are here now..." Malcom rang the emergency bell on the car and the nurses rushed out to meet them outside with a stretch along with a doctor.

Dr: "What's the case. "

Nurse: "Broken leg and some other aparts, and possibility of internal bleeding. Pulse fading away and shortness of breath. "

Dr: "Clear the emergency room, and get the equipment ready, someone notify the family.

Nurse: "Unfortunately the car is burned beyond recognition Dr, we have called the police to check it. We are still shocked in how he managed to escape the burning car. "

Dr: "Just make sure that you find his family. Let's go...."

They rushed inside...

Londiwe Cele-Mankoe

Me: "Sugar, something is wrong, I can feel something is not right at all."

Tebogo: "What's wrong? Are you okay?"

Me: "Yes, I'm fine but something is not right Sugar, something is not right. Jesus, something is not right Hmmmm Lord I stand against any plans of the family to destroy my family. I nullify the spirit of dead hovering around my children. I cover my children with the blood of Jesus. I build the hedge of fire to surround my children. I refuse with my children. Devil you are a liar. You can't touch my family. "

Felt something being ripped inside me, I felt a huge void deep inside of me and I felt a weight heaviness, not just any ordinary heaviness, but sorrowful heaviness. I felt the gap in the realm of the spirit. Something is not right....

Me:" Lord I know you reveal to redeem. I plead the blood of J esus, over our cars, my children's cars. Over our beds, everywhere my children are sleeping. J esus take charge over my husband's life, take charge over Kgosi's life, take charge over Lindokuhle's life, take charge over Lethubuhle's life. I refuse the devil with their lives. I refuse, I refuse, I refuse, I cancel every satanic plan, every demonic plan over their lives...

[03/12, 15:32] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 78

Mercy M Mofokeng

I don't know how I was feeling about what Wisdom revealed to me about his mother. Trust me I don't want to be judgemental at all, but this is too much, how does one person ruined so many people's lives all at once. She broke a family, not only that she

killed a person. A mother for that matter. I couldn't sleep the whole of last night thinking about what she has done and truly speaking, I don't even know what to do. I didn't know how to start fixing things between her and her son.

I want us to be a family again, I want peace and I was dead serious and I'm still serious about that wanting my family back together, but now things are bit complicated.

I fixed myself once more as I prepared to go to work.

Mama: "You still haven't told me what's bothering you." She disturbed me.

Me: "It's nothing Ma, really."

Mama: "You know I'm still your mother right?"

Me: "I know mother. I think it's about time I move back to my house." I caught her off guard.

Mama: "Why? Are you uncomfortable here? Is there something I did that made you feel uncomfortable?"

Me: "No, mama, you have been nothing but a great help to me and Khuts o, but we need to move on now."

Mama: "Hmm, if you need to talk you know where to find me." She walked out leaving me to go back to my thoughts.

I wonder if Oratile is fine wherever she is. If she finds out about what her mother has done, it might finish her off. She might not recover from this whole thing. Already her brother is crumbling down with lots of emotions and anger, which I don't blame him but staying angry forever won't do any help.

Many lives were ruined by this whole situation, hers included. How do I look Palesa in the eye from now on? Maybe it's best if they meet up and talk the two of them. Maybe she needs to give Palesa the closure she really needs this time around. I mean

her mother's case just disappeared from the surface of the earth just like that. No one has ever went extramile to find exactly what happened to her mother.

The explosion was ll over the net, but no one seemed to care about it. Our justice system failed to bring closure that little broken girl needed. And now having to tell her that every same person who orchestrated the explosion is my own mother in law, the very same person, I wanted to make peace with, how do I trust her now?

Mercy, this is beyond you girl, it is too much for you my lovey, you need to find a way....

Oratile Mofokeng.

Today I got a call from Wizzy, which is very strange and rare, we never really talk, eversince the whole

family ordeal and after he got arrested. We became strangers, simply because we all had our own demons that we needed to deal with and our way of dealing with things are not the same.

To be honest life hit us where we never thought it will. Things just changed within a blink of an eye. We were still relaxing when events turned on us. And yet we are still trying to grasp everything but by bit. I haven't done enough healing yet, I haven't done even a bit of it because I didn't even know where to start.

I fear revisiting the events of the past because they have been haunting me even in my sleep. I hardly sleep because of everything that happened.

Wisdom: "Sis? Are you still there?" My mind must have been off again.

Me: "Hey, yes, yes I'm still here. What were you

saying?"

Wisdom: "I was asking when are you coming this side?"

Me: "I don't know Bro, I don't know if I want to come back there. That place holds nothing for me anymore. I just want to forget all about it and move on."

Wisdom: "I know, I really feel you. But there is something else that I think you need to know." He sounded so serious.

Me: "Is it that bad?"

Wisdom: "I guess."

Me: "What has she done now?"

Wisdom: "The worst that you can think off. I really think you need to come home first and let us deal with this first and we will find a way forward afterwards."

Me: "Woah, okay. I will see when I will be able to come. I have to go. Take care of yourself."

Wisdom: "You too sis, I love you."

Me: "I love you too, bye."

Wisdom: "Bye."

Kenzie was looking at me when I put the phone back into my purse. She was worried about me. Eversince I spoke to her mother the other day, she has been on my casing because apparently I have been too quiet.

Today we visited Lindo, but my mind wasn't here. I just wanted to stay in bed the whole day. Luckily I, Lindo is not boring, he can crack few jokes and we all laugh but I can't pretend to be happy, that's just me. I have been trying so hard to get involved in their conversations but it's not for me.

I sat down and Kenzie's eyes were boring wholes on my skin.

Kenzie: "Are you okay?"

Me: "Me, of course I'm okay. I'm fine." A huge fake smile plastered on my face.

She nodded and we all continued to listen to Lindo but my mind would date back to what Wisdom said. What could be the huge thing that she has done this time around?

Palesa Ella Motaung

We have search all hospitals that we know for Kgosi but still we haven't found him. His parents arrived this morning and his mother sensed that there could be something wrong, so we have been out and about the hospitals and morturies looking for Kgosi with no success.

We were at the B & B they booked. My legs were killing me. No one has said a single word ever since we began with the search. We searched to a point of them hiring a car do we can all go look and

separate places. I was driving with his mother. She never said a single word to me in the car. I know this woman, well I thought I knew her but today she was too quiet like she would normally be. I don't blame her. I'm also worried about Kgosi. I'm so worried that I don't even want to think about other possibilities.

Dada: "I think we should go to the police and open a missing person case."

Londi: "No" She quickly said and stood up all at once.

Londi: "I don't think that will be wise. This is something beyond us. I might not have any idea where he is but involving the police in spiritual things might not be wise."

Palesa: "So, are just going to sit here and do nothing? What if something terrible..."

Londi: "God forbid, nothing terrible will ever happen to my son. I refuse. I suggest that we all eat and rest. Maybe something will come up. We are all

exhausted I guess. Palesa you will use the other room. We will be in the room next door. You can order food if you are hungry. Sugar let's go. "I just nodded and they walked to the other room hand in hand.

" Kgosi where are you? I really hope you are safe wherever you are." I sat down on the couch until I fell asleep.

Voice:" Come, take my hand. "

Me:" Who are you? Where are you taking me? "

Voice: "We are running out of time, and I need to show you something."

Me: "We are running out of time to do what? Who are you? Show me your face."

Voice: "Take my hand so that you can see me." I took her hand and got up and I saw her. A very beautiful lady with a beautiful hair. Her face so radiant, as if there was something shining on her

face that was beyond the natural light or what men can manufacture. When I looked at her hand it was shining too, glowing and radiant.

Me: "Wow, who are you?"

Voice: "That doesn't matter for now. But I want you to listen to me very carefully. I'm giving you this instruction to save the one you love dearly."

Me: "Okay."

Voice: "His life is in your hands and what you are about to do from today now onwards. His soul has been captured by someone close to you because they want to get to you. They are doing this to distract you, but I want you not to lose focus. Focus, focus and focus. You will go over that mountain there, (she pointed a familiar mountain) don't tell anyone where you are going. Take your Bible and a bottle of water only. You will stay on that mountain for four days. God will meet with you on that very mountain and He will begin to speak mysteries to you. Some of the things He will say you might not understand but when you come back

you will begin to understand them. You remain on that mountain for four days and on the fourth day you will know exactly where your loved one is. Then you will receive an instruction of how you will help him. Remember even his parents don't know where he is, you will be the first person to know, and when you find out, keep quiet. Don't say a thing to anyone until you bring him back home safe and sound. I'm clear. "

Me:" Yes, will I be alone on that mountain? "

Lady:" No, the Lord your God will be with you. He is waiting for you. Get up and go, and don't say a word to anyone. Don't worry about anything and anyone. Even if they try to look for you, they won't find you until you complete this mandate. The hand of God is upon you. Don't be afraid, don't be dismayed for your God, the Holy of Israel is with you. Go... Go.... Go.... Go"

I slowly got up and still heard the echo of her voice.

Who was that? It was almost dark and I saw the Bible on the table. I thought I have left it at home?

Voice: "Go, time is not on your side." The voice came again but I couldn't see the person that was talking.... I have snever been to that mountain and people say witches stays on the very same mountain....maybe they want to capture me too...

[03/12, 15:32] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 79

Oratile Mofokeng

Kenzie's mother offered to take me home, actually she forced to take me home. I didn't want her to come with me and witness the kind of broken family I come from. I dont wish that she will meet with my mother. I hate that woman with every Fibre in me. God know how much I don't want to resort to hating her but I can't help it anymore.

What she has done to me is enough to make me sink into another version of me that I don't like.

Maya: "Are you ready to go?" She asked as hse buckled her car seat. Kenzie was already standing at the window of her driver. She has been sulking saying she wants to leave with us but her mother refused because her baby brother is coming home this coming weekend.

Kenzie: "Babes please, I will come back on before the weekend and beside that Oratile is my friend not yours."

Maya: "But she your friend and you are living under my roof babes hence it's me who have to make sure that she is home safe. Capeesh?"

Kenzie: "Yah, yah whatever babes. Have a safe trip. I love you and please come in one piece I heard that Limpopo can be one hell of a province." She kissed her mother. They have a very beautiful close relationship. I hardly hear Kenzie calling her mother,

mama or mommy, it's forever babes, or girl and that's how they address each other.

Me:" Are you trying to insult people from Limpopo? "

Kenzie: "Opps, askies I didn't mean it like that but just be safe guys. And please do come back."

Me: "We will, take care of yourself too."

Maya: "And your Grandma will be here anytime from now. Bye."

Kenzie: "Bye".. We drove in a comfortable silence. We stopped at the garage near by to get some snacks for the road and refreshments. I expected this trip to be a drag but she made it bearable. We had a conversation here and there about fashion, cars and other things and I would fall asleep as she drives.

She woke me up when we were in Mokopane Town, I didn't think she will drive until this far without asking me about direction but she did hey, all thanks the GPS. I gave her directions to my house.

As we got closer and closer to home, my breathing pipes were slowly closing out. I didn't expect to come back here so soon. Didn't think I will ever set my foot in this house ever again. A place I once called home has now become my nightmare. She stopped at the gate and switched off the engine, and looked at me.

I was trying so hard to be like this but I couldn't help, everything began to replay again in my mind. The day I saw my father, I mean Mark looking so defeated and drained that particular day when my so called mother decided to tell me the truth.

Maya: "Are you okay?" She placed her hand on mine. I nodded.

Maya: "The only way to get over this, is to face it. It's not going to be easy, but do it for yourself. It doesn't help to hold so much anger for someone who is free, living their lives without a care in the world. Do it for yourself baby girl. Release this hatred that you have in you. Okay? "

Me:" Yes, thank you for coming with me. "

Maya:" You are welcome baby, ready to go in? "

I nodded."

Maya: "Come let's go in".. We got out and went in....

Mokgadi Motaung

If there's one thing the Motaung sisters they think I'm stupid and I will forever hide behind them. I'm always two steps ahead of them. Capturing that boy's soul was a perfect idea that Dabulamanzi ever came up with. Stella and Ditiro knows nothing about our plans yet simply because I want everything to my name. We are going to wipe out this boy's memory and make him to make those papers to disappear.

Palesa won't know what hit him this time around. If she really though she can just come and have everything I have been working so hard for then she

has another thing coming. When we are done with this lover boy of his. We might as well kill him, he will be useless. And as for the Motaung sisters, they will be kissing my ass. I will mop the floor with their hairs..

Oratile Mofokeng

Kenzie's mother knocked softly, my heart rate was very high. I couldn't even help but look nervous to see my mother. I don't know what's going to happen when I see her really.

She opened the door. She looked very frail, old and sick. There are so many things that I wish I could do to her but I can't, because her presence is defeating me. The way she looks took all my strength.

Ruth: "Oratile? You came?" She tried to hug me but I stepped away.

Maya: "Good day Ma'am, how are you?"

Ruth: "Hello, who are you?"

Maya: "I'm Maya Williams-Jones, Oratile is friends with my daughter, she has been staying with us all this while."

Ruth: "OH, thank..."

Me: "Can we please come in?" I interrupted her, she was annoying me.

Ruth: "Yes, please come inside. "We walked in, at least the house was clean and everything was in place. We sat down and she offered us some drinks but I didn't want anything. I just wanted to know what the hell is going on and Kenzie's mother saw the impatience in me and she suggested that she will leave us to talk.

Me: "What's going on? Wisdom called me yesterday and told me that you still have secrets that are eating you up. Ain't you tired of keeping all this secrets?"

Ruth; "I'm tired, hence I want to make things right. I

have realized that I have been hurting you and I want to apologize."

Me: "Oh wow, that's rich coming from you. I guess you are dying hence you want to peace?"

Ruth: "I'm sorry for everything Nana, please find it in your heart to forgive me."

Me: "Don't call me Nana, and I don't think I will ever be able to forgive you for what you have done. You have broken our family apart mama, you broke me, you lied, cheated and you were never remorseful about it. You chose a man over us, over your marriage and now you want forgiveness? I don't have it. Now the man you said is our father died, had he not died where you going to apologize? Were you going to feel sorry?" She kept quiet and looked down.

Me:" I thought as much, you are not sorry. You don't hurt people you love and come back and apologize. You don't deserve to be a mother, maybe you and that so called father of mine you deserve each other. Maybe you should just die and follow him to the

nearest hell. " tears filled her eyes and her lower lip was trembling.

Ruth:" He is not your father. "That came out as a whisper but I heard her...

Me:" Excuse me? What did you just say? "

Ruth:" I'm sorry I lied... "

Me:" Wow, I don't even know why did I bother coming here. Truth has never been part of your vocabulary and I doubt your apology is honest. You lied again about who my father is? For what? At what caused? Go to mama, I hate you. From today you no longer exist in my life. I don't have a mother and a father and all thanks your selfish ass. "

I got up and left with my heart throbbing. I don't know which part was breaking me more, but I wish I was never born, I wish she was never my mother to begin with... I need to go and see Wisdom....

Palesa Ella Motaung

Today has been the most toughest day ever, last was okay, I slept peacefully on top of the huge rock. I don't know how I got here but I felt a strong feeling edging me to go. I didn't even know how I got here but I was being led by someone or something. Nothing much happened yesterday, I just needed to rest and it was but chilly, so made fire I don't even know how the fire came alive. It was as if when I set my mind to do something it was being done.

So today I have been wandering around the mountain, taking a walk while praying, I didn't even know what I was praying for but I just kept on praying for so many things, and so many people. Any name that came to my mind i was praying for that particular person. I haven't eaten, the bottle of water I came with its finished, my throat is dry, I'm hungry and exhausted.

I took a walk towards a huge tree that was in front

of me. As I was about to sit down, something pushed me aside, I was alone, no one was there. I looked around to check who was pushing me aside, but there was no one. I attempted to go sit again and the force became much greater and I fell on my butt.

Lady: "You are very stubborn neh?" The lady I saw in my dream the yesterday appeared, still in her splendor.

Me: "You again? I'm not dreaming right?"

Lady: "You are wide awake." The other lady who I saw months also appeared.

Lady2: "Still remember me?" She was also beautiful their hair was very beautiful not forgetting their flawless skins.

Me: "Yes, I remember you."

Lady: "Let's get down to business. There are so many evil things that have been done on this mountain. So many souls are connected to this

mountain and even that of Kgosi, your husband."

Me: "He is not my husband."

Lady: "Oh well, soon to be husband then. Where you wanted to sit, is where their chained his soul and had you sat down there your should was going to be trapped too."

Me: "Oh, I didn't know, I'm sorry."

Lady: "Worry not, that's why we are here. Time to sleep is over, now the battle begins. I need you to back to that rock that you were sleeping at now, just lie down a bit and you will have an encounter with God, He will tell you exactly what to do. Don't be scared because you are favored and choose by God. The gereational curses that are buried on this mountain when you leave, they will be broken. Families will be set free. God will tranfiyou to be His mouth piece. Before you ask too many questions, remember that God doesn't choose the qualified, He qualified the unqualified. I'm Tabitha, and this is Deborah, we are here to help you fight this battle. When the enemy comes like a flood the spirit of the

Lord will raise the standard. It is not a mistake that you are here today now, God trust you, God has faith in you. He has found a man who can stand in the gap for his people and he has found no one, but He found You. Just like Nehemiah who was wagered to build the walls of Jerusalem, God will give the eagerness to fight the evil that exist in this neighborhood. Children have been suffering the lose of their parents because of evilness, nothing else but because of the evil of a man and God has answered their cried, He heard them when they screamed out in again and He also heard you, He saw you when you were molested by your half brother, when a stranger came and molested you when you were unconscious, He saw all the tears you have cried and it ends today. You shall cry no more child. Pain shall never be your portion anymore. God is Restoring peace in your life, not just any ordinary peace, but peace that surpasses all human understanding. He is Restoring your soul, He is Restoring your mind and your voice. From today when you speak you shall be heard. God will use you again to declare His kingdom unto the

people....Dont be afraid, don't be dismayed, for He is your God, when you call Him, he will answer you, when you seek him, you will find Him...

[03/12, 15:32] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 79

Stella Motaung

Me: "That girl is up to something. I can feel it in my bones sesi, we have to do something about this."

Ditiro: "I know but there's nothing we can do if we don't know what she is up to."

Me: "I can't sit her and let her win and on the other hand that brat of your brother is nowhere to be found. We should've killed her and now we wouldn't be in this mess. So is either we take the two off them out because it's clear that she is working with Dabulamanzi. "

Ditiro:" Relax. Please, learn to trust me. She won't win with whatever she is planning. Remember that she still has to sacrifice her child if she really wants to be in control and she loves that child too much. I spoke to Dumazamazulu, I have been in contact with her for a while now, she agreed to come on board and help us with those two. They won't know what hit them the most when we are done with them. I just need to get in touch with that boy and we use him against them and we play them in their own little game. "

Me:" Sesi, wow, ain't you a genius. Why didn't you say that you have plan in motion, ready to strike. "

Ditiro:" I'm not like you sisi, I have patience and when I want a thing, I invest all my being in making sure that I get it. We might as well destroy Dabulamanzi's kingdom and take over. She has done thing useful to us. All she does is to betray us

by working with that girl that we have work so hard to make her part of the family. "

Me:" That can actually work in our favour. How about we take Mokgadiv's child for now, that will make her aware that we know that she is going behind our backs and we know that she is working against. Maybe that will scare her and she will tell us everything that she has been up to with that evil old witch. "

Ditiro:" Now you are thinking like someone who is alive. I will go pick her up at school. Maybe we should take Naomi too since her mother disappeared into the thin air. Maybe when she finds out that her mother hears what happened to her, she will resurface. I mean we can't afford to be blindsided at all. We need to know and track every move they make."

Me:" That's the plan, let me go and pick them up while to arrange with Dumazamazulu in the mean time to make sure that she is ready for us. "

Ditiro:" And please put your anger on the leash, just

for today, just for few hours until we make sure that we have everything in plan. "

Me:" I will do that. Chao. "

I left...

Mokgadi Motaung

I have been sitting with Dabulamanzi trying renegotiate a plan with her not to sacrifice my child, the only way out is to sacrifice Naomi, she is the only thing closest to William that I can think of right now. I can't put my child's life on the line, not like this. She is the only thing that reminds me that William nearly became mine.

How she was conceived to me will forever be unforgettable memory, yes he father might have been tamed on that particular day but I couldn't help but take charge like he was my man. So, is either

Palesa and her aunts goes down forever or I do, me going down is not an option right now. I will have to fight tooth and nail before I let them win. It is not over until I say so.

Dabulamanzi: "The sacrifice is needed in by tomorrow midday, is either you provide the child or you go down, and I'm not coming down with you this time around unfortunately. I have given you enough time to think, if you didn't bring any solution, then you are on your own. "

Me:" I can't sacrifice my child the great one, I can give you Williams granddaughter on the silver platter. She is the only thing I can give to you right now and this other two beats that forever eat, not my first born. "

Dabulamanzi:" Let it be then daughter, we shall see if the great mother of darkness will appreciate your sacrifice. And if she doesn't you know the consequences, i will hate to see you suffer, that will be on you."

Me:" I know, but I know this will work, Naomi has his grandfather's blood one way or the other."

Oratile Mofekeng

I didn't have a proper sleep last night. My heart was throbbing with so much pain. I tried not to think of what my mother told me, I kept wondering who my father is. How does he look like, how will things be like had he knew about us? Did he even know that we exist or not? My mother is so sick, I give it to her. I can't even look at her. How can she be so evil?

I dragged myself out of bed, I'm going to see Wisdom today, and bid him goodbye. I'm leaving this place, it holds nothing but bad memories. There's nothing good came out of me. My broken family broke me, it broke all us, and we are left to pick the pieces. I took a shower and I met with Kenzie's mother downstairs at the hotel we slept at for breakfast. We haven't spoken much about what

happened yesterday and I'm glad she didn't ask me anything and honestly, I'm happy that she didn't..

We ate breakfast in a complete silence which was perfect for me since I was deep in my thoughts and being disturbed wasn't what I needed.

We left to see Wisdom and she remained in the car and I went inside. He came in few minutes later, he sat across me, I guess prison is not for everyone indeed. He didn't look too good, but thank God he is still breathing all in one piece, I wish there was something I can do for him to get out of this place.

Wisdom: "Are you good?"

Me: "Yah, wena?" I was trying so hard not to cry. "

Wisdom:" I can't complain, why did you go and see her? You were not supposed to go there in the first place. "

Me:" I needed answers, or maybe I thought she was

going to tell me that it was all a lie, I don't know why I went there but I needed closure. "

Wisdom: "I'm sorry, I don't even know what to say to you, I don't even know how to make you feel any better because I'm also confused and hurt, did he tell you about our father?"

Me: "No, I was too angry to listen to whatever she wanted to tell me. I can't believe we spent our whole entire lives living a lie, does Mark even know about this new found truth?"

Wisdom: "I doubt he does, that's not even half the truth, there's more." I looked at him not knowing how to react anymore.

Wisdom: "Read this." He handed me a letter. I opened it and read it.....

Stella Motaung

I managed to get the kids, I took them to McDonald's to buy them food just to make them

feel at ease, I have never been a big fan of kids and I won't start anytime soon. As soon as this mission is done then I will be very happy. I'm sick and tired of suffering, we group up suffering and I won't let that to continue. If Palesa wants to fight then fight us what she will get. I won't let her walk away with everything.

I drove to the location my sister sent me, where she said she is with Dumazamazulu. Is either we do this today or we will never be able to do it in the future. If there's one thing mokgadi is not, is stupid. She will make sure that she is always ahead of us, and the only thing that will render her powerless is if her first born child dies and dies today, not any day later

I found them waiting for us beside the road that leads to the bushes, just few meters away from the main road.

Me: "Kids, please behave, I'm coming back just

now." They all nodded, they seemed very unbothered, I made sure that I lock all the doors.

Me: "What's the plan?"

Ditiro: "Just follow us, make sure that you don't lose us neh?"

Me: "Sharp." .

I went back into the car and I drove behind them deeper into the bush.

We arrived where we are supposed to carry out the sacrifice. Dumazamazulu asked that I take out the child that we want to sacrifice, I told the others to sleep so they don't see what will happen. I got her out nicely and we and stood in front of Dumazamazulu, she is a very scary creature or person. I don't even know how she got inside my sister's car if she is this scary and very huge.

Dumazamazulu: "Leave her in the middle, and kneel down behind her but don't be any closer. She is a fresh blood but the great one won't be satisfied with her, where is the other one?" Ditiro and I looked at each other and she nodded.

I went to the car to get Naomi, Kamogelo was already shaking by being in the presence of Dumazamazulu, I'm sure she even peered on herself. I pulled the little miss two goodie and she stood next to Kamogelo, they were both crying.

Dumazamazulu laughed out loud with her scary voice and fire surrounded both the kids.

Dumazamazulu: "The great one has accepted your sacrifice."

Palesa Ella Motaung

I felt a pain piercing through my abdomen. It felt like some labor pains, I couldn't keep still anymore. At first it didn't hit that much but now I was feeling them as I was praying. I couldn't keep up anymore as the pain was becoming very intense, and sharper. I screamed in pain with tears streaming down my cheeks.

As much as I wanted to stop praying I couldn't but the pain was getting any better, it felt like I was ready to give birth or something will break loose or pop inside me. It was very pain and after some few minutes I heard the cries of babies. I was now kneeling down on the ground. Mam'Tabitha and Mam'Deborah were also there, one of them held my hands while the other one was holding my stomach from the back. I heard them also praying but their voices were becoming faint with each and every passing second. It felt like my soul was leaving my body and I could feel it, like I was detaching from reality...

[03/12, 15:33] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 80

Mokgadi Motaung

I went to my kids's school to pick them up, but I waited until I ran out of patience. I went inside and asked the security guy who normally takes the register of who came and picked up the kids. I was shocked seeing Stella's name of the register. I mean I have made it clear that they shouldn't allow anyone to take my children without calling me. I made it clear that I'm the only person who is supposed to take the kids.

I furiously got into my car and drove home, hoping to tell her piece of my mind. I don't want them near my children more especially now that I have a plan in motion for them, one mistake might ruin everything I have worked so hard for, and I can't

afford that.

I parked outside the gate and went in, the house was empty. I began to panic, what if they are also working against me and they have actually beat me at my own game? I hope for their own sake my children are safe. I went to the bedroom and took out the calabash under my bed, before I even said anything, dark smoke came out of the calabash, I quickly took my doek and I wore it on my head. The Great mother of Darkness, Queen of the dark world wanted to talk. She always appears in a dark smoke but it's not dangerous. Her appearance is different from that of Dabulamanzi.

Queen of the darkness Queen Kali has many different shapes and appearance and all that depend on her mood. She has eight legs, with different sizes, head of a human and that of a snake, sometimes can appear blue and or red. She is very dangerous and don't mess with her. She is the most

highest ranked witch, she gives wealth but it comes costly.

She appeared in a form of a human.

Kali: "Daughter of darkness, the Queen of darkness is thirsty, very thirsty. It's been weeks if not months waiting for you to feed me but you are delaying me, and you know very well how I deal with people who are not faithful."

Me: "I apologize Queen of the darkness, I promise you that I will do everything I my power to feed you."

Kali: "I want two of your daughters, one will be the sacrifice for not being faithful and the other one will be your sacrifice. I shall come back tomorrow this time to thank you for staying faithful to your promise. Keep well."

She sank back into the calabash leaving me with a great fear. I need to find my children before she

comes and wiped them all out. Already she is demanding two of them and i will be left with only one child. I will have to make her agree to take Naomi too, I'm not going to loose my children like this. Naomi has to go, she will be another sacrifice for Kali.

I drove to Dabulamanzi' house, I found her in her hurt. She laughed the moment she laid her eyes on me. So funny I have never seen her face ever since I have started working with her. The scarf around her head covers her face so well and she is always wearing black long robes.

Dabulamanzi: "The queen mother is waiting and time is not on ours side. Take a look at this." She casted her spell on the wall and what I saw there shook me to the core. How can they do this to me? How did they even get hold of Dumamazulu? Dumamazulu and Dabulamanzi are siblings in the spirit realm of the darkness. And they fight like

crazy because they are both fighting to have bigger positions. I didn't know that they know her. I'm the one who introduced them to Dabulamanzi and I have always made sure that whenever they need to see her they came through me because I made sure that she have no contact with them and now they went with Dumazamazulu?

We all know that Dabulamanzi is very scared of Dumazamazulu, because she is very strategic and very wise, and manipulative at the same time.

Kamogelo and Naomi were surrounded by fire, meaning that they were sacrificing to the Kali and the sacrifice has been accepted.

Me: "Where is this place? We need to stop this now. They can't do that. Naomi was supposed to be my sacrifice. And that's my child. How do you allow them to do that?" I was very furious.

Dabulamanzi; "I have been warning you about sacrificing your child but did you listen? You are too wise to listen right? Look now? The very same child you have been refusing to give away they are using her to empower themselves and what will you be left with? Nothing. This is all on you. "

Me:" But we agreed that I will sacrifice Naomi instead and you agreed to help me in making the Queen mother to accept my sacrifice. This is all your fault. "

Dabulamanzi:" My fault? My fault? That's rich coming from you knowing very well that you have been working behind their backs to make sure that they fall and look now? There's no way I'm stopping that, it is done, it is finished. When Queen mother comes back, she will be very furious. If I were you I will be thinking of ways to calm her fury because we both know that you are done, you are finished.

Damn, this whole thing is messed up, if only I can know where those people are at, I might be able to

stop this whole thing. The fire surrounding the kids only means the sacrifice has been approved and accepted, but Kali is not yet there, it might take some time before she shows up to them which she normally does, plus she doesn't appear in fire, she doesn't like heat, it can only take time before it cools down.

Me: "Great one, I ask for a favour?"

Dabulamanzi: "What can I do for you?"

Me: "Can you perhaps tell me where they are? You don't really have to go with me there, I will go alone."
There was silence for a moment.

She took her stick and hit the ground four times.....

Oratile Mofekeng

Maya:"Baby, Allow yourself to feel the hurt, allow yourself to go through the emotions but the trick here is that, you have to make sure that you don't

use your pain to hurt others too. I don't expect you to just wake up and forgive your mother and forget everything. It may take you a while to make the decision to forgive. If that happens, don't feel guilty for not forgiving right away. God understands your emotions, and he will help you as you go through the healing process. As time goes by, there will come a time when you are ready to forgive.

Remember that the word of God says, If you forgive those who sin against you, your heavenly Father will forgive you. But if you refuse to forgive others, your Father will not forgive your sins. Matthew 6:14-15. Forgiveness is a process, don't rush it but don't channel your anger in wrong people. Okay? "

Me:" Thank you, and thank you for allowing me to stay in your house. I know I haven't been living right, I have been doing things that aren't good, I guess it was me channeling my anger in alcohol, but that won't happen again. I just want to move on, maybe

one day I will be able to forgive my mother and myself too, but right now, I can't promise you anything, I will take it one day at a time and see what each day bring for me. I will start looking for a job and move out. "

Maya:" You don't have to move out, my house is enough to accommodate you too. Take your time to sort yourself out okay?" I nodded.

Maya:" Ready to go back to Gauteng? This place is very hot, I thought I won't complain but hei, the heat is too much." We laughed.

Me:" I know, that's Limpopo for you, maybe one day you will come visit properly and your it a bit to see the beauty of it."

Maya: "Hmm, I will hold you onto that one, Kenzie will die to come and see this place."

She joined the main road and drove. Maybe it's about time i leave my pain here and never look back. Maybe one day I will be strong and ecourageous enough to come back and Deal with my demons,

maybe then it won't be too late.

Stella Motaung

We have been waiting for more than an hour now for the Queen mother of darkness to come through but she wasn't. I have never met her before but I believe she is someone that you can't mess with and now I'm running out of patience to be waiting for someone who I don't know.

Ditiro was patiently kneeling down, I wish I could tell her to forget everything and leave but we need more than anything else.

After a while there was a light smoke that came from the ground followed by a dust, and there appeared Mokgadi and Dabulamanzi.

Naomi and Kamogelo were running around in the circle of fire, obviously scared and taken by what was happening.

Mokgadi: "Well, well, well, what do we have here? So you thought you can betray me and get away with it?"

Me: "What are you doing here Mokgadi? You are not supposed to be here."

Mokgadi: "I should be asking you the very same question, what are you guys doing here? You want to sacrifice my own child? My own blood? What kind of evil has posses your hearts?"

Ditiro: "Look who is talking about evil? The very same person who also wanted to betray us? The same way you wanted to betray us is the same way we are all here, so if you don't mind please excuse us."

Mokgadi: "I'm not going anywhere, without my daughter."

Dumamazulu: "We don't have the whole day here, so please excuse us to perform our ritual in peace."

Dabulamanzi: "Not so fast dear sister. This ritual cannot continue while your people have my clients sacrifice."

Dumamazulu: "I don't get where I fit in all that drama, I was requested here to perform a ritual and now I'm doing the honors, so your clients and stolen sacrifices are none of my business."

Dabulamanzi got very pieced and she threw an arrow of fire across to Dumamazulu as they were standing in opposite direction with the fire that had the children in between. The arrow fell in front of Naomi intensifying the fire around them.

Dumamazulu got every pissed and she threw a shining arrow, I heard that she is not that friendly, and the arrow was too bright that Dabulamanzi couldn't contain herself, she screamed in pain covering her almost none existing facing with her arms and so did we because the brightness was too much to look at.

Dabulamanzi: "You have just declared war little sister."

Dumazamazulu: "Bring it on."

Dabulamanzi threw an arrow too, and unfortunately it hit Kamigelong on the shoulder and she fell down. I don't know how but I saw Mokgadi jumping over the fire rushing to her daughter, her voice screaming out in agony.

Mokgadi: "What have you done? What have you done to my baby?" She carried her lifeless baby in her arms. The sad part of this whole thing is that Queen of the darkness doesn't accept dead sacrifices. She kills the people herself. This one it's a failed one.

She got up and picked Naomi up.

Mokgadi: "Kill her too or I will kill her myself."

Me: "You can't kill her she is the only sacrifice we are left with. If you kill her we are all dead."

Mokgadi: "Is better we all die. You killed my child and you all deserve to suffer."

Ditiro: "Yei, that was not our fault that she died. Dabulamanzi killed your child with her rage. Leave Naomi out of this."

Mokgadi: "I'm not going down alone this time around, we are all going down." She placed her hands on Naomi's neck ready to strangle life out of her. I swear I never saw this coming. This I didn't expect... We have to do something....

[03/12, 15:33] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 81

THE BATTLE LINES ARE DRAWN

Stella Motaung

Things were really out of the line. We can't let

Mokgadi kill Naomi out of anger because it will affect us all. This is not right we need to stop it.

Me: "Dumamazulu, do somethings, we can't let her kill her."

Dumamazulu: "Unfortunately there's nothing I can do, this is not my battle to fight. You should've known better than bring this kids here behind her back."

Me: "You can't sit there and say the battle is not yours. What the hell is that supposed to mean. Seshe she is strangling the kid, our only sacrifice please do something."

The fire surrounding them subsided a bit, it can only mean one thing, Queen mother is on her way, and if she gets here and fight all this man we are all as good as dead. We really need a solution.

Ditiro: "I'm going over the fire, we can't let this happen. It's either Mokgadi dies or Naomi dies."

Me: "Please be careful."

She folded her dress to her thighs and she ran and numbed over the fire, unfortunately her other shoe caught the fire and she screamed.

Me: "Take off this shoes." I screamed at her and she took off the shoes and held Mokgadi back. She kept on fighting back but she was strong enough to hold her back, Naomi laid down on the ground to catch some breather.

Mokgadi: "Leave me alone, you killed my child, and there's no way I'm letting you get away with this."

Ditiro: "Mokgadi listen to me, we are in this together. We both know that Kamo was going to be sacrificed one way or the other. So if we kill Naomi, what good will it make? We will loose everything we have worked so hard for. Don't think with your emotions, use your head we need this child to maintain our lifestyle. Your kids will have to drop out of that fncy school, the life you are living right now, will vanish like it never happened. So, please do yourself a

favour and take a moment just to think about it. "

Mokgadi:" I don't give a damn about this whole wealth if my children will like this. You are not a a mother, you don't understand the pain I'm feeling in this. Watching your own child to do for what? Is either they all die or you are all gaining nothing. Rather you kill me then. "

Ditiro:" You are leaving me with no choice then, I'm killing you. "

Mokgadi:" Kill me for all you care, I don't care. I have nothing to live for anymore. You killed my reason to live. Kill me, what will my death benefit you? Nothing, nothing at all."

Me: "Sesi kill her, she is of no use to us anymore." the fire was now down, no evidence of the fire anymore.

Me: "We are running out of time."

Naomi was also screaming her lungs out. She didn't stop at all. I wish she could just shut up because she was getting on our nerves. Having to deal with her noise and the Mokgadi's attitude was too much

to deal with all at once.

Ditiro:" Naomi shut up. "

Naomi: "I want my mother, please take me to my mother. I don't want to be here, I didn't do anything please. I want Lele."

Me: "Shut up you little brat, sesi please kill her."

She strangled Mokgadi more and more,
Dabulamanzi and Dumazamazulu were just
watching doing nothing. Just then was a minor
earthquake, I don't if it was only us who felt it but it
was terrifying....

Palesa Ella Motaung

My whole body was in pain, I couldn't keep up with
the pain I was feeling, I kept hearing Naomi
screaming in my head or in my mind.

I was losing strength, every part of me was sinking
deeper and deeper in pain. I couldn't keep up
anymore, as much as I was taking the pain and

being strong, I couldn't anymore. I was losing myself, I felt like I'm dying a slow painful death and funny enough I was very aware of my surroundings and I was very conscious.

Mam'Tabitha: "Kali has surfaced, and we cannot afford to lose this battle to her. The battle lines are drawn and there's heaviness in the spiritual realm. I pray that she keep up and not give in yet."

Deborah: "We have to do something Tabitha. We can let Kali win this time around. The Kingdom of God has suffered great violence already. We need to fight. Maybe summon Michael to be on guard."

Tabitha: "As much as we need Michael we also need Palesa too, this is a war that she alone can win. They have captured her child and she is the source...she is connect to that child through an umbilical cord, hence she is feeling this pain, the child is in danger."

Deborah:" Then what do you suggest we do? "

Tabitha:" The only thing that we can do to end this woman. We go face to face with her. "

Deborah:" That can be very dangerous, considering she is in this pain. There has to be another way out if this because if we take her to the battle field like this, we are as good as dead and she won't survive it, she is not even aware of what she is capable of doing. We need a proper plan, we need Devine intervention. "

Tabitha:" Okay, let's see how we can go about this one. Back me up. "

Deborah:" I'm with you. "They began to speak in foreign language that I was unable to understand for some time and I couldn't keep up with them. Their language was too deep for me to fathom but I could feel the atmosphere change, the was this wind that keep moving that was soothing, the pain was slowly becoming bearable for me as they continued to speak in their language.

Tabitha: "Child, can you hear me? Please touch my hand if you can hear me." I slowly moved my hand, but it was very heavy, he caught my hand and she

took my other hand and made me stand. My legs were wobbling, I couldn't stand still.

Tabitha: "Listen to me, you are stronger than this pain, I want you to release your mindset away from the physical pain that you are feeling because we can't afford to waste another second. The life of your child depend on you in the next 30 minutes. The devil has reinforced his highest agents and they are on guard and we also need to be on guard. Whatever happens from now on, we need to be extra careful. Your child can't die by the sword of the evil. We are standing in agreement with you. Dorothy take her hand. We are going to do an impartation prayer right now. Whatever you see in the next 2 minutes, do not shut your mouth. Speak a word, to whatever you see, if you need to declare, do so, but don't keep quiet.

We are here for you too, fear not For God is on your side. The army of heaven is backing you up. There's an explosion that is going to happen in the next 30 minutes. And it will be heard even to the end of the

world. Are you ready Dorothy? "

Dorothy:" Yes, I'm ready. " I felt her holding my feet tightly and Mam'Tabitha holding my hands....

Stella Motaung

Kali:" Well well, well, what do we have here? "A huge snake/ dragon/ human being surfaced from where the fire was and it was dark as if it will rain any second from now on. Nomi ran behind me, I'm sure she peed herself more than 8 times. She was screaming holding my dress but the Queen mother of darkness was just everywhere surrounding us.

Dabulamanzi: "Queen mother of darkness." She kneeled before her and so did Dumazamazulu and Kali liked their faces and they got up.

There was a great thunder far from the mountains and the clouds were moving so fast, more darker.

Kali: "What is going on? Who's child is this?" she

threw Naomi with her tail and she fell on the ground with her face.

Kali: "What in the name Kali is happening here? I asked who is this child? Tell me now before I strike all of you."

Mokgadi: "She's Palesavs child, William's granddaughter." She said with a trembling voice.

Kali: "Do you know what you have just proved? Do you know the kind of danger we are in right now because of this child? Dabulamansi, take your sword and kill her now, don't you dare spare her and make sure you stab right on her heart and don't miss it and when you are done all of you, you are going to pay for everything. "

She handed Dabulamansi her shiny sword and she charged towards Naomi, she even lost her voice because of crying. I was feeling a little sorry for her, I mean this is not how things were supposed to end but hey, who am I to do against this evil woman?

Dabulamanzi raised the sword up high and aimed right at her little body. I was shivering, everyone was just quiet waiting to hear her little last scream. When she dropped her hand down to stab her, a great lightning struck her hand and the sword was left hanging in the sky, the sky changed again becoming more darker and darker. Dabulamanzi screamed out loud with her horse voice, her hands must have burned from that lightning.

Kalo furious charged at Dabulamanzi.

Kali: "Useless, you are so useless, you fail to do a small task of killing this person you brought in our camp because of your stupidity. I will strip you down your position now without thinking twice. Dumazamazulu, kill this thing now. Before I get pissed because whoever is against me right now, they really seeking my presence."

Dumazamazulu tried to hold the sword that was still hanging in the atmosphere but it was stuck. Kali

gave her another one and she tried to struck Naomi but the sword strucked the ground and there were little pieces of fire that came from the sword as it came in contact with the ground and they got to her face....

Kali furiously made a u-turn and hit us all with her tail and she turned into an owl and flew towards were the most lightening came from on the mountain... We are in deep trouble...

Palesa Ella Motaung

Mam'Tabitha: "Get ready for war, she is coming, remember whatever you see, you declare the word of God, don't keep quiet. It's about to go down. Tighten up your faith. Wear the full armor of God. And remember, the battle is not yours, but it's for the Lord."

[03/12, 15:33] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 82

WHEN TWO POWERS COLLIDE, THE LESSER
POWER MUST BOW....

Londiwe Cele-Mankoe

We have been to every hospital for our sin with no luck until we gave up trying to look for him. As much as I wanted him to come back, I know for sure that the battle is not mine but it's for the Lord.

Today since morning the weather has been a little questionable, considering the fact that Limpopo is very hot but the change of the weather alarmed my spirit.

It was very dark outside but it was during the day,

the wind that was blowing wasn't that nice, heavy and lightning too. It continue to struck the same place a couple of times. The mountain was surrounded by a heavy pillar of cloud. I'm not sure if many people saw it but that resembled the heavy presence of God. God was on top of that mountain and I believe maybe that's where Palesa is. Our bedroom's view is facing the very same moutian.

We began our prayer and fasting yesterday and God has been speaking too much about letting His will to be done. I tried my best to get exactly what he meant, but God only speaks once. "Let my will be done."

I felt my husband's hand sneaking around my waist, I have been standing for some time now.

Tebogo: "What are you thinking about?" He kissed me on my neck and I relaxed back in his embrace.

Me: "Nothing, I just pray that Palesa will hold on for a while."

Tebogo: "Still experiencing the cramps?" I have been experiencing labor pain cramps, sometimes it felt like I will bleed. I have never experienced miscarriage but there were times it felt like a miscarriage, then I had a vision of Palesa going through the very same thing I was going through and when I was losing strength she was also losing strength, it was very pain to be honest. Pain that you will never even wish to your worst enemy, my husband prayed for me and I also prayed. And some few hours later, I felt something popping out of me, and there was instant healing, just like after giving birth when the pain is overtaken by the joy of seeing your child. It took me a while to regain my strength but now I'm fine.

Me: "No, I'm fine. What time is it?"

Tebogo: "It's just after 18:00."

Me: "We need to have an hour of intercession exactly at 18:30, it's about to get tough, and I need

you to be strong because the hour has come, a lot can happen in the next coming hour."

Tebogo: "God is our strength, come and rest a bit then."

He let me to the bed and tucked me in and kiss my forehead....

Palesa Ella Motaung

There was a time I felt like something was being forced into my belly, like there was conception taking place but this one was too much for me. It required a lot of strength from me and on the other hand, it was queezing the energy out of me. I felt drained, but my lips were saying words only my heart understood.

The pain persisted and it was now too much, I opened my eyes and I saw a huge dragon/ snake/ human being. I nearly fell when I saw

it standing in front of me. I fear crippled my heart.
What did I get myself into.

Mam'Tabitha: "Listen to me, do not fear anything.
Your daughter's life depend on this moment. Listen
tome carefully, many are those that are with you.
Look around you and se the army of heaven that
surround you. You have a heavenly back up.
Nothing, and I mean it, nothing will happen to you.
You just need to keep your confession and fight this.
Okay?" I nodded repeatedly.

Kali:" Oh Michael is this the little champ that shook
my kingdom? I should have known not to bother
myself by coming here. What a waste of time."

Michael:" Stillstubhorn as usual I see. Unfortunately
I don't answer to you anymore. Whatever you view
as small is always the same thing that forever
crush your kingdom. "

Kali:" We shall see this time around. I have two of
the most important people in her life and both their

lives depend on this moment her. But since I'm not that heartless, I will make her choose. Your boyfriend or your daughter? "She displayed both the videos of Naomi and Kgosi, Kgosi was in the hospital with so many pipes connected to him and Naomi was laying in the ground terrified and crying.

Me:" Who are you? "

Kali:" Someone that you shouldn't mess with and whatever you do, all this people are at my mercy right now."

Me: "You don't have any hold against my child and Kgosi's life, you are not God, you are a mere mortal."

Kali: "A mere mortal? Are you sure about that? Let me do this and see if indeed I'm a mere mortal."She tapped on the screen that displayed Naomi and I saw all my aunts there and two figured that I couldn't see their faces. Mokgadi was sitting in the group weeping and Kamogelo's body was laying lifeless in the ground.

Me:" My God is bigger than you are. I render you

powerless and defeated. Your evilness will joy
succeed over their lives. I command the hedge of
fire to surround them right now in the name of
J esus Christ." She stabbed back as if something hit
her hard. "

Kali: "Don't you dare mention that name in my
presence."

Me: "The name of J esus is my strong tower, when I
run to it, I'm saved. J esus Christ."

Kali: "Stop it or else I will kill her."

Me: "Life and death are in the power of the tongue.
They shall not die. Your wickedness will never kill
them."

Kali: "Michael I'm warning you, tell her to stop."

Michael: "Surrender the battle Kali, you have already
lost. You have no authority over anyone. Your
judgment is waiting for you touch not the anointed
of God and do His prophets no harm unless you
want to suffer the consequences."

Kali: "Hahaha, I guess you forgot me, let me remind

you who I am." She touched screen and the sword that was hanging on Naomi it stubbed her on the shoulder. My heart sinker deeper and depper in my belly as I watched my baby scream in pain, she turned and tossed with no one attending to her.

Me:" J ESUS. "I screamed the name of J esus in pain, it wasn't meant to burn her or anything but it was because of the pain and she stumbled again, the particles of fired formed everytume I called the name of J esus Christ.

Me:" At the sound of the name of J esus Christ, every knee shall bow and every tongue confess that J esus Christ is Lord. You devil, I don't have any other weapon that I come to you with. But I come to you in the name of J esus, the name that has never failed me, the powerful name that burn the plans of the evil, the name of J esus that carries the weak. When I call on this name I know that I will conquer.

I burn your sword of evil with fire of the Holy Ghost,... "

Mam'Tabitha:" Kalo you have lost the battle. You kill by sword so shall you die by sword. I call on the fire of heaven to consume you right now. You made a grave mistake for coming here, you don't fight an enemy in their territory.

I wage heavineky war against you, I call on the angels of war to position themselves."

I saw so many angels moving with their swords.

Kali:" I'm not going down without a fight. " He released a ball of fire charged at me, I didn't see it coming but it hit me on my chest and I fell down.

She then hit the screen the second time and it went blank. Michael got so furious as he was about to stab him with the sword, Mam'Tabitha stopped him.

Mam' Tabitha: "Michael no, don't, Palesa get up baby, come on declare a word. This is your war and you will call in the name of J esus, call on the name

of J esus, as many as you can, the only thing that will make him burn is when we call the name of J esus. Come on baby, get up.. "My chest was burning, I couldn't breath properly.

Me:" J e...sus...je...sus."It came out as a whisper.

Londiwe Cele-Mankoe

I woke up from a terrible nightmare. I looked around and hubby was praying in the other room. I got up quickly and dressed up in tracksuit and runners. I need to go on that mountain. Palesa needs me.

I didn't tell hubby that i was up, I got out the room and ran towards the mountain. The distance from the B&B and the mountain is bit straineous but I couldn't careless. A life lost to the devil, this is not good. A rod of a rod of the wicked shall never slay the righteous under my watch. I ran as much as I could until I arrived which was after sometime.

There were sounds on the mountain as much as it was dark out there, there was light here, I could see properly where I was going in top of the mountain.

I stopped for a minute and I prayed, I prayed in tongues to intensify my spirit and to align and channel my spirit. I wore the full armor of God and I proceeded.

Palesa was on the ground when I finally found them, Kali was standing there, her other part was already on fire, but this one dies hard.

Mam'Tabitha: "Come on Palesa, say it. Deborah, place your hand on her chest. She needs to declare the name of Jesus."

Me: "Pales listen to her, you have it in you baby, come on. Do it for yourself. The devil is defeated, come sis, come on." knelt down before her, I knew then that this battle is beyond me, this is her battle

that she needs to fight.

Me: "Lord give her strength to conquer, give her strength Jesus."

Kali: "I might as well as finish her." She rolled a ball of fire in her hands.

Me: "I command you to stop right now in the name of Jesus, "

Kali: "O little miss prayer warrior? I'm not here for you if you will excuse me."

Me: "Excuse yourself too. I knelt down and raised my hands up.

Me: "Father if I am your servant, I pray right now, the weapons of my warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to pulling down the strong holds, and to destroy anything and everything that is not of you. Right now under the sound of my voice I pray, I cause destruction in the camp of the enemy. Arise Jehovah and let your enemies be scattered. I refuse that we die of the sword for the enemy, I refuse that we cry because of Satan and his agent. Arise Jehovah, this is your battle, this is your time to

show up and show off. Let your name be glorified in this moment. "

Mam'tabitha's hand were on my back as I was praying and she was praying, Deborah held Palesa's hand and helped her to get up. I looked at her with pleading eyes. She gained a little strength.

Palesa:" I come to you in the name of JESUS CHRIST, let the consuming fire Of God consume you, Demolish you and demolish your Kingdom . I CALL UPON THE FIRE FROM HEAVEN TO BURN YOU TO ASHES. THE SAME FIRE THAT ELIJAH CALLED TO HURN THE GODS OF BAAL, LET IT CONSUME YOU AND YOUR DECENDENTS, LET IT BURN EVEN YOUR TRACE, I COMMAND THE HEAVEN TO RELEASE HEAVY JUDGEMENT ON YOUR ON YOUR SERVANTS. NO MORE SHALL WE DIE OF YOUR SWORD, NO LONGER SHALL WE CY BECAUSE OF YOUR ROD. YOUR SWORS SHALL KILL YOUR DECENDENTS. I UPROOT YOUR KINGDOM, I CAUSE CONFUSION IN YOUR DARK KINGDOM. WE ARE TAKING DOMINION OF YOUR

KINGDOM. I RENDER YOU POWERLESS, I RENDER YOU USELESS. IN THE MIGHTY NAME OF JESUS, BURN TO ASHES RIGHT NOW IN THE MIGHTY NAME OF JESUS CHRIST."

She used the little strength she had and she passed out on the ground....

[03/12, 15:33] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 83

Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil, for you are with me;, your rod and staff, they comfort me.

Psalm 23:4

Londiwe Cele-Mankoe

I took Palesa with me and she was still unconscious, Mam'Tabitha helped me to put her on her back on the ground. The weather was slowly changing too.

Me: "How am I gonna get her down? The weather is changing and I can't leave with her like this."

Mam'Tabitha: "She will wake up, she just need to regain her strand she will be fine."

Me: "And her daughter? I saw her in my dream and it didn't look good." She looked to the side. For the first time in ages Mam'Tabitha didn't have answers to any question.

Me: "How bad is it?"

Mam'Tabitha: "I don't know yet, but it's bad. You two have to go. They are taking her to the hospital in town. That's were your son is. You will find them all there."

Me: "Then what do I say to her when she wakes up?"

Mam'Tabitha: "Nothing, she is a strong woman, she will be fine. You guys should go. I will accompany you down the mountain. And when we get down, she will be awake."

Mam'Deborah helped her to carry her and we walked out, everything was still burning, even Kali self was burned to ashes. When we got down, Palesa woke up, but she seemed to be in pain. Mam'Tabitha held her up.

Mam'Tabitha:" You did well today my angel. May God continue to move you from one glory to another. May He elevate you, may He reveal the mysteries of His Kingdom to you."She held exactly where the fire ball hit her

Mam'Tabitha:" It is well, I will see you again soon. "

Palesa:" Thank you. "she hugged her and Mam'Tabitha shared a tear, and it began to rain softly.

Mam'Tabitha:" It is well child, it is well. "I looked at her but she couldn't keep her eye contact.

She came and hugged me too while Mam'Deborah hugged Palesa.

Mam'Tabitha:" Be strong for her."I nodded with tears threatening to come out but I kept them. I tried to search the truth in her cfkrever glowing eyes but I couldn't reach her eyes. As we turned I heard her release a sob and when she did that it rained more.

We slowly walked to the B&B, it was bit of a distance and it was pouring now, we couldnt even run to save ourselves. We just walked and it was better for me because I couldn't hold my tears anymore, the rain made things better for me because Palesa won't be able to notice.

When we arrived at the B&B we were both wet. Hubby helped us with towels and he prepared us some warm bath. I bathed after Palesa did since we had one bathroom and i gave my warm pajamas to

keep warm.

Hubby: "You don't seem to be happy that everything is finally over."

Me: "I am, I'm just exhausted."

Hubby: "We both know that you can't lie to me forever right?"

Me: "I know Sugar, can we talk about it tomorrow, I just need some sleep please my handsome husband."

Hubby: "Okay, sleep." He kissed me on my forehead and snuggled me closer to him to keep me warm.

Kgosi Mankoe

I opened my eyes, trying to familiarize myself with my surrounding. It only knocked some sense after a while when the nurse walked with my medication and food on the trolley. She was it younger and she

looked pretty but not my kind of pretty.

Nurse: "Mr, are you awake?"

Me: "Yes." I tried to sit up but the pain I felt across my spine was too much.

Nurse: "Please relax, let me help you. You don't have to be too hard on yourself." She helped me to sit up.

Nurse: "I will go and call Dr Manamela to come and assist you."

Me: "Thank you, can I use your phone please."

Nurse: "You know I'm not allow to do that?"

Me: "I know, I just want to call my family. Have they ever came to see me?"

Nurse: "No, we tried to get in touch with your family but we couldn't because you car has been burnt beyond recognition and there was no identity documents found in your car."

Me: "See the reason why I have to get in touch with

my family? Please I won't waste your airtime, just few seconds."

Nurse: "I hope you will be done by the time I get back with your Doctor."

Me: "Thank you." She handed me her phone and walked away. I dialed Palesa's number, I'm pretty sure that she is worried sick about me. Her phone rang unanswered. I tried it again and still. I tried my mother and she answered after few rings.

Mama: "Londiwe hello." She sounded sleepy

Me: "Mommy, it's me Kgosi."

Mama: "Kgosi, baby, are you good? Where are you? I have been looking for you."

Me: "I'm fine mommy, I'm at the hospital. They said my car burned beyond recognition."

Mama: "Oh Baby, thank God you are still alive. We are coming to see you."

Me: "Please come with Palesa. She must be worried sick about me wait let me ask the nurse, which hospital I'm at." The ladies walked in....

Me: "What is the name of this hospital?"

Nurse: "Polokwane Provincial Hospital."

I thanked her and told my mom where I was. I gave the nurse her phone. The doctor introduced herself as Dr Omontle Manamela and she she checked me and she said I will be fine nothing major happened.

Palesa Ella Motaung

We prepared ourselves to go to the hospital. They ordered breakfast for us but I couldn't down anything. I just wanted to go and see my baby and that's it.

I couldn't sleep a wink. Last night with all the nightmares I kept on having. They were so bad that I ended up just sitting and doing nothing after praying.

They all finished to eat and we left to the hospital. Kgosi's mother told me that Kgosi called and bge told her where he was. We drove to the hospital in silence, thank God to the GPS, there was no need for me to direct them.

When we arrived they enquired about Kgosi and I enquired about Naomi. They were shown where Kgosi was and I had to wait for them to go through the system to check if indeed Naomi was admitted.

They wanted to wait with me but I told them to go and see Kgosi, and they will see me when they are sine with Kgosi. I sat down at the waiting are at the reception. The lady who was assisting me at least she was kind enough to not bother me about unnecessary drama and all that.

After a while she called me back and said the nurse will come shortly to let me know what's going on. My aunts walked in the two of them following each

other. Stella had a bandage on her head and Ditiro had a cast on her right. Where I was sitting I had a full access of the door and they walked to the lady at the reception. After speaking to her some time they made their way to where I was seated.

Stella: "Palesa?" They were shocked to see me rather?

Me: "Rakgadi. What happened to your head?"

Stella: "Hai, it's nothing hectic. Have you heard about Naomi?"

Me: "Yes, I'm waiting for the nurse." They looked at each other suspiciously.

Me: "Where is Mokgadi? And what are two doing here? It's not like you care for Naomi anyways."

Ditiro: "Hau, how can you say that when it was us who brought her here in the middle of the night when her mother was out there galavanting?"

Me: "You mean taking my child to be your evil sacrifice? You only bought her here out of guilty

conscious nothing else."

Stella: "Evil what what do you take us for? Do you really think low of ourselves that bad?" The nurse arrived before I could give her piece of my mind.

Nurse: "PALESA Motaung?" I stoop up and walked with her towards the wards.

Me: "How is my baby doing nurse?"

Nurse: "Please come this way, the doctor will explain everything to you." She led me to the doctors office and she asked me to sit down and wait for the doctor.

I did as instructed, I waited for the doctor and after a while the doctor walked, middle aged woman.

Dr: " HI, I'm Dr Omontle Manamela. "

Me: " Hi Dr, I'm Palesa Motaung."

Dr: "Nice to meet you Ms Motaung."

Me: "How is my baby doing?"

Dr: "Miss Naomi Motaung arrive here in the early hours of the morning, she suffered a lot of blood loss and strainous injuries on her left side of the body between her breast. It seems like she was shot by a poisonous error and...."

Me: "Doctor not to be rude, I get all of that, how is she? " She paused for a while and looked at the file as if she was looking some words to break the news to me.

Dr:" I'm sorry Ms Motaung, but Naomi didn't make it, when she arrived here her tiny body had already endured so many injuries, and the pois on found in her system was already consuming her internal organs...." There was a great thunder that hit after she said whatever she said.. The weather was bad outside but my mind was n't there either. What she said was like an arrow shot right into my heart but yet I felt no pain but I felt like I have no heart.

Me: "Where is she?" I said calmly still trying to take in whatever she was saying. My mind was already screaming denial, I didn't believe a single word she was saying to me. I wanted to confirm whatever she

was saying to me. I wanted to make sure that I'm not dreaming and she is not making everything up.

Dr: "Ma'am the hospital can try to organize a grief couns..."

Me: "Can I see her please Doctor. That's all I'm asking."

She nodded and she let the way to the other room where she spoke to couple of people. I didn't hear what they were saying because my mind wasn't there anymore.

The other guy let the way to the hospital morgue, the place was very cold filled with steel fridges. He paged through his file and open the fridge. Her tiny body was laying there, pale, it seemed like she has been in the fridge for some time. She had a bandage around her chest....

God what is this?

[03/12, 15:33] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 84

HE IS THE GOD OF HILLS AND VALLEYS. 1 KINGS
20:28

Palesa Ella Motaung

Uyalalelwa Usomandla(We should listen to God)

Nima isimo singavumi (Even though the situation is
hard)

Ukulalela kwesinye isikhathi(To listen to Him at
times)

Kubiza ukuphila kweghu(Makes us live)

The song kept on playing in Kgosi's parents car, I
was seated at the back seat,trying so hard to
understand whatever is going on. My heart was not

responding to the news yet, I wanted to feel it breaking but it wasn't breaking at all. I felt like I'm in a dream world where I will wake up one day and realize that it was just a nightmare.

Seeing her tiny body laying in that cold fridge, felt like some kind of a dream. I wanted to scream and shout and get angry but I didn't have the energy for all that. I didn't have it in me to do anything. I'm dead inside me. I feel lost, I have no reason to live anymore. So many things I want to point out that don't make any sense right now.

The words of the song also were hitting home, how do you listen to God when your situation is beyond what you can bear? Is God fair? Is he fair in allowing me to go through this kind of pain? Is he being a just God when he allows such things? Don't we deserve to serve Him with our families? Don't we deserve peace and happiness?

Maybe He doesn't love us the same. Maybe His love is meant for some and not me. Maybe His love is only for those who have things I don't have. As much as I don't want to doubt him, I can't sit here and act like I'm not beyond shocked by what is happening. Why does he allow the wicked to live and kill the innocent?

I was brought back to reality when the car was brought to halt and stopped in front of our gate. It's only then I realized that my eyes were teary. I quickly wiped my tears and we all got out.

The house was not locked meaning there was someone inside. When we got in I found Nthabiseng and her mother cleaning around. They packed what I believe is Mokgadi and her children's belongings.

Nthabi: "Friend." She attacked me with a hug. I guess Kgosi's mother called her since she asked me for her numbers when I was still busy with paper work and hospital admin.

Nthabi: "How are you? I'm so sorry." She already had teary eyes. I smiled weakly

Me: "I'm good, just exhausted."

Nthabi: "You know you don't have to act tough with me right?"

Me: "I don't want to do this now please. I'm going to make a couple of calls and lie down a bit, please don't wake me up." She nodded and eyed Kgosi's parents. I can tell they are questioning my behavior but that was the least of my worries.

I call my family to let them know what had happened, I thought that maybe telling them will make me believe that she really gone but nothing. Maybe my heart is broken beyond repair.

Londiwe Cele-Mankoe

To be honest I'm worried about Palesa, ever since she received the news about her daughter she

hasn't reacted like someone in pain, she has taken the pain and shoved it somewhere for people to not see it. I have never lost a child before, but one thing I can tell is that it's a pain no parent deserves to go through. I have been to funerals of young children and they were sucking the energy and quenching the last hope I felt the parents deserves.

But how do you comfort someone who has lost a child? What do you say to her? Which words will be enough to encourage her to go another day. This pain is too much. I doubt it heals. I doubt it goes away. I want to be there for her yet, I don't want to push her, I don't want to suffocate her.

Naomi was such a lovely soul, caring and energetic child. Seeing her lifeless body today tricked lots of emotions in me. As much as I never got to spend too much time with her but the little moments I spent with her left a beautiful mark in my life. Her beautiful smile will forever be plastered in my hard.

I fail or find it hard to picture her lifeless body, I don't want to remember her like that.

Nthabi: "She is not okay."

Me: "I know baby, and she needs us now more than ever."

Nthabi: "I still can't believe that Naomi is gone, she is too innocent for all of this. She didn't deserve to die." She was already crying, Gosh this is going to be emotionally draining for me.

Me: "I know sweetheart, all I know is that everything is working together for our good. Whether good or better. Siyazi ukutji kwabamthandayo uJehovah konke kusebenzelana kube ngokuhle, kulabo ababizweyo ngecebo lakhe."(Romans 8:28)

Nthabi: "Will she be okay? I doubt she will survive this, she has been through a lot already."

Me: "Let's give time to find a way to confront this pain, until then we just have to be there for her. It's not going to be an easy road, but she needs all of us

now more than anything."

She nodded and I helped her wipe her tears.

The weather outside was still very bad, and now the rain was becoming too much. We were now seated in the lounge, with my husband and Nthabiseng's mother. Palesa was still in her room but it's been about 3 hours now.

Naledi: "I think we should check up on her. It's been a while now."

Me: "I will go and check up on her and hear what her family said. We can't live her all by herself."

Naledi: "I will have to go and check up on Nomsa, I will be back."

Me: "Okay."

Nthabi: "Isn't wise to tell Wisdom's mother and her family? I mean as much as their situation is not good, I believe they have a right to know about their granddauand Wisdom has a right to know about his

daughter"

Hubby: 'It's a good idea but remember Palesa has a final say in everything, she raised Naomi without them, they contributed nothing to Naomi's well being and as much as we want them to come here, let it be in her will. We don't want cause her more pain then she is in pain already. We need to threat carefully especially with everything concerning that family. "

Me:" Yah let's just put it rest until the rest of her family arrives. Let me go give her something to eat. She hasn't eaten. "

I prepared food for her and went to her room, I knocked twice without an answer, I let myself in. I found her standing by the window looking outside. It was pouring.

I placed the tray of food on the side pedestal.

Me:" Hey Nana, I brought you food. "

She kept quiet.

Me: "Please baby, eat something."

Palesa: "I'm not hungry." She said uninterested. I walked closer to where she was standing and stood behind her not sure what to do.

Me: "Hmmm, don't you want come and sit with us in the lounge?"

Palesa: "No, I'm fine." okay..

Me: "Did you call your other family members?"

Palesa: "They should be here tonight or tomorrow morning."

Me: "Kgos i will also be here tomorrow."

Palesa: "Hmm." Wow, this is going to be harder than I thought.

Me: "Let me leave you then, please try to eat." I turned to leave

Palesa: "Why is God so ruthless?" I stopped on my toes when she asked, I turned only to find her still

looking outside.

Me: "What makes you think He is a ruthless?"

Palesa:" She was just a child. Innocent, she had so much to live for, her future was bright. She was the only thing I lived for but look now? She is gone, the only thing that made sense to me. If your God is really so kind, so loving, and all that you say of Him, why didn't He save her? Why did He allow her to die so young? Didn't he love her enough to save her? Wasn't she worth of God's love? Then again how do you serve someone who is so inconsiderate?" Tears were flowing out in her eyes. Her voice spoke with so much pain. She wanted to break down but I could tell that she didn't want to break down.

Me:" Baby, God is not heartless, if He was indeed heartless, He wasn't going to let His only begotten son to die for us on the cross of calvary, if he was heartless, then everytime we fall short he was going to kill us. If he was heartless we won't be where we are today. He is not like man who can turn his back against you. He sticks closer than a friend. He becomes a father when you need him to

be. If God was a human being I'm sure the whole world who have fanish out of anger.

The book of James 1:2 says Consider it pure joy, my brothers and sisters, whenever you face trials of many kinds, ³because you know that the testing of your faith develops perseverance. ⁴Allow perseverance to finish its work, so that you may be mature and complete, not lacking anything.

I know right now it doesn't make sense, but had Naomi lived, would you have rather watched her live in pain everyday with that pois on slowly eating her internal body? You would have watched her suffer everyday, being helpless? Sometimes God takes people he loves to spare them the pain. His word in the book of Isaiah 57: verse number 1 to 2 says Good people pass away, the godly often die before their time. But no one seems to care or wonder why. No one seems to understand that God is protecting them from the evil to come. For those who follow

godly paths will rest in peace when they die.

God had to intervene in this situation because he was sparing Naomi the pain and calamities of this world. Think about the trauma that she would have went through? Would she have survived it with everything that she went through? Naomi is finding rest with her father in heaven sisi. Yes, it doesn't make sense, yes it hurts but no one knows the hour or the time they will leave this earth. Never doubt that God loves you, Never doubt that he cares for you. Never doubt that even this situation, He is still God above everything else. Revelation 21: verse number 4 says

God will wipe away every tear from our eyes and death shall be no more, neither shall there be anguish (sorrow and mourning) nor grief nor pain any more, for the old conditions and the former order of things have passed away.

There's no situation that you will ever go through

without God weighing it first to see if you will be able to carry it. He knew that you will be able to carry this weigh or pain, he knew that you were capable of holding on. He knew that through you people will have hope that in Christ we live, move and have our being. God knew it all. For I

He know the plans I have for you, they are plans to prosper you and not to harm you, plans to give you hope and a future. Meaning your today its His Yesterday, hence he allowed this to happen. He even promised you in the book of Isaiah Chapter 43 verse 2 that when you go through deep waters, He will be with you. When you go through rivers of difficulty, you will not drown.

When you walk through the fire of oppression, you will not be burned up, the flames will not consume you.

This is just a situation to refine you, remember that when gold is in the process of being transformed into beautiful necklaces and rings, it going through

refinery, and when something is being refined, it needs fire, and a lot of fire, so it can come out pure and stainless. God is refining you, he is molding you into a perfect shape he see fit. Don't wallow in pain my darling, don't blame God. This is the will of God. It is done and he allowed, who are we to be against His will?

[03/12, 15:33] : My Breaking Point

NO STONE WILL BE LEFT UNTURNED

Chapter 85

Palesa Ella Motaung

I have never struggled to sleep like I did last night. The pain on my chest was unignorable, I couldn't act like I didn't feel it. Yes I have lost before both my parents but the pain I feel today it's very different.

When no one is watching I can't breath. When no one is watching I suffocate. I know that Kgosi's mother tried to speak some sense to me but I couldn't swallow what she was telling me. I felt my hear moving but to my chest, breaking in small pieces everytume I think of my baby. When I look around the house I still see her, I still feel here. Her clothes in the closet, her scent, her laugh and her squiky voice still haunt me.

How am I going to move on from this? How am I supposed to be strong? Where do I even start to confront my pain? How do I even confront it if I have to start? Gosh, it hurts. I wish there was someone who can understand how deep this pain. I wish I can let someone see how it is breaking me.

I got out of bed and knelt down beside the bed....

Me: "Father, they say you still exist even in pain... Where are you? I feel so lost and broken right now. Daddy, it hurts, go bohloko, it's painful..... I....can't...

It's very pain... Where are you... I can't feel you, I can't feel your presence....i can't..."

Words were beginning to fail me, my lips were trembling as I tried to pray but my heart was very heavy, too heavy. I cried until I had no tears left in me. I was putting the on my face so no one will hear that I'm crying. I quickly got up and went to shower, before everyone get up. I insisted on sleeping alone in my bedroom. I couldn't bear to be in the same room with Naomi s coffin.

My heart was too weak to torture myself like that. The 3 of my grandmother were in the same room with Naomi s coffin. At least they spared me the headache and the pain of being in the room with that casket, or else I would've gotten a heartache.

Today is the day of the burial. I wore the dress that my aunt bought for me. Everyone has been handful this week. I can't complain but I want everyone to

go home. When I was done I went to the other room only to find my grandmothers also up. MaMbatha was lighting some candles around the casket, I guess they went off.

MaNkosi: "How are you sthandwa Sam?" She was having a Bible in her hands. They must have just finished praying also.

Me: "I don't know Gogo, an I allowed to fe somehow?" I still couldn't bring myself to look at the casket.

MaNkosi: "Yes you are allowed my angel. No one is expecting you to be okay. I'm not expecting you to be strong. She is your child you gave birth to her in pain and it's okay to cry sthandwa Sami, it's okay to bot be alright. You are inky a human being. Come and sit next to Gogo. "

I sat next to her on the matrass and laid my head on her shoulder.

MaNkosi:" You know you have to see her for the last time to have closure? The only way to get over this, is for you go to see her. "

Me:" Gogo, I can't. I can't bring myself to look at her. She didn't deserve to die. Not like this I feel like I failed as her mother. I failed to protect my own child. I failed Naomi. "

MaMbatha:" Ah ah Palesa, you didn't fail her mtanami. You are not God, you didn't know that this will happen. Hence you can't blame yourself. Only God knew why this should happen. And I believe that Naomi is resting peacefully with her father in heaven. "

MaNkosi: "She is right, come and see her. Help Gogo to get up." I guess I didn't have much of a choice on this matter.

I helped her to get up and MaMbatha went to call Malome Busani to help opening the casket.

After opening it he squeezed me lightly in my shoulder and walked out.

MaNkosi:" Come. " We went round about the casket with my heart racing. I felt like I was running out of breath. I felt all sort of emotions weighing me down. I felt like crying but I was scared to do so thinking maybe I will disturb her peace. There were so many things going on in my mind.

Me: "Gogo, I can't I'm sorry but I can't do this. I don't want to see her, already her face is haunting me but seeing her in this coffin will be more than worse. I can't Gogo."

MaNkosi: "Yes you can baby, Gogo is here for you. I will be strong for you. You don't have to act all tough when I'm here. We are all here for you and I want you to take this moment as your last time with her. Remember you will never get to see her again, you will never get another chance to say goodbye like now. This is your chance my love. "

She held my hand tightly and MaMbatha was holding me at the back, hindering me to run away. MaButhelezi was packing the blankets they slept in.

It was bit chilly, it has been raining for a couple of days now.

We finally got closer and I closed my eyes, but I remembered that I can't keep on like this. I opened them and I saw her in her favorite white dress I bought for her. She lived for the dress trust me. Every Sunday she would want to wear it, but sometimes I refused and she will begin to through tantrums.

The very same dress she wore on my mother's funeral. Her eyes were closed, as if she was sleeping. Her eyebrows were perfectly aligned and her mouth closed. She looked like she was sleeping, deep sleep that she will soon wake up from. Her teddy bear was beside her, Mr Mike as we named it, she loved it so dearly. We even bough the teddy clothes. We were forced to buy the clothes by her. It was he baby.

I can't believe I won't see this perfect face ever again. I won't be able to say see her ever again. I won't be getting my morning kisses anymore. I won't hear her voice calling me seis Ella anymore. She was the only one who was used to call me by my second name. She loved it. It felt like a foreign love song everytume she called my name.

I wish I can wake her up and tell her I love her, I wish she can wake up and give me one last hug and kiss. I wish she can wake up to hear her final words. I wish she can wake so I can see her perfect eyes for the last time. I wish I can breath my own breath in her again.

I wish I can hold her for the last time, I wish I can get one last cheek squeez from her.

My heart was throbbing with so much pain. There are so many things I wish we could have done before she left me.

Me: "Nono why? Why did you leave me like this? I'm so sorry baby." tears were like a tap turned on. I couldn't hide them. I thought maybe my cry will make her feel sorry for me and she will cough and say I was only joking, but none of that was happening. She is really gone. I wish she lived until I see her graduate, until I see her get married and having her own children and me becoming a grandmother.

MaNkosi: "Take it all out baby, take it all out. It's okay." I cried my balls out.....

Later on we were gathered in the tent. There were so many people that I'm not even sure new Naomi but he they were there. The program wasn't that long, it was only few items.

I asked Nthabiseng to read my Eulogy.

Nthabiseng: "I greet you all in the name of Jesus Christ, what a sad rainy morning. I still can't believe that our little Naomi is gone. I'm here to read out an eulogy from her mother.

My dear Naomi, my Nonopie, my bestie...

Where do I start? How do I begin a farewell when I still can't believe you're gone? How do I say goodbye to a part of my soul?

The day you were born I felt this indescribable love. One I had never known before. From the beginning of your life I never knew I could have a love that was so strong. When I first laid my eyes on you, my heart knew how to love all over again. I saw a tiny beautiful soul that knew how to captivate my heart.

You came into my life and changed me forever. Over the years people have complimented me for being a good mother/sister but I can't take credit for

that. You were born good and you were the one who was often teaching me. I believe you are an angel God sent to teach me. You taught me love. You taught me honesty. You taught me how to forgive and how to be strong. You are the strongest person I have ever known and you gave me strength when I was weak. When times were sad and tough I looked to you for strength. You taught me how to be myself. Most of all you taught me about life and how to live. You made life for me worth living, I woke up with a purpose each and everyday, I lived for you and you only. It

You loved to dance and you danced so beautifully, you once said "Seis Ella, life is beautiful when you dance." you were so wise for your own age. You brought so much joy in life. You were so intelligent for your own age. You made me so proud. You have always been my greatest pride and joy. I'm not sure how I can live this life without you. I remember when you cried after your grandmother passed and you held onto me for your dear life and

you looked me in the eyes and said "Mommy, I don't want to live this life without you." that was the first time you ever called me your mother. And I told you I wasn't going to die. And remember me saying you couldn't die before me, so we agreed, we had to go at the same time because neither of us could live without the other.

But here we are today, you broke your promise, you left me, you left a huge void in my heart Naomi, I'm scared to sleep at night because I fear to forget you. I fear to live another day without you but I'm trying to convince myself that you are in a happy better place.

Rest my angel, rest now my beautiful angel. I will try my best to live without you, but I'm not promising to ever let you go. Mommy loves you so much my love. I thank God for trusting me to be your mother. The few years we spent together were all worth it, I will never change a thing in them. I have grown to

forever be with you everywhere I go. Thank you for being the good girl you have been.

I beli you have ran your good race of faith, rest now sthandwa Sami. Goodnight my love. "

She steeped down, she was in tears and she couldn't hold them anymore and so was I.

Afterwards Kgosi's mother took the pulpid and shared the word of God. I didn't hear anything. My eyes were focused on the casket. Oh, I forgot to tell you her father came, I mean Wisdom, he was accompanied by the police. I asked his wife to tell him. I didn't expect much from him anyway.

We left to the gracesite. It was drizzling. Oh yes, my aunts were also there. I only heard that Mokgadi's child wont be buried, for the what? I don't know.

We arrived and Londiwe took her position to proceed with the 2nd session. She read the word of God and the rain was slowly becoming too much. As she continued to read, she asked the guys to lower the casket, I felt as if my soul is leaving my body. Right then as her casket is going down with people humming a song, with tears blurring my vision, I saw Mam'Tabitha and Mam'Deborah standing next to her grave holding swords. I was confused, but I didn't say a thing then I saw angels in our midst moving, I think Londi also saw them because she stopped reading for a moment, and looked around.

I quickly wiped my tears and got up but one of my aunts held me back.

When her casket was finally down in the hole, Mam'Tabitha and Mam'Deborah hit their swords twice on the ground and there was a huge lightning that heat in the middle twice and we were all taken

by that....

What the hell just happened?

[03/12, 15:33] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 86

Mokgadi Motaung

I don't know what was painting me more, the fact that I can't bury my own daughter or the fact that she is actually dead.

She was swallowed by the angels of darkness after Mali died, and that was some kind of vengeance for killing their god. I was very angry, too angry that I didn't get the chance to give her a befitting send off as Palesa did to her child. It made me angry that Naomi yena will was sent off so beautifully, decors,

flowers, casket and all that was beautiful but my child died like a dog and she is not even buried.

I'm so angry with so many thing, I was chased out of the house and Palesa wanted nothing to do with me. I remember when I went there I found my bags packed and waiting for me. My children were so confused, they were crying. I tried to call Stella and Ditiro but they didn't answer my phone calls. They ignored me like I didn't exist.

Palesa put the final nail on my coffin when she asked for the car keys, remember it was raining. It has been raining the whole week and she didn't even care about my children. I wish I could suck the life out of her, so she can follow her family.

I watched as everything was taking place at the gravesites. I was standing far behind then huge tree watching everything. I expected Palesa to cry when Naomi's coffin was going down but she didn't. She

rather looked shocked or surprised, her grandmother was holding her when she tried to walk towards the grave but lightning that stroke twice in the middle stopped them.

Everyone was taken by that, well, i was also taken but what happened. There was silence, I couldn't hear clearly what was going on there but I could tell that they were all quiet for sometimes.

Palesa screamed after sometime, I couldn't tell if she was going crazy or not, after sometime I couldn't hear her anymore...I took out the black powder I had in my breast, maybe is time to end this whole thing....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I felt something kicking and arousing a vigorous spirit of prayer. As much as I tried to keep it to

myself, I couldn't some words were ought to come out of my lips. Normal words were failing to come out, it felt as if my tongue got twisted and I spoke in a language that I myself didn't understand

I thought maybe I'm crazy but my spirit was bubbling, have you ever felt that thing were you just want to swing in the presence of God with prayer, where you don't even know what you are saying but your spirit is just flowing, well that's exactly how I was feeling.

Kgosi's mother charged to me and asked the person who was holding me to let me go, so I can be free. She placed her hand on my tummy and she began to pray in foreign intense language. I guess people were surprised or shocked to what was happening.

The deeper she went in prayer, I felt this connection as if she was imparting something in me, it was like she was charging me with something else deeper

and deeper. I felt this divine connection between us. More like she was pouring herself in me, she was giving me part of herself and more.

She let me go and she stumbled a bit as the Spirit of the Lord was taking over her, Mam'Tabitha got near her and placed her hand on the stomach and she was receiving something else, as I was still standing there trying to gain some balance to stand, she came to me too and placed her hand on my tummy and she began to pray.

The Holy Spirit took over me all over again and she let me go after some time and I stumbled again but didn't falling. There was just too much power that was on me that I lost myself in the moment.

I went around praying for everyone there. Wherever the spirit was leading me to, I went and laid my hands on that person and groaned on their behalf. It was a very hectic moment that messed up lots of

people. Some were manifesting and some were rolling on the fall.

Imagine everything was happening at the graveyard. As much as we tried to stop, we just couldn't. The funeral parlor people had to close the grave because everyone was lost in their own moment, but some of course were not, they were just looking as if they are lost.

Kgosi's mother was laying on the ground on her Tammy, she was still caught in the moment, her husband helped her up and he let her to me, when she held my hand, I felt some electrifying energy being transferred between us, the moment was something else...

She let me to Kgosi who was kneeling down and some other guys helped him to get up and she handed my hand to him and he held my hand tightly but the power of God was just too much for both of

us. He couldn't keep still and so did I. They had to walk with us to the cars. People were helping each other to walk.

We all got in the cars and we drove home. When we got home they helped us to go in the house and they closed us in the bedroom. I only heard Kgosi's mother saying they should leave us in the room, and let God finish what He has started.

Mam'Tabitha: "Lord manifest your power, reveal more of you in them. Reveal your glory in them. Make it known through out the nation through them that You are God of flesh and there's nothing that is impossible with you. You who have began a great work in them, complete it until Jesus Comes back. Let your kingdom manifest in their journey, let your will be done in their lives. Shake the heaven on their behalf. You have said in your word in the book of Psalm 2: 8 that they should ask of you and you will make nations their inheritance, the ends of the earth

their possession. As they begin this journey God lead them, they are your children that are called by your name.

As you prepare them for what you have called them, strengthen them, impart them with your wisdom, recharge them with your spirit. You have not given them the spirit of fear but you gave them the spirit of power and sound mind. Reveal the hidden mysteries of your Kingdom to them reveal the secrets of your Kingdom to them. For you have said in your word that the secret things belongs to you O God and those that are revealed belongs to them and their children.

I pray for your anointing over their lives, not an ordinary anointing, not the anointing of their parents, but anointing that will break yokes that their parents couldn't break. Anointing that will flow into areas their parents' anointing couldn't flow into. Anointing that will flow into the camp of the enemy to destroy

and set the captives free. Anointing that that will break bondage of sickness, anointing that will break bondage of sins, anointing that will break curses and set families free.

Open their eyes to see beyond the human eyes, activate their spirits, awaken them and let them overflow with your spirit. Order their steps and direct their path in this journey. I decree and I declare that they shall be the heads not the tails, they shall love to conquer. They will proclaim your goodness in the land of the living. Your blessing will overflow to their generation.

If you are God in heaven, release your mind and heart to them in the Mighty name of Jesus Christ."

Her hands were on our heads as she prayed. We were still laying on the floor. She helped me to get up and she also helped Kgosi to stand up.

Mam'Tabitha:" It is done, I seal you with the blood and fire of God, no demon in hell shall be able to stand against you as long as you live. Whatever your hands touches shall be blessed. Wherever you set your feet on, you shall possess the land. The blessing of God is your possession and the favour of God is upon you. You shall find favour both in the sight of man and in God. Your seed shall be blessed in the name of Jesus Christ. May God shine his face upon you and may His hand be upon you. I declare Psalm 91 over your life, in the mighty name of Jesus Christ Amen. "

Me&Kgosia:" Amen. "

Mam'Tabitha:" Go and do the right thing young man, and I will see you afterwards. You two are blessed and what you experienced today, it's just the bit and pieces of what God wants you to experience. Invite God in everything you do. God is about to elevate you two. But I want you to do something for me and

for yourself. "She was looking me. I nodded.

Mam'Tabitha:" I want you to forgive everyone and everything that has ever hurt you, it doesn't matter if it's a person or a thing. Forgive, forgive and forgive. Let go and let Go. Stop holding yourself hostage of unforgiveness. The root of evil begins when we are unable to forgive. Don't let people take the mantle of greatness that God wants to release over your life. God wants you two to do exploit but you have to let Him be in charge. God and anger can never co-exist. Let go, they are all not worthy it. Vengeance belongs to God." I nodded with teary eyes.

Mam'Tabitha:" Don't forget to send me your wedding invitation, I'm always a prayer away. "She smiled and held both our hands and kissed them and she disappeared.

Kgosi looked at me and smiled faintly and I also did.

Kgosi:" Come here. "He opened his arms for a bear hug and dived right into them.

Kgosi:" Wow. "He said after he broke the hug.

Me:" Right? "

Kgosi:" Yep" We both laughed and our eyes met as we laughed.

Kgosi: "It's so good to see you smile."

I smiled again, it's been a while since I smiled. It still hurts that my baby is not coming back but this smile I guess it's worth it too.

Kgosi: "Let's go and get you fed." He held my hand and we walked out....

[03/12, 15:34] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 87

A week later

Mokgadi Motaung

I couldn't take the pain of losing my child anymore. I was suffocating in pain. I didn't want to live anymore. Life was not worth living anymore. I never thought in million years I will ever come back to this place ever again. Being back at home with nothing was never part of the plan.

This house holds nothing but bad memories for me. When I left this place it was the most joyous day of my life, I was excited and happy about but right now? With this fatherless kids always being noisy, asking for more than I can offer them. Maybe die is not a bad choice after all.

I poured the black poison in all their food and I also put one in my own food. They were sitting under the tree, talking to our noisy neighbor who always wants to hear about our whereabouts. I didn't entertain her. I gave them the food and I watched them as they eat as if they have never seen rice and fish in their whole entire time.

My sister at least allowed us to stay here, even though she wasn't happy. She kept on reminding me how my children finish all her groceries and all that nonsense. Maybe is best if we all die and save her from all this mystery we are bring to her and the shame that she can't even hide it.

When they finished their food, I gave them water and told them to go and sleep, I also ate my food and drank water and went to join my children.

I guess death is for cowards, then I choose to be a coward because I can't live to suffer like this and watch my kids see me suffer while the death of my other child is also torturing me. Maybe this is the solution for me and for everyone.

I refuse to be a charity case to anyone....

Oratile Mofekeng

Wow, I can't believe that my life is finally falling into place right now. I enjoy this new change. So many things have happened in the past and to be honest, I'm glad it happened because if it didn't I wouldn't have met this wonderful family.

Kenzi's mother offered me a job in her company, it's nothing fancy, I'm her PA, trust me she is someone you don't want to mess up with when she is at work, but she is a very wonderful boss. The Jones family has been so kind to me.

Today, since Boss lady went to Cape Town to see her baby boy, Kenzie decided that we go visit her boyfriend Lindo. They made things official two weeks ago and madam has even skipped work to go see her boyfriend. I guess love is that dangerous if it can really make a lady to skip work for it.

I accompanied her to the doctor so she can get a Dr's note, imagine. She had to pretend to be sick and all that.

We arrived at her boyfriend's home, the parents were around. I guess they are that chilled.

Londi: "Kenzie, how are you baby?"

Kenzie: "I'm good thanks and how are you Auntie Londz." They hugged

Londi: "I'm good thank you. Here to see your boyfriend?" she blushed

Kenzie: "Yes, and this is my friend, Oratile."

Londi: "Hello friend, how are you sweetheart?" She opened her arms for me for a hug, her smile is very contagious. She hugged me so tight that I felt like I'm about to cry.

Londi: "It's okay baby, let it all out. You don't have to

hold so much by yourself. God wants to help you carry your burden. The anger is holding you back, let it go and forgive my my love."

How did she know? I mean I have never told her anything. Yes I know that Anger is consuming me, I know it so much because I don't even want to hear my mother's name. That name makes me so angry. When Mercy called the other day to tell me about Palesa's child, to be honest, I thanked God that she died because the relationship was going to weigh me down. I mean Palesa is our cousin, how do you have a child with your cousin? Is that even normal. I'm sorry but Naomi's death, saved us to force unnecessary relationships.

Don't get me wrong, I'm nit angry with Palesa but I'm so angry with my mother for being so cruel and heartless.

Me:"I'm so angry with her right, she doesn't deserve to be my mother, I hate her."

Londi: "Kenzie, Lindo is in the basement watching

movie or something, come and sit down Nana."
Kenzie gave us space and I say down, she went to
get me some water....

Palesa Ella Motaung

Hmm, it hasn't been an easy week but what can I
say? I'm here still standing and thriving I guess.
There are moments where I miss Naomi so bad and I
wish I could just talk to her but I can't. Praying and
reading the word of God is what kept me sane on
most of the days.

Everyone left but MaNkosi refused to leave, she
stayed behind with Lolo, they have been a great
escape from reality. They make life much more
easier for me when they are around. They don't
overcrowd me or over question me. When I don't
want to talk they give me the space I need, which
I'm grateful for.

Kgosi called me and he asked that we go out for lunch today. I couldn't say no, I kinda like missed him. It's been a while since I saw him. The last time I saw him was on the Sunday after the funeral. He had to go back home to recover, so he is coming today just to see me. He said he wants us to talk, I don't know about what because we always talk over the phone about so many things. Sometimes even Gogo complain when I'm on the phone with him.

I finished dressing, I wasn't comfortable with everything that Lolo forced me to wear. I prefer jeans over everything thing else because I feel like the tight my huge body but nah, girl decided that I wear a dress for a change, a short one on top of that and Nthabiseng agreed with her.

Gogo: "Haibo sisi, are you going to have sex with guy or is just a date?"

Me: "You see? Lolo I told you that this dress is too

short for my liking, I can't wear this and Kgosi doesn't like it when j wear short things."

Lolo: "Mogirl, has this Kgosi ever saw you wearing a short thing? Haibo don't bore wens, you look perfect even Nthabi agreed with me, we can even video call her again."

Me: "Okay fine whatever, let me go before I get late."

Gogo: "You must get your driver's license I don't like this thing of your using a taxi, it's not safe out there and look at what you are wearing, boys will be throwing themselves at you."

Me: "Gogo, I will be fine don't stress too much. Lolo, my make isn't too much?"

Lolo: "No, it's fine. You look perfect wena girl. Gogo I will drive her and the boyfriend will bring her back, don't you think it's a good idea?" She was just looking for an excuse to go out this one, she should be studying for her exams, her exams are coming up in few months. I also wish to register and go back to school, get my life in order. But I guess that one step at the time won't kill me. I just need to get

over this grief, I know it won't be as easy as it looks but, I'm ready to face it.

Gogo: "As long as you come back and study or else I'm calling your father, Mbali will come and you will go back home."

Lolo: "No need for drama wena girl, I will be back ASAP, I will bring something nice."

Gogo: "I don't want something nice, go and come back before I get pisses off."

Lolo: "Yes ma'am, Lele let's get going."

Me: "Bye Gogo." I kissed her, this old woman is very dramatic shame.

Lolo drive me to town, I went to Maxi's to wait for Kgosi, he said he will be here in plus minus 15 minutes. I ordered a drink and starters.

I received a call from Stella.

Me: "Hello."

Stella: "Palu, how are you sesi?" Okay, what's going

on?

Me: "I'm good thanks and how are you Rakgadi?"

Stella: "I'm good babes, eish, I have received sad news today, Mokgadi and her kids passed on this afternoon." Oh wow, that's very sad.

Me: "What? What happened?"

Stella: "They said it is food poisoning."

Me: "That's so sad."

Stella: "Yah very sad and now we don't even have money to arrange the funeral can you believe that she didn't even have a funeral policy, I mean how are we supposed to bury her and her 3 kids now? That's too much."

Me: "Kante you didn't take out policies on her behalf?"

Stella: "They lapsed and I had to cash some of them because Ditiro is admitted."

Me: "Eh, admitted? For what? What's wrong with her?"

Stella: "Hai Ngwana buti ever since we came back from Naomi's funeral, she hasn't been well, last night she has been complaining saying her chest is burning so I took her to the hospital." hmm yah neh, when it rains it pours indeed.

Me: "Yoh, Hai that's said, look I have to go now, I will call you tomorrow about the funeral arrangements. Sharp."

Stella: "Okay baby, sharp."

Kgosi walked in, he commanded the attention when he walked in. He walked to my table and stood in front of me.

Kgosi: "I'm not getting a hug?" Really? I helped me up and gave me one hell of a hug that made everyone to look at us of course.

Kgosi: "You look so beautiful." He kissed me on my forehead.

Me: "You don't look so bad yourself Mr." He perked my lips and opened the chair for me and he said down. All eyes were looming around us.

Kgosi: "I always aim to please cakes. How have you been?"

Me: "Still hard but I'm trying." He kissed my hands.

Kgosi: "We will get through this together, I promise you. One day we will have a reason to smile again."

Me: "Yah, I know, so how's work?" He raised his one eyebrow?

Kgosi: "Serious?"

Me: "What?"

Kgosi: "We are not here to talk about my work, but we are here to talk about us."

Me: "Hmmm okay, what about us?"

Kgosi: "Uh, let's see, let's start here, (he held my hands again) I like you, no scratch that I love you. And I will be lying to you if I say I don't see the perfect wife for me. Before you tell me anything about how much you went through, I know all that.

And i want to go through a lot with you Palesa, I don't want to spent another moment, and another day without you. I want to go through this grieve with you, I want to grieve Naomi with you, She was our beautiful angel that brighten our lives and now that she is gone, our hearts a deemed and over clouded with grive but that doesn't stop my heart from loving you even deeper. It doesn't stop me from falling deeper and deeper in love with you. I want to be your knight shining amor, I want to be there for you when you feel like you can't carry on anymore.

I want to be part of the reason you smile, I want to be part of reason you cry tears of joy. I want to be part of every archivement in your life. I want to go through your lows and highs with you. I love you cakes, and I know that Naomi loved me for you and she also loved you for me. Allow me to kiss the grieve away, allow me to make the grieve easy for you, allow me to love you in your brokenness. Give me a chance to love you right.

Make me the happiest man alive and marry me please. I know we haven't dated but I know what my heart wants. I know that my heart and my God approves of you and that's all that matters....

[03/12, 15:34] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 88

Palesa Ella Motaung

I have seen many guys or heard many guys propose maybe on TV but this proposal right here, it's one of its kind. Maybe is because he is in tears too, I have never imagined Kgosi crying well beside on Naomi's funeral when the Holy Spirit was dealing with him but today I'm seeing another different version of him, the emotional, the vulnerable side of him that I have never seen before.

His eyes carried so much hope, they carried so much life for me, something I didn't have, something I thought I lost, something that was missing in my life. When they say people go through shit(excuse the language) that's me, I went through it all. There was a time and point in my life I never thought I will raise up, there was a time I thought I was tossed into a bottomless pit, where there's no dreams, no hopes, but endless pain and sorrow.

I have felt all kinds of pain, and doubt there's no form of pain I haven't felt so far. But I'm still standing, it is through my imperfections that my true beauty shines through, there's nothing special about me, there's nothing beautiful about me that I doubt Kgosì couldn't have found in another woman. I'm fat as people would call me, I have big breast and big bums, there's nothing I could call beautiful about me, but through the very same imperfections that might have made me doubt myself here and

then but to be honest I have learned to love myself and appreciate myself more than anything. I love me now hence loving another person shouldn't be a problem.

He was still holding my hand with his eyes locked in mine, the emotions were real, vivid and honest. I saw a man I could build a home with, I saw a man that I can lean on, I saw a man I can go down on my knees and pray with, I saw a man my kids can call daddy.

I got emotional also, I nodded repeatedly because I feared that my voice may fail me.

Kgosi: "Is that a yes?"

Me: "Yes, in every language." Damm girl your watch too many movies, anyways he got up excitedly and he helped me to get up.

Kgosi: "Ladies and gentlemen she said yes."

Everyone clipped their hands and cheered for us.

We kissed....

Kgosi: "I don't have a ring though." Are you being serious right now?

Kgosi: "I prose I'm going to buy it for you as soon as we get out of here."

Me: "I don't need a ring to get married to you."

Kgosi: "You deserve a diamond trust me, I will buy you one."

Me: "I would love to have your diamond on my hand sir." he kissed me again and he ordered his food and later we got a free deserved to congratulate us.

Later on we took a walk around the until he forced me to choose a ring for myself, we argued until I finally gave in and we went to American Swiss to check the ring.

Kgosi: "So which one do you like between these

two?"

Me: "I don't know, I love them both, I think you should surprise me then."

Kgosi: "Okay, you will see it on our engagement party then."

Me: "We are having an engagement party?"

Kgosi: "Oh yes, the traditional wedding and the white wedding too."

Me: "I don't think that's necessary though, I don't mind getting married at home affairs."

Kgosi: "Well I do mind and I want you to experience all the wedding jitters, planning your wedding, being stressed and taking out your stress on me. I want us to go through all that, to share the memories of planning our wedding." He seemed to be too excited about this whole thing.

Me: "Hmm, yah yah, can we go now, I'm exhausted."

Kgosi: "Whatever madam wants, let's go." I let the way out of the store he thanked the lady who was assisting us.

Kgosi: "Did I tell you that the dress looks so good on you?"

I turned only to find him taking pictures of me from behind.

Me: "Seriously now?" I gave him a bored face.

Kgosi: "You are disturbing my video Mrs me, so please continue to walk."

Me: "Stop taking a video of me."

Kgosi: "But I loved it sweetheart."

He was enjoying all this and I guess I was enjoying the attention too, we ended up taking pictures and buying some ice cream before he drove me home.

He parked in front of our gate.

Me: "Thank you for today, it was beautiful. I really needed to get my mind off everything."

Kgosi: "Anything for my Queen." I smiled

Me: "Guess who called me today?"

Kgosi: "Londiwe."

Me: "Nopes, Stella, she said Mokgadi and her kids passed on today."

Kgosi: "What? How did it happen?"

Me: "Food poisoning apparently."

Kgosi: "Wow, was life that bad for them?"

Me: "I guess so, I feel so terrible for chasing them out, I should have known better. Stella and Ditiro are very selfish., they knew that she was relying on them for everything but yet they used her as their pawn in their own game." I was getting bored and irritated.

Kgosi:" Do you want to go to the funeral? "

Me:" I don't know, maybe, as much as she hurt me, I don't believe in revenge, I want to make peace with my past. I want to let go of the anger and the bitterness because I fear I will take it out on wrong people. I don't want anger to consume me and turn me into a monster that I am not. I want to forgive

her, for my sake and Naomi's sake, Naomi was never a toxic child, she didn't like to hold grudges, as much as Mokgadi and her kids were ill treating us, she never hated them, she will always come to me and tell me that she wished that her cousins will love her too since she loves them.

It takes a bigger person to calm the storm and stop the fire when it's too much. If I want to have a peaceful life with you, I need to confront my past, I need to confront what hurt me. I know for sure that they gambled with my child's life, and that they will be judged by God not me. I'm ready to forgive them and let go and start a new chapter in my life. When I leave this place, I want to leave all the hurts, the pains and bitterness here. I want nothing to hold me back. "

He squeezed my hand and kissed it. He looked at me for a long time until I couldn't keep the eye contact anymore.

Kgosi:" You are a phenomenal woman my Queen, and never allow anyone to talk you out of who you are. I pray that God will give you strength to move pass all the pain of this place. And I know that forgiving the people who had a hand in Naomi's death is not the easiest thing to do, it takes a strong woman who understands that this life is short to hold on to grudges. And that makes me to fall in love with you even more." Does he really have to make me blush?

Me:" Ncoo, you are so sweet. "

Kgosi:" I know and thank you ma'am. Let me get going before your grandmother comes out and chow my head. I see you tomorrow for breakfast and we will discuss how to help your family further."

Me: "Thank you my King." He popped his eyes as if he never expected what I just said, well obvious he didn't expect it and I also didn't experereit.

Kgosi: "Did you just call me your king?"

Me: "Yah, I mean your name is Kgosi, which means

King, so I was just translating your name."

Kgosi: "Mxm, go and sleep, I see you are tired." He pretended to be sad

Me: "Askies hau, don't take it personal. Yes you are my King since I'm your king. But I have to go now. I will see you tomorrow." I tried to open the door and he stopped me.

Kgosi;"Not so fast my darling, give Daddy some sugar before you leave. We kissed for some time, don't worry, nothing heated, just some fun playful kisses.

He got out and opened the door for me and hugged me so tight.

Kgosi:" I miss you already. "

Me:" I also miss you, but its only few hours till tomorrow.

Kgosi:" I love you my Queen. "

Me:" I love you too my King. "

Kgosi:" That's music to my ears, please say it again.
"

Me:" I love you too My King. "

Kgosi:" Hmm, I can't get used to this words, they sound like a sweet melody from heaven."

Me: "Oh wow, what a beautiful lie. I really have to go now. I will see you tomorrow?"

Kgosi: "Tomorrow it is babe."

He kisses my forehead and I left.

My heart was literally doing a dap dance from the gate to the door. Love isn't a bad thing right? Nah, it's not a bad thing after all. I opened the door and I found both Gogo and Lolo at the door. They were looking very stra, spying strange kinda look.

Me: "Okay what are you guys doing on the window?"

Gogo: "Oh, I was asking Lolo to fix the curtains. We thought you were not going to come back late."

Me: "Oh, yeah, I guess I lost track of time."

Lolo: "So, how was the date? I mean did you enjoy it?"

Me: "Yes I did, it was perfect. And he proposed." I said excitedly

Gogo and Lolo: "He proposed?"

Gogo: "So fast?"

Lolo: "Where is the ring?" They were both looking at me shocked.

Me: "He said I will see it on our engagement party."

Gogo: "Already planning the engagement party? Wow, okay."

Me: "You don't seem to be happy for me Gogo."

Gogo: "I am happy for you s thandwa Sami, is just that I didn't expect everything to happen so fast. But if you are happy, I'm also happy. I just wish I will have more time with you, to get to know you and do everything I did for all my grandchildren for you too."
"

Me:" I know how much you want to do everytfor me Gogo, but I'm no longer a child and I will never hold

it against you. You being here right now is what matters the most. I'm happy that I have you as my family, im6hally that you are part of me and you don't need to do anything for me to prove your love for me Gogo. I feel your love already, I know that you love me too much, hence you are here today with me. You could have left and went to stay in your house, but you decided to leave your luxurious home to come and spend your time with me. That's enough for me Gogo, and I appreciate it, it's the best thing that has ever happened to me, well after Naomi of course. " We all laughed.

Gogo:" I'm happy that I have met you before I died, I know now that when I die, my heart will be at peace. I thank God for granting me my dying wish that was to meet your mother and her children, even though I met you guys at the most uncommon circumstances, my heart is happy. And I want you to know that I love you so much my baby, and wish you nothing but unspeakable joy and happiness, I wish to see you smile like this everyday. That smile that you walked in right now with, I wish to see it

every9because is the most beautiful smile I have never seen you had since I met you.

I already love this boy for you....

[03/12, 15:34] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 89

Mercy M Mofokeng

I have received a message earlier on from Palesa requesting to see Wisdom, she further said she couldn't go to see him without my concern. I don't know if I should be happy or skeptical but hopefully this is the first step into the right direction. All I need is peace, something I wish my mother can also want in her life.

Me and my daughter moved out during the weekend

after Naomi's funeral. My husband is still very much broken with this whole thing. For the fact that he didn't have a relationship with her made him even more sad. I wish I could have done something, maybe tried to reach out earlier to Palesa and Naomi, maybe Palesa would have allowed Naomi to know her father.

Maybe Wisdom won't be feeling this bad, it's more like life became more useless to him again, as if he has no reason to live again. I tried to prove to him beyond the reasonable doubt that he has so much to live for. Our daughter still needs him, I still need him. As much as things weren't so good between us, we need to work together to bring our family together.

I finished with the document I was working on and drove to prison to see Wisdom, at least this days he is no longer closing us out. I thought after Naomi he will close us out but he didn't even though he

doesn't talk much. I received a call from Ora along the way, I never thought I will live to see this day. Ruth is perfectly fine, but after her children rejected her apology that has been bothering her, I tried so much to give her hope that one day her kids will come around.

To be honest, I was also taken a bit by the revelation but I want to move on, I want to start afresh, anger and hatred has never helped anyone in this life. I know what she did is wrong but the important thing is that she is trying to correct her wrongs and it will be so wrong of us to judge her. She did what she thought was right then, but her eyes are now opened she sees the lights.

Me: "Oratile."

Oratile: "Hey Mercy, how are you?"

Me: "Ke sharp, wena?"

Oratile: "I'm good thank you." She sounded chilled

and that's the thing with her, she always try so hard to hide her emotions.

Me: "This is a nice surprise."

Oratile: "Yeah, I know. Look, I want to come home this coming Friday, but I don't want to go to Ruth's house, can I please come to your house, plus I'm coming with a friend."

Me: "Oh, okay no problem, I'm sure that Khuts o will also love to see her aunt, I will prepare rooms for you two."

Oratile: "Thank you. And Mercy?"

Me: "Yes Rati?"

Oratile; "Thank you, thank you for not giving up on my brother, thank you for keeping him sane in this trying times and thank you for trying so hard to keep my family together in one I know it wasn't easy but you kept on trying. I really appreciate it."

Me: "It's a pleasure sesi, I want my family back, I just want us to have peace and live in peace. I know sometimes is not easy to Revis the past but the

only way to the future is to deal with the past and move on. Everything will be fine, trust me."

Oratile: "I guess so, I have to go now, we will talk later and give Khuts o a big kiss for Rakgadi."

Me: "I will, bye sesi."

She hanged up, wow this is new...

I arrived and Wisdom came out and he said down opposite me. He had a blue eye. I knew then that life happened and asking him about it might just anger him. He has been involved in couple of fights lately. I don't know if it's because of anger or what but I don't like it. He really needs to snap out of it before he gets killed.

Me: "How are you?"

Wisdom: "Fine as you can see. Why didn't want to see me this time around. J ust know that I'm not in the mood for a lecture today."

Me: "I'm not here to lecture you Wisdom, it's your

life that you are ruining and also chances of getting out of this place, so please continue to do as you please. If you really think acting like this will bring her back, it's fine, but keep in your mind that Khuts o is also your daughter, who still needs her father, so somblief, do us a favour, and think about her too. I'm her to let you know that Palesa sent me a text, she is asking to see you. "He sat up straight quickly

Wisdom:" Why does he wants to see me? "

Me:" I guess the only way to find out, is to see her. You and her had a child and maybe she needs closure as much as you want it."

Wisdom:" Hmm, so when does she wants to see me? "

Me:" Whenever you are ready."

Wisdom: "Tomorrow then."

Me: "Okay, let me get going and Wisdom, please get your shit together. There's life beyond this cells and you have a daughter to love for. So asomblief, stop being selfish."

I walked away...

Stella Motaung

Me: "Yes sesi, she agreed to help, well she said she will call me but maybe she forgot to get back to me. Phela we need to play our cards right with her if we really want to her to give us money."

Ditiro: "I doubt she will give us money, she no longer trust us and remember we don't even know how deep she knows about the cause of Naomi's death and using me as scapegoat might not work. That girl is not as stupid anymore."

Me: "Well, all you have to do is to pretend to be sick because we ar running out of cash, and we can use your headaches as the main sickness." Ditiro has been suffering headaches lately after Naomi's funeral. She wasn't to well and the medication that the doctor prescribed is quiet expensive and we

can't afford it in a long run hence we need Palesa in our corner. We need her to be there with money, if she has to be tammed, so be it. I will tame her so she can be out ATM.

We can't use the money we got from the Mokgadi's policies. That we will use in raining days. We need to come up with a business that will geneus profit quickly. We didn't really choose huge covers for her hence the money is not that much.

Ditiro: Well, we shall see when she gets here. "

Me:" Okay rest then. Don't forget that you were discharged today. "

Ditiro:" Okay, leave me to rest then. "

Please Ella Motaung

We drove to Mokgadi s place after our breakfast, we had to go drop Lolo at home after breakfast, she insisted on coming with me to breakfast. So we

couldn't leave Gogo alone for a long time. So she had to stay behind. The trip to there is quiet draining.

You know sometimes life is bit unfair, having to forgive people who not even sorry, for your own sake. But yah, it is what it is.

Kgosi: "Penny for your thoughts?" He placed his hand over mine.

Me: "You will be a millionaire by now." I gave him a weak smile.

Kgosi: "What's bothering my Queen?"

Me: "Nothing hectic, I just don't know how I should feel about this visit."

Kgosi: "You know that you are not forced to do it right?"

Me: "I know but like I said, I really need to close this chapter of my life and next year I want to go back to school. "

Kgosi:" That's my Queen, so what do you want to study? "

Me:" Well, I wanted to study medicine, well it was my father wish that one day I become a doctor and I so wish I can fulfill his dream but my results aren't so great hey. "

Kgosi:" So, does that mean you forgive him? "

Me:" I think is time, lately God has been speaking to me so vividly about forgiveness and letting His will to be done, and I just want to give him a benefit of a doubt this time around. Dude, this man is so good yah I might have doubted him here and there before but now I think He is worth it." He smiled...

Kgosi:" Indeed, He is a wonderful God, I read the scripture in the book of J on 42:2 that say I know that he can do all things and no one can stop you"

Me: "Amen, preach it pastor Bae." we both laughed.

Kgosi: "So if you really want to do medicine, why don't you rewrite science and mathematics? I mean you just register and study while home and go write. I can help you wherever I can. And I was thinking

we should get married early next year."

Me: "King that's in 2 months phela, how do we plan a wedding in 2 months? I haven't even told the rest of my family yet, have you told your parents?"

Kgosi: "No, not yet. I was thinking we we take a long drive to Joburg after the funeral to go and tell them."
"

Me:" Yuuh, o na le drama Ngwana batho. I still have to talk to Gogo and we both know that she is here because of me and this up and down thing doesn't sit well with her, so let me talk to her first and the rest will follow. "

Kgosi:" Oh, well it's fine we can organize a family lunch this side and invite my family, I'm sure they won't mind coming."

Me:" Okay, than can work then and we will revisit getting married in 2 months time later on. "

We arrived at my grandparents house, I haven't been here in years. I don't even have a single

memory of being here. I don't remember how it felt to be here. Ditirov's car was parked on the drive way. The house is huge.

We walked in hand in hand, we knocked and I felt very uncomfortable, uneasy. There was this uneasiness around this house that I couldn't ignore the air around here was quite disturbing. Stella opened the door and I saw a dark cloud hovering around her head. It was very dark and her aura was very unpleasant. Her eyes were filled with venom, filled with poison....

[03/12, 15:34] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 90

Kgosi Mankoe

Wow, life has been hectic for sure but I'm happy

how everything turned out to be. I now know that we can plan whatever we want in this life but it's only God who has the final say in everything we do.

I'm happy that I'm in a happy space now, I'm happy that there's a light at the end of the tunnel not for me only but for Palesa too. It really take a strong woman to keep standing after the storms of life has dealt with her. She is worth everything beautiful that is coming to her. I looked at the diamond necklace once again and smiled.

I bought it for her the day we went to the mall, I didn't tell her but now I'm ready to give it to her. I know that it will suit her perfectly.

We are going to meet with Wisdom today, I guess she wants to deal with all her demons and move on. I don't blame her too, when you finally get to a place where you want peace, you will do anything to keep your peace.

I called my parents, I knew they will kill me if I don't tell them about the engagement, truth be told, it wasn't planned. I didn't plan to propose to her, but my heart just knew that it was the right time to do it. It felt right when I was doing it then.

Mama: "I see that Palesa is keeping you too busy to even call us."

Me: "Come on Mommy bear, you know that's not right."

Mama: "So, why didn't you call and why did we hear by strangers that you proposed?"

Me: "Damn Lindo, I asked him not to tell you guys. Where is Dad?"

Mama: "Because Lindo cares about me, he is out to buy somethings for me, he should be back any minute from now on."

Me: "Okay, so yah, I proposed and she said yes."

Mama: "Ncooo, I'm so happy for you baby. I must

call her to congratulate her."

Me: "Yah yah, but I wanted to talk to you and Dad about the negotiations..."

Mama: "Okay, already?"

Me: "I guess there's no need for us to wait anymore. I was thinking we get married next year February."

Mama: "Kgosi that's like in two months time"

Me: "I know mommy Bear and I was thinking we have the negotiations on Christmas day, I mean that will be a very beautiful day where both our families meet and all Tha and we can even have the traditional wedding the very same day."

Mama: "Lord have mercy in my soul, baby do you realize that Christmas is in two weeks time?"

Me: "Mommy come on, there's no need for us to wait anymore. The longer we wait the more you channel me to go do things only married people should be doing and that won't be cool. So please talk to Dad please please."

Dada: "Talk to me about what?"

Mama: "Your son wants to get married in two weeks time, he wants to pay lobola and have a traditional wedding on Christmas day and next year February he wants a white wedding."

Dada: "That's my man, that's what men do son. There's no need for you to wait while you can make things happen. I'm behind you all the way I will actually draft the letter and email it to you. Just make sure you talk to Palesa and make sure you convince her in the right way don't force anything on her. Have you bought the ring? "

Mama:" Sugar you also support this madness? No woman will ever want to plan her big day in two weeks. That's insane. "

Dada:" Well, in those soapies you always force me to watch they always make it happen and I know that You will also make it happen. Hire people who can make things happen."

Mama:" Well, that's if Palesa agrees to whatever you are saying. "

Me:" Leave Palesa to me, she is my wife after all. "

Dada:" Okay sonny, do what you have to do, we are behind you. Beside you are not getting any younger. So, go for it. "

Me:" Thank you dada, I have to go now. I will call you guys later on."

Dada:" okay son. We love you. "

Me:" I love you too. "

I hanged up and took my keys and walked out....

Palesa Ella Motaung Motaung

Our meeting with Stella didn't end quite well yesterday, I couldn't bring myself to sit there with her. Her presence was weighing me down so much that I couldn't fake the emotions that came with me being there.

So we had to cut the meeting short, hse wanted to know why we are cutting the meeting short, I just

told her that I have other things to do and I gave her money to assist with Mokgadi's funeral. I won't be attending the funeral tomorrow. I don't feel like attending the funeral.

Have I forgiven them? I don't know yet, I don't want to force myself to deal with things that I'm not sure I will be able to carry all at one's. There are so many things I still need to do for myself first. I need to forgive myself first, I want to love myself first and more.

So, today I'm going to see Wisdom, I believe it's about time we have the long overdue conversation, it's about time I let him know how I feel, it's about time I tell him how what he did left me broken but again it left me with a precious gift I wouldn't trade for anything.

I asked Kgosi to come with me, for one reason, I want him to also to forgive Wisdom. If we are to

embark on a journey of husband and wife, we need to start on a clean slate with no grudge from the past or with no past hanging on our back.

Gogo: "When are we meeting this guy?"

Me: "Soon Gogo, I promise."

Gogo: "Maybe you should invite him for dinner tonight."

Lolo: "I agree with Gogo, and I will cook."

Me: "You know how to cook?"

Gogo: "The poor guy will never sleep if he ever eats your food wena Lolo. Actually we will not sleep all of us." We laughed.

Me: "I will invite him over tonight and we will bring food, since you Madam Lolo your food is poisonous."

Gogo: "Thank you baby."

He texted me telling me he is waiting for me at the

gate. I said goodbye to Lolo and Gogo.....

We arrived at the prison. We were in the waiting area with my heart pounding. Mercy was sitting next to me, she looked so chilled about this whole situation. It looked like a nightmare to her. Kgosi on the other hand, I couldn't read his emotions, he just looked blank.

The door we were facing opened and he was accompanied by a woman in a uniform. He sat down and the woman went to stand by the door.

Wisdom: "Hi.. Hi." He looked unsettled. I will also be feel unsettled too.

Mercy: "Hey, are you good?" He nodded repeatedly and there was an awkward silence afterwards.

Wisdom: "I'm good, you?"

Mercy: "I'm fine, you look so much better than yesterday."

Wisdom: "Yah, how are you Palesa?"

Me: "I'm fine, I'm okay." This is harder than I anticipated

Wisdom: "Kgosi, how are you."

Kgosi: "I'm good."

Silence again. Oh gosh why does it have to be like this?

Me: "I'm dropping the chargers." I blurred out.

Wisdom: "What? Why? I mean..."

Me: "I want to move on Wisdom. What happened I the passed happen. It's time to move on, and let go of all the anger and resentment. For Christ sake we are family. And I wouldn't want your child to grow up without her father. Already Naomi left without knowing you and I don't want Khuts o to grow up without knowing you.

You have hurt me, yes, you have broken my trust in men, you made me loose the little confidence I had in me, but all of that didn't kill me. I'm here, I'm still alive and thank you for giving me the best gift that I

couldn't trade for anything in this for a good ten years. Naomi was a perfect daughter, I'm sure she would have loved to know you, just know I haven't told her how she was conceived, and I wasn't going to tell her, not for your sake but for her sake. I didn't want her to feel otherwise.

So, I forgive you, I forgive you for taking advantage of me, and I forgive myself for giving you a chance to continue to rape me each and everyday when I couldn't bring myself to forgive. And of course, I read all the letters you have sent to me, I appreciate the fact you were able to see your mistakes.

I forgive you Wisdom. " His eyes were teary.

Wisdom:" Thank you, thank you forgiving me, I know I don't deserve your forgiveness but I will spend the rest of my life apologizing if I have to. I took advantage of your vulnerability and now it's haunting me. What I did to you, it's killing me. I hope

also learn to forgive myself one day. And I wanted to give you this letter I wrote it after my mother came and apologized. She told me the whole truth about our relation. "He handed me the letter.

Wisdom:" Your father was not my father, but my father and your father were brothers. (I looked at him confused.) everything is in that letter."

I went through the letter, everyone was silent looking at me. Wow, this is too much yerrr.

Damn Ruth.

Me: "What? Did she write this herself?"

Kgosi: "What is the letter saying?" I handed him the letter.

Me: "I'm sorry Wisdom." Well I didn't know what to say.

Wisdom: "It's fine, it's not your fault. I'm sorry once again."

Me: "It's okay. I will go to the police station and drop all the charges, I guess everything will be cleared but somewhere next week."

Kgosi: "Wednesday the latest. Damn your mother is a psychopath."

Wisdom: "Tell me something I don't know."

Kgosi: "I also forgive you and I will talk to one of my friends to see if they can't hire you when you get out of this place."

Wisdom: "Thank you so much man. I really appreciate it and I'm truly sorry."

Kgosi: "Yah, you guys should come to church and accept Jesus."

We laughed...

Later on after the peace making thingie we went home...

Kgosi: "So, Queen I spoke to my parents about our

engagement."

Me: "Okay. And what did they say?"

Kgosi: "They are obviously happy about it and I was thinking that we have the traditional wedding on Christmas day..." "Woah what?"

Me: "What? Kgosi that's in 2 weeks time, two weeks and my family don't know anything yet. "

Kgosi: "I know cakes, I know but why should we wait? We have so much to love for together. We can pull this off. I seriously want you to be my wife, I can't wait to spend the rest of my life with you, I don't see no point to wait to make you fully mine. I already spoke to my parents and my dad is drafting the letter to inform for your family."

Me: "Are you really sure about all of this? I mean we are still grieving and all that. "

Kgosi: "I know, and I want to go through the grieve process with you. I want to experience every pain with you Baby cakes. Allow me to love you in your pain so that I can know how to love you even better in your happy moments. Please Queen. "

Me:" Okay, let's go in and talk to Gogo and hear what she says. "

Who dare plans a whole wedding in two weeks? Is Kgosi cray cray? That's crazy, I will definitely die with pressure and stress...

[03/12, 15:34] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 91

Wisdom Mofokeng

Being released is something else. The taste of freedom is so good. I'm really grateful to Palesa that she dropped the charges and I owe her my life to be honest. I don't deserve to be out here and with a possibility of getting a job again. Wow, I'm really great full to that.

My wife on the other hand has been very supportive. She amaze me, how she do things so effortlessly. I'm still amazed that she didn't even hold the grudge of the things that have been going on. She even suggested that I go and check up on Mark, just to see how he is going.

Oratile has been home for a week now and she still refuses to go see our mother, well I can't blame her on that but one way or the other she need to face her demons. We can go all around the world but the fact still remains, Ruth is our mother and forgiving her is not something we are doing for her but we are doing it for ourselves, to free ourselves and to let go of the past.

Today, I'm going to see her, I need closure, I need to move on from everything that is going on and if Palesa can forgive me for being so ruthless to her, I guess I have no right to unforgiveness from my mother.

Yesterday she sent me a text, I mean Palesa about forgiveness and she said something very profound that if we want God to forgive us, we also need to forgive the people whom we have hurt. We don't forgive because people ask for forgiveness but we forgive because it's the will of God to forgive those who have hurt us so that God will also forgive us.

I found myself reading the text over and over because it was speaking to me in so many ways. She told me that she forgave my mother but the only person who can free her now is for her to forgive herself too.

I pray that she will be brave enough to forgive herself too one day.

Mercy: "Ready to go?"

Me: "Yes, we can go." we walked to the car. I haven't

been anywhere since I came back from jail. I don't know if it's fear that is crippling me to face the world or not but I feel like I should stay home more often. This is my first time going out.

I will be going to Joburg in January for an interview that Kgosi organized for me in his friend law firm. I can't wait to start with that part of my life. Being able to start all over with my family.

Mercy: "Are you nervous?" She was still focused on the road as she was driving.

Me: "Just a little."

Mercy: "It's going to be fine."

Me: "I wish I can say the same thing about Oratile. She doesn't even want to hear about her."

Mercy: "Just give her time, she will come around when she is ready and I think her friend has a positive impact on her life, which is good for now."

Me: "Yah, I guess so."

She parked in front of our gate. Nothing has changed around. Everything still look pretty much the same. We walked in, I kept looking around as if I'm a lost puppy.

We knocked at the door a couple of times and she opened. She didn't really look that good but she wasn't bad compared to the day she came to see me.

Ruth: "Wis dom, hi, how are you? Come in." She looked very shocked to see me. She stepped aside and we made a way in.

Me: "I'm good and how are you?"

Ruth: "I can't complain. How are you Mercy?"

Mercy: "I'm fine and how are you mama?"

Ruth: "I'm good baby, where is my granddaughter?"

Mercy: "We left her with her aunts, we will bring her over the weekend to come and see you."

Ruth: "I would love that, please sit down. I will make you guys tea. I baked some scones last night."

Mercy: "I will make the tea Mama, please sit down and beside Wisdom came to see you, let me leave you two to talk."

Mercy walked to the kitchen, leaving me and Ruth in an awkward silence. I didn't know that coming here will be this hard. I don't even know what to say to her. Me and her used to be very close but now? She is like a stranger. I don't even know what to say to her, words fail to come out of my mouth.

I really do wish to forgive her but, how do I say it? Can't we forgive people without telling them?

Ruth: "How have you been?" She asked innocently

Me: "Good I guess." Silence again.

Me: " You? "

Ruth: " I can't complain, Palesa has been coming here to pray with me on Mondays. I have given my

life to Christ."

Me:" Oh, that nice I guess. "

Ruth:" Yah, I'm very sorry about everything Wisdom. I know I can't take back what I did, I can't reverse what I did, but I'm very sorry. That's all I can say. "

Me:" I know. I accept your apology. "

Ruth:" Thank you so much my son. I have been praying for this day for some time now. I do wish I can have time to apologize to your sister too. She hates me. "

Me:" Give her time, she will come around."

Ruth:" I will, thank you so much. "....

Palesa Ella Motaung

Whoever said planning a wedding is easy, please tell that person is mad. I haven't been so much stressed and under pressure. Having to travel between two provinces in days almost every week

is driving me crazy.

As much as my family was fully involved, they can only help until a certain point, I'm a perfectionist and it's killing me that they don't understand how I need my things to be done. I'm very frustrated on the other hand.

Kgosi yena on the other hand is chilled, he doesn't even care how things are going. I had to do most of the planning with his mother and sister, and on my side with Lolo and Nthabi. They have been a great support system.

So, far the only thing that is left is our outfits. My things were handled by Jo-Ann. She has been very helpful with arrangements and everything.

Nthabi: "Babe you need to relax, everything will be fine."

Me: "How will everything be fine when my 2nd dress doesn't fit me? It doesn't fit Nthabiseng. I have gained weight."

Lolo: "Babe calm down, I know this is stressing but you can't afford to fall apart now, the wedding is next week and we are all here to help you. So, I trust that Mike will fix this dress, he still has about 9 days to do so, so please relax okay? Mike please tell her that you will fix it. "

Mike: "I assure you that your dresses will be ready on Wednesday and the wedding is on Friday right? So please trust me, if it will make you feel any better I will push for them to be done on Tuesday. Don't stress. "

Nthabi: "You hear? So please relax babe, let's go get you something to eat and then we rest. Tomorrow we still have another long day and Lolo is writing her final exam. So she has to study. "

I nodded, I took off the dress. I swear I was sinking in stress and pressure. This is my only chance to

have the wedding of my dreams. I want everything to be perfect. I want to make sure that everything turns out the way I want it.

At least my uncle is helping to move everything to the new house, yes the wedding will be happening in our new home, my new home. Fresh start, new beginnings, new memories and new everything. They asked me not to worry about anything. They have everything under control.

Everyone seemed to be very excited about the wedding hey, my grandmother is the one paying for our outfits. What a blessing.

We went to eat and later on we went back to Kgosi's parents house. They refused for us to sleep at the hotel and beside that my aunt Noluthando did offer us a free stay at the family hotel but my soon to be mother in law refused but Lolo went back home since she had to prepare for her last exam.

Londi: "So, everything is ready on my side, I spoke to J o-Ann, her team will be going down to Limpopo on Tuesday next week to set up the Marquee, and she is going to be checking the landscaping on Friday."

Me: "Wow, okay I guess everything is coming together. I just want everything to be perfect."

Londi: "I know my darling and Mike told me about your break down earlier on. You need to take it easy. We are here to assist you, J o-Ann has everything under control. Hence we hired her, to keep you sane."

Me: "If only I can let my guard down, but unfortunately I can't, but thank you for being here and keeping me sane, and to you too friend, I know I haven't been the easiest bride to deal with, but I appreciate the fact that you are here helping me. "

Nthabi:" Worry not friend, we have your back."

Londi:" Now we Ave to talk about the most important thing prayer and fasting. " Here we go

again.

Me:" Do we really have to do it?

Londi: "Yes we have to do it. I know it might seem unimportant now but trust, it's not everyone who loves the fact that you are getting married, I'm pretty sure that the enemy is reinforcing himself to go to war with you. Sometimes he will use little things to make you loose focus, and to always be stress like what happened to do. The purpose of the nemy is to destroy every good thing that God has given unto us, but we need to always stay arlet of Him and always be prepared for him. So, we should also reinforce and pray for the big day, starting this coming Friday until Wednesday.

I will talk to you grandmother to ask some of the family members to join us too. And on Tuesday me and my husband we will drive down there in the morning or Monday night so that Tuesday Morning we can pray for the house and the street. If there's one thing that the enemy is good at is to strategise

and this time around we also strategise with God. Everything we are going to do from today we invite God in it. When you guys are driving out, we pray for the cars, we tell God where you are going, you plead the blood of Jesus around the car and dedicate every plan of the day to God because one mistake the devil will be in full force. So, let's not take it for granted. I will ask Buhle and Maya to join us in prayer too, I might go with them on Tuesday.

I hope I am clear. "

Me:" Yes ma'am, crystal clear. "

Londi:" Good, tomorrow we are finalizing the menu with the caterous. "

Me:" Well, I will leave that to you, Kgosi and I have to go to and check out our rings in the morning, tyhen Nthabi and Lethu have to fit their dresses and from then we are driving back home. "

Londi:" Okay, I guess we are all still within the schedule, and baby please, stop stressing. Everything will be perfect. "

She smiled and I smiled...

[03/12, 15:34] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 92

Oratile Mofekeng

Kenzi: "And this is for you." She gave me a plate of sandwich and she sat next to me. Mercy took Wisdom out with Khuts o, they said they need some fresh air, so it was just me and Kenzie in the house. She took leave for December at her workplace and so did I. I came here to make peace with my mother but i don't think I'm ready to do that. I don't think I can bring myself to face her.

Kenzie: "Are you good?"

Me: "Yeah, I'm fine. I'm just thinking about my mother."

Kenzie: "Are you ready to make peace with her?"

Me: "I don't know Kenzie, I want to but I don't think I'm ready to forgive. I'm not yet there."

Kenzie: "It's okay, you don't have to blame yourself for this. Take your time, don't force forgiveness. Whenever you are ready you will forgive her."

Me: "Did you forgive your father?"

Kenzie: "Yes I did, but it wasn't easy, and worse part he was in jail back then but I tried to make it work between us. It took time, and I allowed myself to feel every emotion, every hurt and every pain, so I can be able to forgive him. Take your time with your mother, no one is expecting you to forgive, no one is forcing you to forgive either, just make sure that when you forgive her, it come from your heart with no pressure from anyone. "

Me:" I hear you. I just never thought my family will end up like this. What pains me the most is that my brother has suffered so much and yet my mother knew the whole truth. What kind of a mother does that? I really don't want to hate her but I can't help it

when I think about what she did to us.

I remember how much Mark loved my mother, that guy loved us like we were his own children, well yes he didn't know that we were not his but he completed our family. But my mother out of her own selfishness. She broke another woman's home, you just don't know how this is heavy for me. I don't even know if I forgive her, I will still want to associate myself with her, I don't know babe. "

She leaned her head on my shoulder.

Kenzie:" It's going to be okay sweets, how are about we go out tonight? It's been a while since I was here but I have never been anywhere. Or maybe we can start by taking walk."

Me:" Okay, let's go, I don't know where we will go but we can start by going to buy a kota(bunny chow) "

Kenzie:" Okay, I haven't tried it before, so I'm up for

it. "

We went to dress properly and locked the house and we went to town, to get a bunny chow....

Mercy M Mofokeng

Me:" How is your food?"He was carrying Khuts o who was messing up his plate but he seemed not to mind at all.

Wis dom:" It's nice, I haven't eaten this kind of food in a while, thank you for taking me out. "

Me:" It's a pleasure, I can't wait for you to start working and getting out there."

Wis dom: "I also can't wait, I can't believe I got a second chance, and I don't want to mess this up."

Me: "I know, and I believe you won't mess it up. This is another chance for us to rebuild our family, our second chance to make things right again. I'm very

grateful to God for this."

Wisdom: "Thank you for not giving up on us. And thank you for fighting for us even when I saw a need to do so. I really appreciate it."

Me: "You are welcome, so, are you going to Palesa's wedding? She send us an invite."

Wisdom: "I guess so, I have nothing to loose and beside, she is my cousin."

Me: "Yah, we need to find outfits hey, it's a traditional wedding."

Wisdom: "I know even if I say no, you are not going to hear it, so yah whatever you plan madam I'm up for it." I smiled.

This is all I have ever wished for, for my family to come together again...

Stella Motaung

Me: "We have one chance and one chance to mess up this wedding."

Ditiro: "I'm not getting involved Stella, already I'm suffering with this headaches and I can't even sleep at night because I keep seeing William in my dreams wanting to suffocate me. Let's just give up. We have failed."

Me: "I'm not giving up until I get what is finally mine, I'm not going to allow that girl to win and walk away with everything. Is either she dies or she suffer because I'm not going to die in poverty like Mokgadi, never."

Ditiro: "I'm not getting involved Stella, whatever you do from now on, you are on your own. Because I cannot afford to suffer this pain anymore, it's too much for me."

Stella: "I told you that I found someone stronger who can help us get through Palesa, that girl is weak, very weak, so the only way for us to get to her is to play nice with her. I have mutis that she gave me that can help you with the headaches and you

won't see William in your dreams anymore. "

Ditiro:" Are you crazy? Are you mad? Can't you see THAT palesa' father is fighting for her even in his own grave? I suffocate every night because of what we did to him. His not only doing this for Palesa but this is a revenge for what we did to our brother. I don't want to be blind, I don't want to die because of things that are not mine. If you have a death wish continue but I'm not getting involved. I'm going to tell Palesa the honest truth so I can be free. I want to be free. "

Stella:" You will be dead before you tell her the truth. That I will make sure of. No one is going to defeat me in this game. I have worked so hard to give up. "

Ditiro:" Go ahead and kill me, what will my death benefit you? Nothing but you will continue to be evil and your own evilness will kill you, that I know and I'm sure of. Just be careful that you will end up losing your mind in trying to kill Palesa. She is no

longer naive and spiritually weak like before. Good luck and be careful. "

She left me sitting in the kitchen all alone. My heart was raising and very angry. She was making me more angry that I wish I could just kill her right away to stop talking too much. I'm not the type that give up easily. I will fight for what is mine...

Palesa Ella Motaung

We arrived home earlier than anticipated. Nthabi went home to rest after dropping me off. We had a very rough and hectic week and it's still going to be more harder and difficult as we proceed.

The house was still a mess up there was progress because the new furniture from Aunt Nonhlanhla arrived last night. All my aunts were around and the three Gogos too. It was a full house and everyone

was excited about the wedding.

MaNkosi: "So how is your dress? Lolo told me that yesterday you broke down."

Me: "I'm sure she was just exaggerating, Mike promised me that my dresses will be ready and he will have them delivered on Tuesday or Wednesday the latest."

MaNkosi: "Then you need to stop stressing, your mother in law called me today and she told me about the prayer that she wants all of us to engage in, so we have decided that from Friday you are not going anywhere. Whatever you need, here are your aunts, send them, tell them what you need and they will get it for you."

Me:" But Gogo I still have few things to finalize... "

MaButhlezi:" No, no, no, sisi, is best if you stay home. We will dk everything for you from now on. The enemy is not really happy about this wedding and he will do anything and everything to cause havoc and distractions. So we can't afford to fall for

his traps."

Nokubonga:" Your grandmothers are right baby, we will make sure that your stay here at home is bearable and me and Nokukhanya have booked a full day spa treatment for you tomorrow in your own garden. We will do facials, pedis, manicures and your hair and then on Friday your make up artist will be here for tutorials. "

Me:" I guess I have no choice then, okay fine, I will do whatever you please and thank you for everything. "

Nokubonga:" You are welcome baby, and I know you want to give me a big hug for that. "

Me:" Of course, I'm a such a huggie. "We hugged.

Stella Motaung

I went to Madibuseng" house, I was still furious, maybe if I kill Ditiro because she will abort my mission with her sorriness which I'm not ready to

hear.

Madibuseng stays not far from our house, it's a walking distance and it was almost dark when I went there.

I found her in her consulting house, I called her before I arrived, so she was waiting for me.

Madibuseng is very beautiful, you might not think she is a witch but trust me, she is one of the most evil people I know. She has turned so many people into her concubines that she uses for her own evilness.

Me: "Thank you for agreeing to see me."

Madibuseng: "It's not like you gave me a choice, what can I do for you? I don't have the whole night here. I have places to be."

Me: "I want to finish that mission I told you about, but it seems like my sister is going to be a problem."

Madibuseng: "What kind problem?"

Me: "She wants to confess to Palesa because she can't sleep at night, apparently she is seeing my brother in her dreams."

Madibuseng: "So, what do you want me to do for you?"

Me: "I want to stop her, or even better kill her to avoid dealing with her."

Madibuseng: "Killing her might cost you, and there are dire consequences are you willing to bear them?"

Me: "I will do anything and everything to get what I want, I will bear them." She looked at me and shook her head.

Madibuseng: " Okay, let's do this, and there's no turning back."

She looked me into the eyes and her eyes turned green....

[03/12, 15:34] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 93

Stella Motaung

I must have passed out after I saw Madibuseng's eyes change when she was trying to do God knows what. I woke up with my head heavy as a truck. I could hardly sit straight with how heavy it was. As much as I tried to keep up with my sitting position I couldn't.

Madibuseng's was still sitting in front of me, with a calabash in front of her. She was looking straight into the calabash and her eyes were red. Burning with fury if I may call it.

I have seen many things but this, is beyond what I have ever seen. Smoke was coming out of her ears. I don't know what kind of evil is this one but it's

pretty scary.

Madibuseng: "It's done, we have managed to capture your sister brain, she will go crazy and you will be able to control her thoughts but don't ever think about killing her because it will be the end of you. One single thought of killing her, you are dead and she is also dead. I don't want to talk about the painful death you two will die, but make sure you control your thoughts. Am I clear? "

Me:" Yes we are clear, crystal clear. "

Madibuseng:" Good, I will give you something that will help you with the headaches, but don't over use them because they may affect your sister, and oh another thing, make sure that your sister doesn't do anything to harm herself, both physically and mentally because whatever she does, you will feel it two times more, so, guard her with your life because I don't want you coming here everyday making people suspicious.

Make sure that you put all your dogs on the leash. I don't have time for petty things. I will send you my banking details to transfer all my money and if you know what's good for you, you will pay me all my money, I don't want any deposit or any half, full amount. Unless you want to go around crazy naked on every street. Go and don't look back."

She handed me the mutis to help me with the headaches and I walked out slowly, my head was still very much heavy to be walking fast.

Palesa, I'm coming for you girl....

Oratile Mofekeng

Yesterday we had fun with Kenzie, going to town and buy Kota wasn't such a bad idea. We did the most in town and Kenzie being a snob, it was very

funny in how much she ate her kota. She is used to eating healthy food that sometimes I can't keep up with. But besides all of that she enjoyed herself and she enjoyed experiencing the other side of life than what she is used to.

Kenzie: "So, I have a request."

Me: "Okay, let's hear it madam." She sat next to me.

Kenzie: "So, Lindo invited me to his brother's traditional wedding, next week Friday."

Me: "Lindo's brother? Kgosi?"

Kenzie: "Yes, and I was thinking that you come with us."

Me: "He is getting married to Palesa?"

Kenzie: "Yes, the one and only."

Me: "I'm not sure if I want to go there, I wasn't very nice to her last time and I doubt that she would want to see me at her wedding."

Kenzie: "I doubt Palesa is like that, come on, you

have nothing to lose and beside, it's a whole wedding, I doubt she will be looking at you or watching you for that matter. It's time to move on Oratile. Holding yourself captive of the things of the past won't get you anywhere. Feeling sorry for yourself is not how life is done.

We've all been done and out, people have hurt us before but we didn't give them authority to keep on hurting us. If you are going to shut down living your life because you feel sorry for yourself. Sweetie, life is not unfair out there, life is ruthless out there, stop this, and go and take a shower. We are going to see your mother.

The only way to deal with your demons is to confront them. If we are really here for you to fix things with your mother, we need to have a first step. So, go and tell her how you feel. Let her know how much what she is doing is breaking you because if you keep it inside you, you are doing no one a

favour. So, better we deal with everything all at once nje. I will wait for you in the car. You only have 20 minutes to finish. "

She walked out leaving me speechless, okay, what happened to her? Why does she have to push me to do things I don't want to do? She can go to hell for all I care because I'm not going to see my mother, I'm not ready to see her and I'm not going to her stupid wedding, I'm not going anywhere.

I pulled the thrower over me and laid down on the couch...

Kgosi Mankoe

I'm beginning to get nervous and excited at the same time. I can't believe that everything is really coming together and next week I will be someone's husband. I never thought I will really witness this

part of my life. Growing up, getting married, and having to build a family. I just can't wait for that exciting part of my life.

I have seen how my parents have been together in the past years and I really do wish to have something as beautiful as theirs. I know it's not as easy as they make it look but I love the fact that in everything they continue to choose one another, they continue to stick together even when they don't agree. If you have ever heard the way my mom prays for my dad, you will see reason why my father continue to fall in love with her everyday and same goes to my dad.

Lindo: "Hmm, so mfethu, are you seriously ready for this new lifetime commitment? I mean are you sure sure sure about it? I mean there's no turning back."

Me: "I'm more than ready Lindo, if there's one thing that has ever felt right in my whole entire life, is this one. Everything feels right and perfect."

Lindo: "Wow, you are totally wiped by this girl neh? But truth be told big brother, Palesa is a good woman and I beg if you don't mess up, don't mess up and don't mess up because I'm going to squeeze your balls out if you dare mess this one chance, and I will forget that you are a pastor. May God help me not to laugh the day you are on the pulpit. I mean really? Imagine you, a whole pastor? Wow, so, I'm I taking over the worship team? "

Me:" No, you are not taking over anything, you can help in the ushering team. "

Lindo:" Ow wow, okay fine whatever Man of God says I will do. Let's get out of here I'm starving."

Me:" Of, did you get everything? I don't want my wife killing me about her shoes. "

Lindo:" Haha, worry not, I have got everything in place."

We left...

Palesa Ella Motaung

Last night I didn't have a peaceful sleep. My mind is all over the place and for the first time ever since my mom passed away I dreamed of her. She looked peaceful but it felt like she wanted to say something but she couldn't. I don't know what to make out of it but it disturbed my spirit so much that I wasn't even enjoying the massage

I prayed about it but nothing came out of it. My mind keeps drifting off every now and then.

Noluthando: "Pali, are you okay sisi?" Well this aunt of mine is junior pastor at her church in Joburg, I get along with all my aunts, but this she is my favorite one. She is reserved, and prayer warrior too.

Me: "Yah, I'm fine aunti, ke sharp."

Noluthando: "If you say so, but if you really want to talk, I'm here for you neh?"

Me: "Thank you."

Noluthando: "I saw that you didn't sleep well last night."

Me: "Yah I know, I had a dream about mama, ever since she passed on, I have never had a single dream about her, I don't even know if it's right for me to be seeing her in my dreams. I don't know."

Noluthando: "Have you prayed about it? Have you asked God direction about it?"

Me: "I tried but nothing, I feel like something is wrong auntie. What if she doesn't want me to get married? What if she doesn't approve my marriage."

Noluthando: "Never, don't ever say that, it might be something beyond that. Maybe God is using her as a point of contact to warn you of something because He knows that he is the only person you trusted. He knows that when your mother speaks you will listen to her, that might be the case. So try to observe her emotions and read them. "

Me:" Maybe you are right, what if is what happened with my aunts? I mean the other day when I went to

visit I couldn't shake off this heaviness around them and something deep inside of me told me that there's something more that I need to know but I didn't have the guts to ask them. I didn't have it in me to confront the truth out of them because I know for sure that there's more to Naomi's death than what I know. But I doubt I really want to know the whole truth because I don't think I might be able to stand it.

"

Noluthando:" Sometimes the only way to free ourselves out of situations like this, is to know the truth. Remember the word of God says that it's only the truth that will set us free. Maybe the truth will also help you to get over Naomi's death. Maybe the truth will help you understand what you are dealing with. The truth will help you move on baby.

I will advise you to pray for divine intervention, and not only that also pray that God may reveal all the hidden secrets that are still hanging. Until all evil is

exposed no one will have rest. The truth is baby until you realize the kind of anointing that is upon your life, you will never know what you are capable of. You are God's weapon to destroy and build in this time and season Nana. I pray that you may move into a place and position where you begin to understand the mysteries of Heaven. God is going to use you in areas where men and women who went before you failed... Just get ready for the shift and the move of God and prepare your mind for the truth that will be exposed....

[03/12, 15:35] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 94

Palesa Ella Motaung

The day I have been waiting for is finally here, the day I prayed very hard for, the day I have dreamed about is finally here. It feels surreal. I have mixed

emotions about it. I'm happy, I know it's a must for me to be happy but I'm a little sad that my parents and daughter won't be here to witness this beautiful day with me. I'm sad that they won't be a part of this wonderful experience but I'm happy besides all of that.

I haven't bathed nor dressed yet, Mike stuck to his promise and my dresses were delivered on time, I'm very happy that they both fit me. They are my traditional dresses. Modern traditional dress for matrimonial and the other one my mother-in-law decided to buy for me as a gift to show that she approves of me and I will be specifically dressed by her.

The Monkoes were late, but my uncles were chilled, they will give them a hard time when they arrive one thing for sure. The matrimonial is planned to start at 13:00 but I doubt that will be happening with how late Kgosi's family is late. They

were supposed to have arrived exactly at 09:00 but now it's almost 10, Kgosi did tell me that they were running late because they left late in Pretoria but he promised me that our wedding is happening today, come rain come shine, he is making me his.

We were chilled in my bedroom, with my cousins and Nthabi of course, I was doing my nails, I failed to them yesterday because I had some final things to do. Lolo snuck in wine in the bedroom, Nozi and Lolo were drinking, they are both my bridesmaids and Nthabi is my maid of honor.

Lolo: "So, Lalah, we as your bridesmaid and your maid of honor of course, we have decided to bless you with this gift since we couldn't have a bridal shower for you."

They placed a beautifully wrapped box on my bed.

Me: "What's in there?"

Nthabi: "You should start by saying thank you, you guys are the best, but anyways, it's something very naughty and sexy for your man." I got a little uncomfortable but excited at the same time.

Me: "I want to see it before I thank you guys. Phela you guys are very naughty, so I can't trust you nje."

Nozi: "Relax cuz, hau, we want you to enjoy marriage, so it's your gift." They two out two pieces of lingerie, a black one and a red one. For a plus size like me? Wow, wasn't sure about but I guess it's worth trying it hey. I have nothing to lose right?

Funny thing I haven't really thought about sex with Kgosi yet, as much as I tried to force my mind to think about it, I couldn't bring myself to think about it. I have never had sex for pleasure but it has always been a forced thing. So, I don't know if it will change or not but we shall see.

Nthabi: "Relax, you will be fine, you don't have to try anything that you are not comfortable with. Just go

with the flow, I'm sure Kgosi will teach you few tricks and you will be fine."

Me: "I hear you guys and thank you, I will make sure to make good use of those." I didn't want them to go deep into the conversation anymore because it was going to get a bit uncomfortable for me.

Lolo: "And please do us a favour, you can me Mamfundisi at church but make sure that your bedroom is not church. Your bedroom should be haven for your husband. No preaching and no arguing in the bedroom as omblief tog. You guys can fight all I care but when you get into your bedroom you guys kiss and make up. "

Me:" Wow, okay I heard you Miss and I promise to make this thing work no matter what. "

Nozi:" That's our girl. We love you cuz, we love you so much and after this wedding I'm giving my life to Jesus, no more drinking. "She laughed.

She will never leave beer this one, her mother tried I'm sure but she failed.

We heard cars hooting outside and the crowd was ululating outside. There were lot of people in the yard, we all know how Kasi weddings are lit like that, everyone is invited.

Nthabi: "They are here." I nodded with a huge smile on my face. My aunts walked in singing a joyous song. My grandmother's followed, I was done with my nails, just waiting for them to dry up so I can go and take a long deserved bath, my grandmother suggested that I should not bath early so that I won't feel anxious as they are busy with the negotiations.

They danced and singed in the bedroom and after few minutes the noise outside died down and we

heard them calling our clans names. They called the clans names for some time.

Me: "Gogo why are they not letting them in?"

MaNkosi: "Relax baby, phela they are late, so your uncles will deal with them accordingly."

Me: "But we will be late for the ceremony."

MaButhelezi: "Lisa relax, everything will go perfectly, we don't need you to stress now, do we? You will grow wrinkles if you continue to stress."

Me: "But Gogo..."

Noluthando: "I think you should go and bath, your make-up artist is here, so we will worry about the rest when you are done bathing okay?"

The make-up crew walked in with their bags. They were brought in by Lungelo, my other cousin.

Nonhlanhla: "As you are bathing, they will begin with the girls and you will be the only one left and I'm sure the negotiations will be done."

I guess I didn't have much to say. I went to take a long deserved bath, they added some bathing salts and some foam bath for me of course, I waxed on the day of the massage, I don't know why I did but hey, I girl can only hope for this.

When I finished bathing I went back to the room, everyone was still there expect for my grandmothers, they were all quiet, maybe they didn't want to make noise for the elders. My heart was still pounding, I didn't know what to expect.

I didn't say anything too, I just sat on the bed to catch a breath before I totally loose it. My phone saved me from this heavy environment. The bridesmaid were busy with their makeup. Each of the girls had their own makeup artist and hairstylist. They were staying their weaves.

I styled my afro, I'm just going to out the extension and style it and I will be done. I received a call from Kgosi. I went to the closet to answer it.

Kgosi: "Mrs Me, how are you my Queen?"

Me: "Hey Mr Me, I'm fine but stressed. We are running behind the schedule and it seems like the families haven't reached any conclusion."

Kgosi: "Babe, relax, I told you that come rain, come shine, we are getting married today, where it's midnight or anytime of the day, today you will be mine."

Me: "I know, I just want everything to be perfect."

Kgosi: "Hey, hey, hey, listen, everything will be perfect, and besides I have seen the decor, it is beautiful, just the way we wanted it and our matrimonial set up its also beautiful. Don't stress, Londiwe has everything under control." what will I be without this man Mara?

Me:" Thank you so much my King, I can't wait to see

you. "

Kgosi:" I can't wait to see you too, I have sent you something, I want to see you in it today. "

Me:" What is it? "

Kgosi:" Your cousin will bring it to you."

Me: "Okay, let me go, I have to do my makeup."

Kgosi: "Okay cakes, I love you."

Me: "I love you too."

I hanged up with a big smile on my face....

Mark Mofokeng

I have never thought I will ever set my foot in Mokopane ever again. This place brought me nothing but pain. I have lost so many things I have built and it made me resent this place. When I left I thought I will come back but I couldn't bring myself to come back.

But I'm here today to attend a wedding with a good friend of mine. She invited me to accompany her, well as her plus one. She literally forced me to come with her. Our relationship is nothing hectic, we are just friend that met while I was under my own circumstances and she helped me through them. She helped me to begin the process of healing. She helped me to forgive, and to forgive myself too.

She made me see light at the end of the tunnel. As much as I was prepared to go back to Ruth and fix things but after I have realized that things between Wilkiand her were serious, I lost all hope but all its not lost I guess.

I'm not ready to be in a relationship, right now I just want to be me without the other person. I want to focus on my relationship with God, I'm learning to walk again in my spiritual journey.

Maya: "Are you ready? Londi said we should make our way to the waiting area while we wait for the ceremony to begin."

Me: "After you my friend. I can't believe I'm back here again."

Maya: "Well, you can't fight your demons without facing them. If you don't feel any comfortable, let me know, we will leave."

Me: "I doubt I will feel uncomfortable, I have you in my corner buddy, and thank you for being there."

Maya: "It's not a train's mash Mark, we all need someone in our lives to hold our hands once in a while. Sometimes situations might not make sense but when we share them with others, we are able to conquer and get over them."

Me: "Yah, thank you once again. I'm going to be very hard on a person who is going marry you."

Maya: "I'm not getting myself in that mess again, single life is for me my friend. Let's go."

I laughed while getting out of the car...

Kgosi Mankoe

The negotiations were really beginning to scare me. They have been talking for some time now, I tried to get hold of malume Lwandle but his phone was on voice mail.

I'm trying very hard to keep my cool but Palesa is also panicking and I have to assure her that everything is still okay, while in actual fact I don't know what's going on.

Both our ceremonies will be held in her home, our matrimonial is in the garden, the garden is big enough to accommodate plus minus 40 seated guest. My mother has been hands on since morning working with Joanne and aunty Buhle to assisting in ensuring that everything is perfect.

Yes we're running a little behind the schedule but I hope that everything will be perfect. My mother has to also prepare herself for the Matrimonial service, Aunty Buhle and uncle Lloyd will be officiating our marriage ceremony.

Lindo: "I think we should go and get ready, Ntando and Musa are already done. Sitting here and torturing yourself won't help us in anything."

Me: "I know, I just want to know how things are going in there. The silence is driving me crazy."

Lindo: "Do you know that if Palesa's family notice that you are here might just make matters worse? So, let's rather go and let your uncle and dad to deal with everything, plus Gogo too will make sure that everything goes smoothly."

Me: "Palesa is also stressed, and I don't want her to stress."

Lindo: "And you will stress her more if she run late.

So let's go get ready."

Me: "Fine."

We got inside the car, just as I was about to drive out, I heard people ululating, I swear I felt my heart get swollen with joy, unspeakable joy filling my heart... Lindo smiled and pat my shoulder and congratulated me....

Damn, I'm about to be someone's husband...

[03/12, 15:35] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 95

Stella Motaung

I have been searching and looking for Ditiro all over the place that my mind is going crazy. I had a

splitting headache and it was killing me plus the fact that I can't help but worry where she could be.

I have asked our neighbors if they haven't seen her but no one has seen her. I wandered around our streets and neighborhood trying to look for her but still she was nowhere to be found.

Wherever she is I pray that she doesn't say anything to anyone. Because she will ruin everything and I can't afford to get on the wrong side of Madibuseng. This might not look good on me.

I walked home defeated, because I didn't even know where else to look for her...

Kgosi Mankoe

I dressed up in my Chinese collar blue traditional

jacket that had 3 shweshwe unven medium stripes on the left and on the right it had a small pocket on top with a small shweshwe lining. Yes, my wife's dress is navy blue from what I have heard and by the looks of things. I don't care much about the themes and all that. She was the one who had all our clothes tailored and to be honest I'm happy, I didn't care much about the clothes.

My grooms men were dressed in navy blue shirt with two uneven medium shweshwe stripes too on their left, they were wearing jeans and I was wearing a formal navy blue pans and formal shoes while they were wearing sneakers. That was my father's ideas and I quite frankly, I like it. The boys were looking very good.

Mama: "Are you ready boys?"

Me: "Yes, I think we are all ready." She was dressed in her stylish navy blue off-shoulder long traditional dress. She looked very beautiful and elegant.

Me: "You look very beautiful." I hugged her.

Mama: "And you look handsome baby, look at you."
She squeezed my cheeks.

Me: "Thank you Mommy Bear."

Mama: "You are welcome, I'm very proud of you.
Lindo come call Musa and Ntando so we can pray
before we leave."

Lindo came in with my friends, and aunty Bible let a
song and afterwards we prayed and left.

I was very excited and nervous, I can't wait to see
my wife. Indeed when we arrived there, the mood
was very exciting, as our cars hooted, women filled
the street ululating.

Lindo: "I really have to say, Kasi weddings are the
best. Are you ready?"

Me: "You can say that again, I'm so nervous
though."

Lindo: "I guess that's a norm hey, let's go, I'm sure your wife can't wait to say I do, I do."

We walked out of the cars, most of the people were ushered to the matrimonial venue, my groomsmen walked down the isle, and afterwards it was my moment with my mother and father. She hooked her hand around mine. My mother was in the middle. It was a beautiful moment to witness.

Lethu made her own grand entrance in her tutu dress lace and pearls and traditional themed belt, I know my baby sister loves things and she wanted this moment to herself, she was holding a basket of our rings.

Few minutes later, the bridesmaid walked down the isles too with different designs of dresses. They all looked beautiful. I guess this makes everything that has been stressing my wife lately and it turned out to be perfect....

Palesa Ella Motaung

I sat behind the closed door listening to the music as my bridesmaids made their way to the altar. My heart was literally beating out of my chest, this moment here is everything and everything I dreamed about.

My dress was breath taking, Mke outdid himself, he even went beyond my expectations. I had on a huge navy blue bow gown off-shoulder dress, with lace and blue pearls. It was beyond the expectation and treated with the traditional material on the edges, I had a gold and blue floral crown on my head.

Gogo: "You look breath taking my baby."

Me: "Thank you Gogo. I just wish that mama was here to witness all this."

Gogo: "Your mother is always here, she's in here."

She placed her hand on my chest. I blinked the tears away and smiled a little.

Gogo: "Let me give you a moment." I nodded and she walked out leaving me looking in the mirror on the wall.

Me: "This is it." I said to myself.

Mam'Tabitha: "Yes, this is it my angel. This is it. This is the day that the heavens has ordained for you."

She was standing behind me, in her cream sparkling dress.

Me: "You came, what are you doing here?"

Mam'Tabitha: "I'm here to accomplish the Heveanly mandate. I'm here to release mantles of honor to you and your husband. The heaven is in this place. There's a divine visitation that will bring revival, forgiveness and new beginnings in your life as you are about to go and start a new family. "

Me:" You mean God is here? I mean God Himself? " I laughed at my statement and she smiled.

Mam'Tabitha:" Of course God is here, to ordain you and your husband. Are you ready? "

I nodded.

She took my hands into hers.

Mam'Tabitha:" Whatever happens today, knows that God allowed it to happen so you may heal and go into this marriage with no grudge. Your marriage will bring Devine healing to families, it will bring unity to broken families. It will bring restoration to many young and old people out there. I'm not saying challenges won't be there but God will give you grace to conquer them. Today, you and your husband are giving birth to your ministries. And it is my prayer that you will continue to make God the center of your lives. Some of the things that you are going to see starting from tonight will be behind what a human eye will comprehend. The dreams you will begin to see will be too extraordinary. God will open a portal of secrets that only you and your husband need to deal with. God will open your eyes to see beyond the natural eyes. What is happening today is not just an ordinary union but its birth in

the realm of the spirit.

There's been a great war going on the spiritual realm this week, trying so hard to stop what's will be happening today, but whatever God says yes to no man will ever be able to stop it. You are blessed child. "She smiled.

Mam"Tabitha:" Your husband is waiting for you outside. Come here. "

She opened her arms and she hugged me so tight...

The door opened, my grandmother held my hand and kissed it.

The walk to where Kgos i was standing seemed to be far because my nerves were very high.

Gogo:" Relax, you are beautiful my angel. "

I smiled, and my smiled turned into tears... Tears of joy...

"I found a love for me,

Oh darling, just dive right in and follow my lead

Well, I found a girl, beautiful and sweet

Oh, I never knew you were the someone waiting for me...

Well I found a woman, stronger than anyone I know

She shares my dreams, I hope that someday I'll share her home

I found a love, to carry more than just my secrets

To carry love, to carry children of our own..."

I didn't know that we had a love band, I couldn't help but cry, this is more than I have asked for, beyond what could have asked for.

We slowly made our way down the isle with my grandmother, damn did my hubby not cry, he was

trying so hard not to be emotional but he couldn't help it, he was very emotional too.

My grandmother handed me over to him and hugged him before he sat down.

Kgosi: "Wow, you look so beautiful."

Me: "Thank you." I smiled, he gently wiped my tears

Buhle: Today Kgosi and Palesa are on the threshold of the closest relationship that can exist between a man and woman ... marriage, the first and most important institution that was created by God himself at the beginning time.

The word of God in the book of Mark 10: 7-8 says 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh.' So they are no longer two, but one.

Before we we unite this two, let me ask who gives this woman to be married to this man?"

My whole family that was seated in the front stood up and said "We do" and the people ululated afterwards, Kgosi had the best smile ever, his hands were itching to hold me but he had to contain himself.

Buhle: "Thank you, please join your hands together and let's pray. Father God...you have created the universe, the heavens and the earth. You have made man and woman for one another. You have instituted the sacrament of marriage wherein man and woman might be joined to become one flesh. It is for this purpose that we come to witness the union of Kgosi and Palesa in Holy matrimony and to share with them on this joyous occasion as they make their vows to each other and before you. We ask your Holy Spirit to bless and sanctify this

marriage from this time forth. AMEN" we all chanted Amen

She shared a scripture and she allowed us to say our own Vows...

Kgosi: "I admire you. Simply because of your kind soul, tender heart, and with everything you went through, you are still standing, taller than before and more resilient and more beautiful. Your positive mindset makes me to continually fall in love you. I am ever so grateful for your love and selflessness. In return, I offer these promises.

I promise you my everlasting devotion, my loyalty and my respect. I promise to love you unconditionally and to grow with you in mind, body and spirit. I promise to pray with you, to dream with you, to build a family with you and to encourage you. I promise to share in your joys and sorrows and all that God has to offer us.

You are my forever, my best friend, my dream come true and now my wife. With these words, and all the words of my heart, I marry you and bind my life to yours. Forever and always. I'm not going anywhere, I'm staying with you and for you no matter what.

Queen, no matter what, divorce is not an option, you can get angry and mad at me but divorce is not an option. I'm not about to let you go and let you leave. I'm in this for eternity, I love you my Queen, I love my Baby cakes.. "He slot in a diamond ring on my finger. I'm glad I never opted for an engagement ring because this ring here is to die for.

He kissed my hand

Me:" Since the day you walked into my life, it's been more fulfilling, my smile has been bigger and my heart has been more full. The days since we first

met have had their share of struggles and trials but I've never once felt lonely in that time. I promise to love not only who you are today, but to love the person you grow into over the years. I promise to love you without condition, to laugh when you're happy, to cry when you're sad.

I promise to remember that neither one of us is perfect, but strive to remind myself of the ways we are perfect for each other.

I promise to love you, respect you, support you and above all else, make sure that I pray for you, and cover you in my prayers.

I promise to be faithful and supportive and to always make our family's love and happiness my priority. I will be yours in plenty and in want, in sickness and in health, in failure and in triumph. I will dream with you, celebrate with you and walk beside you through whatever our lives may bring.

You are my person, my love and my life, today and always.

I see these vows not as promises but as privileges, I get to laugh with you and cry with you, care for you and share with you. I get to run with you and walk with you, build with you and live with you. With my whole heart, I take you as my husband.

I love you so much My King and yes, divorce is not an option"

I slit the ring on his hand. And people ululated too,

Buhle: "With the power vested in me, I pronounce you husband and wife. Mr Mankoe, you may kiss your bride."

He bit his lips and wrapped his arms around my waist and mine just landed on his neck and he kissed the living day out of me.....

Stay tuned for part 2 of the wedding...

We give credit to the designer of the dress, I found it on the net

[03/12, 15:35] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 96

Palesa Ella Motaung

Buhle: "Before I introduced them to you as Mr and Mrs, allow me to do one thing God asked me to do. I feel strongly convicted to do this. Just because we are at a wedding it doesn't mean we are not supposed to hear what the Holy Spirit say. It important that we adhere to the Holy Spirit and always be in line with Him to avoid grieving the holy spirit."

Most people nodded and Kgosi looked at me nodding, gosh what did I do to deserve this kind of a man? He is everything and more.

Buhle:" May I allow all the Pastors that are here to come to the forth, I ask that we may have cushions for them to kneel down."

Gogo sent Nozi to go and get what is required. I was shocked to see Mark also standing, I wonder who he came with. It's been a while since I saw him, I turned my eyes to where Wisdom and Mercy were seated they were both taken by seeing him since he was sitting right in the middle with a aunt'Maya, she has been here a couple of times this week when they came to pray for the house and she was delivering my family outfits. She is a nice person. She didn't stand up though, I thought she was pastor.

I couldn't read Wisdom's emotions as he was still.

The one person I haven't seen is Oratile yet.

Nozi came back and placed the pillows before us.

Buhle: "Prophetess Londi, may we please use your prayer shawl?"

Londi: "Of course. Baby please get it from the car."

She threw the car keys at Lethu and she went to get it.

Buhle: "Please kneel down." Kgosi helped me to kneel down.

Buhle: "This is a union that is ordained by God, and I feel the presence of God in this place, there's something that is about to give birth today. There's oil that needs to be released on their lives. There's anointing that needs to be released on their lives. There's a birth of ministry that needs to take place this moment. I wish I had intercessors in this place that can catch what I'm saying because what is about to happen is not ordinary, what is about to be

released is going to affect lives, Ministries, families and marriages.

There's a shift in the spiritual realm, there's birth in the spiritual realm that is taking place. Let's get up on our feet."

I kept on getting lost in her words, my mind would shift and I will be in another world where I found myself praying. My body too was getting weak but not loose weak, I was still very much hold of myself.

They covered us with prayer shawl and began to pray for us. I heard Kgosi also praying the spirit, the prayer was intensifying and I felt myself praying in unknown tongues, more like the Holy Spirit took over my whole being. I couldn't contain what I was feeling anymore. Kgosi's hands were literally choking me if that's normal. They were shaking in my hands...

They helped us to get up, with the prayer shawl still on our shoulders. The presence of God was beyond what we expected, the move of God was still too much and there was just too much anointing in the place that all of us couldn't contain it.

Buhle: "This is your time spirit of the living God, we allow you to do what you want to do. We avail ourselves to be moved and touched by you. We need you spirit of God, more of you and less of us. We decrease that you may increase. Speak a word today, let it be on this that your children have divine encounter with you. Let them leave here Lord having a personal encounter with you.

Please usher them to sit here. "

They helped us to sit down.

Buhle:" Woman of God, God says I should tell you that He is releasing a mental of honor upon your life. He is releasing the kind of anointing that was upon Elisha, the double portion anointing of Elijah upon your life. He says I should tell you that, the kind of mental that he is releasing on you, will connect you to people in high and low places. It will break yokes, generational curses, and set families free.

Man of God, a man after the heart of God. God says he is about to use you in areas where me couldn't your age couldn't reach, he will take you into the depth of knowing him. Walk with him, never depart from his presence. You will have Devine encounters that men never had with God before. The same way he spoke to Moses on Mount Sinai, he will speak to you. He is about to release a mental of honor that will speak for you in uncommon places. Trust in the Lord with all your heart, don't rely on your own understanding.

God says he will give you wisdom to lead your family. He is about to take you and your wife into a journey of understanding his ways. He is about to reveal the deepest secrets of His kingdom on to you two. He will send you across the nation to re-correct the doctrines that were taught on his people. His giving nations to set free....

Prophetess Londiwe, I see a horn of anointing, please touch Palesa's woman, there's going to be a powerful transference of anointing between the two of you. God is about to release a fresh anointing on you woman of God. God says He has seen you faithful serving him, and because you were faithful to Him, so shall your generation be blessed because of you. God is going to release Ministries out of your belly to her and from her to the nations. People will recognize her because of you.

Her ministry will carry the double portion of what you carry, areas where you failed, God says I should

tell you, that no, you didn't fail but I was waiting for this moment to expose her(me) to the kind of God I am. I was saving the best for the last. People will begin to recognize the kind of God I am through her because of the foundation you have laid and as you are about to go on missions with your husband God further says I should tell you and your husband that, there are divine helpers that he has appointed for you guys, should not work like slaves but they are people who are already waiting for you.

In the next 20 seconds, there is going to be a an explosive move in this place, there's fresh anointing that is going to on the two of you, I ask that they may be ushers around them, because God is about to release himself in them. There are some people in this place that will be delivered because you were witness of this great move.

Lord have your way,... "

Within seconds of her praying I was already feeling something moving, I felt heavy presence resting upon me.

Kgosi stoop up and walked around, i have seen him once when he is convicted by the Holy Spirit but today, it was too much, even on myself too.

After a while I gathered enough strength and I got up, Kgosi's parents were kneeling on the carpet, also praying.

Kgosi held my hand and I looked around, I was in awe of what I saw, I looked at Kgosi and he returned the stare too. There were so many angels gathered around. So many of them. Mam'Tabitha and Deborah were also there. Mam'Tabitha had a horn in her hands. She nodded at Buhle and she looked at us and ushered us to kneel down again.

They both stood next to Buhle, Mam'Dorothy stood behind Buhle, and Mam'Tabitha joined hands with Buhle, Mark helped Lomdi and her husband to get up and they joined hands with Buhle and Mam'Tabitha and held the horn.

Mam'Tabitha: "This is not an ordinary anointing oil, but it is charged with fire and the blood of Jesus Christ. As we pour this on you, God is releasing you into Prophetic ministry that will give birth to other five fold Ministries. God is opening your eyes to see behind the natural eyes. God is opening your ear to hear beyond the natural ears. God will move you into the depth of understanding his ways and his word. God is opening a reservoir of mysteries of his word. God is giving you fresh revelation, mysteries that were never understood by men, God will give you intellectual capacity to understand them.

There a portals that opened in heaven to have access to anointing that breaks yokes and set

families free.

I decree and I declare Solomon's anointing for resource management, Wisdom, wealth, success and prosperity, I release Issac's anointing upon your lives the anointing for investment strategies for the Kingdom of God. Samuel's anointing for sensitivity and obedience to the voice of God, I declare it upon your lives, you shall be a generation that hears and are obedient to God's voice. I declare Esther's anointing for divine favour and kingdom strategies, Daniel's anointing for government, excellence and integrity, the anointing of Joshua, I speak it over your lives the anointing for warfare prosperity and success strategies. No longer shall you fight battles in vein, you shall conquer every warfare battle in the name of Jesus Christ..

I decree and I declare Abraham's anointing for pioneering new territories, real estate acquisitions and inter-generational covenant blessings, I declare

Moses's anointing as a trailblazer and leaders upon your lives. Ezra's anointing I declare it upon your lives as an authentic worshiper of true and living God. I declare Deborah's anointing for balance, nothing will be too heavy for you. God will give knowledge to balance your lives, and ministry. I declare Paul's anointing for cutting-edge apostolic revelation, you shall move and operate in fresh revelation rooted in the word, not in your own knowledge. Rivers of the living waters shall flow out of your bellies. God shall be the source of your revelation. Elisha's anointing for servanthood, ministerial succession, and the double portion of jurisdictional power and authority is upon you, no man shall be able to stand in your way,

I decree and I declare Issachar's anointing for discernment of correct times and seasons. I release Abigail's anointing for hospitality and prudence. I release Anna's anointing of intercession upon your lives, nothing shall ever happen in your lives, around you and in your families without your

knowledge. I declare and decree Christ's anointing for prophetic prayer, spiritual warfare, signs, wonders, miracles and a purpose driven life. I release Eve's anointing for fruitfulness and dominion in the name of Jesus Christ.

I cause the apostolic and prophetic anointing to converge, explode and be manifested in your lives with accuracy, authenticity, clarity and elegance in the name of Jesus Christ amen."

They helped us to get, the anointing oil was stripping down my face, as well as Kgosi's, we must just cancel this whole wedding shame.

Mam'Tabitha hugged me and told me that she is proud of me and I should watch the space. She hugged Kgosi too and also Londi and Buhle. They were all still in the mood of prayer you can tell but we will bore people since they came to a wedding not a church.

My parents in law hugged up and all our families

came and hugged us sometime , they announced us husband and wife, people were still happy though, they cheered more. The angel too a bow, along with Mam'Tabitha and Mam'Deborah and they disappeared. I wonder if everyone saw Mam'Tabitha and the angels. Indeed things of God are mysterious shame.

We went and change into our second outfits before we because we were all messed up, they had to redo my make up and my hair again.

MaNkosi: "Wow, this wedding is very blessed. This is a union ordained by God himself." She was seated with me in the bedroom as the ladies were bush fixing my hair. My husband, oh yes my husband, it sound and feels so good to says, he said I should let them know when we are done so they can come.

Me:" Indeed it is. I don't even have words to explain what went down down there."

MaNkosi: "You are blessed mh baby, very blessed and my heart is at peace knowing the kind of family you are marrying into, I can't complain about them. They are a good family."

Me: "And they are also blessed to have a wife like me though hau, you can't give them all the credit, I also deserve some."

MaNkosi: "Haha, jealous." We heard people commoting outside, there was a huge noise coming from outside.

Me: "What's wrong?"

MaNkosi: "Relax, let me go and check. J ust finish up, because time is no longer on our side."

Me: Please make sure that everything is alright Gogo. "

MaNkosi:" Okay baby, relax. "

She went out, the noise was too much as if people were seeing something out if this world...

I wonder what could it be...

[03/12, 15:35] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 97

Wisdom Mofokeng

Yesterday was a very beautiful day shame. My cousin did have the best wedding ever and I'm grateful to have been part of it. And after greeting Mark? Well we are meeting for coffee today, he said he is leaving today but he managed to make time to meet with me. Oratile was still bitter with the fact that she saw her with her mother's friend and last night they had an argument about it.

The friend asked to sleep over for last time since it was late for her to drive at night. She must have called her mother because now her mother is here

to pick her up. She was still packing her stuff. Sometimes I really fail to understand Oratile, her bitterness is too much to a point where I always think that she will turn exactly like my mother if she is not careful enough.

Me: "Here is you tea."

Maya: "Thank you" I handed her tea. Mercy went to check up on my mother and to pick up Khuts o. We were too exhausted to fetch her after the wedding and I needed to have time with my wife. It's been a while since we had time together without being disturbed by anyone and I'm very much grateful that my mom didn't mind at all.

Me: "I'm sorry about what happened. Oratile can be too much sometimes."

Maya: "It's okay, she is going through her own stuff, and she needs to deal with them nje. She will be fine."

Me: "I doubt, the damage done is too deep, her anger is too much now and she is channeling it on

wrong people, if she is not careful enough, she will lose everyone close to her because of it."

Maya: "That's true, just pray for her. There's nothing that it's too difficult for prayer and ask her to see someone. She needs to talk through about what happened.."

Me: "I will do so." Kenzie walked in rolling her luggage.

Kenzie: "I'm done."

Maya: "Okay, let's get going then. Thank you so much for hosting her, she had the best time of her life I believe."

Me: "It was a pleasure having her here. Do visit again soon, Khutsi loves her so much."

Kenzie: "Ncoo, she is such an adorable baby, I will definitely visit soon, and tell Oratile I left." She has locked herself in the room since last night, she hasn't come out.

Me: "I will tell her."

Maya: "Thank you once again."

I walked them out and helped Kenzie to load her stuff in her car and then they drove out. I also went to prepare myself to meet with Mark...

Maya Williams-Jones

We arrived at the B&B where I slept at, Mark slept at the different one, if there's one thing I need is drama and assumptions from his children. I know what happened to them is heartbreaking and I didn't want to add salt to what was happening. So it was best for him to sleep at a different guest house to avoid drama.

I'm no longer about relationships, I'm done with them honestly speaking. The drama I have seen after my husband's death was too much for me to even think about getting married again.

I helped Kenzie with her luggage to my room. She had been very quiet.

Me: "Want to talk about it?"

Kenzie: "Nope, I'm fine."

Me: "Okay, I'm going to help Auntie Lonz to pack and when we are done we are leaving. Will you be able to drive?"

Kenzie: "Yes, I will be fine." Tears were already streaming down her cheeks. Kenzie is a softie, she doesn't love confrontations and arguments. When she is faced with those she becomes vulnerable and she cries and that's what is exactly happening right now. "

Me:" I'm sorry baby, it's going to be fine. " I hugged her.

Kenzie:" Mommy you should have heard her how she was insulting me yesterday, as if I told you to be friends with her step-dad. She was very rude to

me. "

Me:" I know and I'm sorry. I will cut off my friendship with Mark for your peace sake. We spoke about this, if I have found someone, I will be honest with you. Mark and I are friend, nothing much to it. When Oratile comes back I will have a word with her. But you need to calm down. "

Kenzie:" He is a nice guy though, I like him. "

Me:" Good for you, you can date him. "She playfully hit me on my chest.

Kenzie:" Wow, an old man like him. Imagine. "

Me:" He won't be that bad though, at least he won't make you cry. "

Kenzie:" Mxm, I hate you."

Me:" I love you more. So are you coming with me or you are staying behind? Your boyfriend is still there."

Kenzie: "I don't have any boyfriend."

Me: "Hmm, good for you, let's go."

Wisdom Mofokeng I found him already waiting for me at the restaurant we agreed to meet at.

Wisdom: "Hi." it was very awkward, I don't even know why I am here. I should have stayed home.

Mark: "How are you?" He seemed to be very chilled. Too chilled for my liking because I was nervous.

Wisdom: "I'm good thanks and how are you?"

Mark: "I'm good, I have already ordered breakfast, you can order for yourself." He raised his hand to call the waiter and I ordered English breakfast and coffee.

Mark: "So, how have you been?"

Me: "I have been good, I can't complain. Wena? How have you been?"

Mark: "I have seen better days I can finally say."

Me: "That's nice."

Mark: "Yeah, and your sister? She didn't seem

pleased to see me yesterday."

Me: "I guess she is still hurting and when she saw you with her friend's mother she totally lost it."

Mark: "That's understandable I guess. But there's nothing happening to me and that lady, she is just a friend."

Me: "So you say, but I have never seen a man and a woman being just friends."

Mark: "This is a new Era. Not everything is about romantic relationships. And I doubt I'm ready to be in a relationship at the moment. What your mother did broke me, it might take a while for me to trust another woman."

Me: "But did you forgive her. You speak as if you are still holding a grudge."

Mark: "I'm not holding any grudge. Wisdom, but what your mother did is unforgivable. All I did was to love her, and love her with everything in me but my love was never enough for her and look where we are now? I just want to move on with my life, without her and if I'm being in a relationship with another

person will be uncomfortable for you guys, I'm sorry but I can't stop living my life for you guys. "

Me:" Wow, okay, do what you got to do then. We have no say in your life anymore. But I wish all the best, and I hope you will be happy and I think you should go see her again, there's a lot that happened that I believe you also deserve to know so you can move on from everything all at once. "

He looked at me and I returned the stare. I'm not about to clean up for my mother's act, she did this to herself, she must just wear her big girls panties and tell Mark the whole truth....

Palesa Ella Motaung

Talk about drama after the wedding, today I'm supposed to be leaving with my in laws but my aunt decided to be selfish, she killed herself. I guess her sins were catching up with her and she couldn't

stand it anymore hence she decided to take an easy way out.

Malome Busani and Kwezi took Ditiro to a psychiatric hospital because she is losing it and she became worse after Stella died. She was being violent and all that, since I never really had a relationship with their family, I didn't know who to call, I don't even know if my other uncles are still alive. My father's family never really cares and for so many years they made me believe that my mother's family doesn't care too.

MaMbatha: "Darli, you have to prepare yourself, your in laws will be here any moment, you have to leave with them."

Me: "Gogo, I can't go and leave the rest of you here, it doesn't feel right."

MaNkosi: "Ahah Pali, you have to go, this mess here is not your fault, your aunt did this to themselves because of their evilness, and you can't stop living

your life because of them. You are a wife, someone's wife, and we have no right to be here. We will deal with the situation at hand. Remember you are no longer alone, you have us now, we are your family, you have us, don't stress."

MaMbatha:" MaNkosi is right baby, dress up now. Your mother in law and her people will be here to dress you. Gauteng is far. Nokubonga will help you pack your bags. "

Me;" I guess I don't have much if a choice. "

MaNkosi:" Of course you don't"

We heard the cars hooting outside. Nozi rushed into the bedroom.

Nozi: "MaNkosi they are here." That's how they call her.

MaNkosi: "Help your cousin to pack, uphi uLolo? She has to leave with her mother and cousin."

Nozi: "I'm also going MaNkosi."

MaMbatha: "You are not going anywhere wena, hau.

Go and help others with the dishes."

She sulked her way out. My aunt came and helped me to pack, I didn't pack all my clothes, my aunt refused and said some don't deserve to go to Gauteng.

Nokubonga: "Take this and don't say anything to anyone, buy yourself new clothes and some lingerie for your husband." She handed me a bank card.

Me: "But I have enough money to buy myself new clothes auntie."

Nokubonga: "I know, this is just a little gift from all your aunts and uncles. Don't forget to buy sexy things, and don't starve your man." She gave me a naughty smile.

Me: "Okay, I will."

Mommy bear walked in with Gogo(Kgosi's grandmother.)

Gogo: "Umakoti ngowethu

Usengowethu ngempela bo

Uzosiwas hel'asiphekele

Sithi helele helele siyavuma" Mommy bear joined and Kgosi's aunt from the father also walked in. They dressed me in a pedi traditional dress and doeks. They put a leopard printed shawl on my shoulders.

We walked out with them singing and rejoicing. Kgosi was standing with his brother by his car. He smiled when he saw me, my husband has the best smile ever.

We danced around and we got the the cars and we left.

I was riding with Kgosi only.

Kgosi: "Mrs me, you haven't kissed daddy today."

Me: "Because didn't voice out that he needs a kiss."

Kgosi: "But now I'm voicing it out."

Me: "But baby you are driving."

Kgosi: "Well can pull over and I get the kiss." He pulled over.

Me: "Wow, so you are going to pull over for a kiss."

Kgosi: "Yes, I can't get enough of your lips, kiss me."

He looked deep into my eyes and brought his face closer to me. I just looked at him.

Kgosi: "Aowa come on."

I brought my face closer and we kissed with his hands all over me....

[03/12, 15:35] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 98

Mark Mofokeng

After my meeting with Wisdom, I called Maya that I will delay a little bit, she asked me to drive her daughters car because she wasn't feeling well, so she told me that they will leave it at the lodge.

I wanted to go and pass by Ruth's house not for anything else but for closure. I want to close this chapter of my life and move on from everything. After Wisdom told me that his mother wasn't totally honest with me, it really got to me. Did she really lie when she was given a chance to redeem herself again? Why would she lie again?

I got off the taxi and walked a little to get to the house. Nothing has changed, everything still looks the same. I wked inside the yard, the grass was nicely trimmed and the flowers were really alive, bright and beautiful. The pave was clean, everything was very clean. I went on the back of the house.

There she was, she was humming a song, she seemed to be in a good mood. She looked good but bit skinny, she lost weight but she still looked fine, but not attractive to me. She was hanging the laundry.

I stood there watching her, my mind took me back to how we used to be happy, so I thought. How things used to be between us. The way she enjoyed being mam'fundisi, the way she oved the attention at church, which was okay with me because she was bubbly. Everyday after a church service you will find women surrounding her, young girls wanting to talk to her, every Sunday morning she would wake up and prepare a scrumptious breakfast for everyone, iron our clothes and pick a matchie outfit for both of us.

But all of that didn't seem worthy to her, it wasn't that important to her because e look at where we are now. The pain she caused me, the lies she told me. I

felt like I was never enough for her.

Ruth: "Mark!" She brought me back to reality. She was standing in front of me, she looked taken to see me yet she was trying very hard to to hide it.

Me: "Hi, Ruth. Are you good?" It was hard not to look at her and wonder nje.

Ruth: "I'm fine, wena?"

Me: "I'm good."

Silence... She looked at me expecting me to say something but my tongue was tight

Me: "Can we talk?"

Ruth: "Yeah, sure, come in."

She let the way into the house. The inside of the house was bit different, fe things have changed. She let the way to the dining room, there was a Bible and a journal on the table... Wow this is the first.

I sat down and she made tea and scones. The

tension wasn't that big, it was manageable.

Me: "So, how have you been?"

Ruth: "I have seen better days Mark, how have you been?"

Me: "I can't complain."

Ruth: "That's good, look Mark, I'm sorry about everything I have done to you, I know when you left, I didn't show any amount of remorse, but I do apologize. The Lord has found me, and I'm trying to mend my ways with him. I don't expect you to forgive me but just know that I apologize from my heart. What I did was inhuman of me. And I have lied in many occasions even when you gave me a chance to redeem myself. I have lied about the identity of my children to you and now I'm paying the price. Wisdom and Oratile are not Williams children but they are Williams brothers children....."

She narrated the story to me and I listened and funny enough, I wasn't angry with her, as much as I wanted to be angry I wasn't. For the first time in history she is honest with me and for the first time in knowing Ruth, she apologized. Ruth was never an apologizing type, but seeing her today made me to let go and move on.

This is the time for a fresh start for me.. I'm letting go of my past, my pain and my shame.

Me: "I forgive you Ruth."

Kgosi Mankoe

We are arrived home around 12:00, my family were going up and down preparing lunch to welcome their bride, this is the most happiest day of my life. I have dreamt about this day for a very long time and now it is here. I'm finally going to wake up next to

the woman of my dreams. It's no longer a dream but a reality.

I took our bags inside, my mother Palesa to rest a bit, she will wake her up when lunch is served. She did look exhausted, I mean yesterday was very eventful and to be honest, I won't change anything about yesterday.

I let her to rest while went to hang out with my boys outside in the garden.

Ntando: "Here come someone's husband."

Lindo: "The man if the moment. How does it feel to be married broe?"

Me: "It feels so good, it feels so wonderful, I mean I will be waking up next to my wife, the woman of my dreams."

Lindo: "I will also make sure that I move to the guest room, I don't want to be corrupt with the noise that

will be coming out of your room tonight."

Me: "Worry not little broe, we ain't sleeping here tonight, I'm not about to spend my first night with my wife in my parent's house, that's shall never happen. Five star hotel in Sandton, for my Queen and the rest is not kids. The word of God says in Romans 8:6 The mind governed by the flesh is death, but the mind governed by the Spirit is life and peace.

Brothers edge your minds to be governed by the Spirit that you may not list after the flesh, those are for married people only, not the singles, we don't want you committing adultery don't we. " they all laughed

Lindo:" Ow wow, you are going a pastor in us today, alright, okay, fine pastor K.c

Musa: "I think I will get myself a wife too, if this is how we are going to play everyday, then we might as well join the game."

Me: "Now you are talking like a man, hallelujah."

Ntando: "So, are you ready for tomorrow?"

Tomorrow they will be welcoming us at church and my parents will be handing over the ministry to us. It's a great responsibility, but I believe that God will never give us a load that is too heavy for us to carry. If this is his will, he will fulfil everything according to his plan and we are just vessels, empty vessels ready to be filled by God to use us for His kingdom sake.

I have seen my parents serve the Lord with diligence, I have seen them walking with righteousness before him, and I believe he allowed me to see them serving Him faithfully to teach me to follow in their steps.

Me: "I guess a person will never prepare himself for such things but with God on our side, we are ready."

Lindo: "I'm very proud of you big broe, when I grow up I want to be just like you." Well, trust Lindo to say that.

Later on Mommy Bear asked me to wake my wife up, to freshen up so we can all eat lunch. They hired a lady from church to set up a table in the garden. Nothing much, but she outdid herself. Some of the church members were around too.

Me: "Baby cakes.." I gently shook her, she was in deep sleep and she looked very peaceful.

Me: "Baby cakes wake up." She stretched herself like a little baby, her body was still covered in the fleez blanket.

Palesa: "What time is it?"

Me: "it's 14:30, freshen up, food is ready." She sat up straight exposing her breast, damn woman, why didn't you wear something. She looked at me and

smiled shyly and pulled the blanket to cover her exposed breast.

Me: "You know I'm going to spend my whole entire life seeing those right?"

Palesa: "Yes I know, but I'm just covering them nje."

Me: "Fine, I will let it slide only this time, so I have prepared a bath for you ma'am."

Palesa: "Thank you babe, I can definitely get used to this."

Me: "I can join you to scrub your back."

Palesa: "Hmmm, I like the sound of that..." She hit her lower lip... Okay miss is feeling herself I see.

Me: "Right after you ma'am" She covered herself with the fleez blanket.

Me: "Ahah, the rules of this house is that we don't go to the bathroom with blankets, is either towels or your birthday suit."

Palesa: "But this is not your house."

Me: "Yes, is the rule of our house, when is just the

two of us, we apply it."

Palesa: "But you are still fully dressed."

Me: "Okay. Let me lead by example."

I took off my clothes and I was left naked. Her eyes dropped right at my manhood, I was hard, I mean how can I man not be hard after being exposed to his own weakness? Her caramel skin and medium sized breast, I mean are we being for real?

Her flawless skin....

Palesa: "Kgmmm."

Me: "Loving the view?" She shyly looked down.

Me: "This is all yours baby, now it's your turn." I helped her drop the blanket and she was left in her black thong. Her eyes never left mine.

Me: "Hmm, now take off your undies, or you need my help?" She nodded. With pleasure baby. I helped to get out of her undies, damn she was well shaved, waxed to be precise, no trace of her down there. I could literally see my hand moving down there, my

dick just got bigger by just looking at her, damn, I was even feeling extra hot...

I held her hand and let her to the bathroom. She got into the bath tube and I got right behind her, with my dick on her skin, we were silent but the chemistry was too much to be ignored. I took the sponge and slowly rubbed her back for a while and I went to her breast, her nipples were hard. I took the advantage of that I let go of the sponge and rubbed her breast, she was in the moment... She laid back on my chest and gave me more excess to continue massaging her.... My hands made their way to her garden, damn I didn't plan all of that but I just found her irresistible. I gently massaged her clit and my finger went down her whole, as she tried to adjust her breath and I took it out and rubbed her Clit again, until I finally got her g-spot....her moans filled my ears and she massaged her breast... Damn girl was feeling herself and I was also into the deep.

Mama: "Kgosi, please finish up, we are waiting for you." She screamed her lungs out at the door...
Damn you mother hau, can't you gush eat without us?

[03/12, 15:35] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 99

Ruth Mofokeng

God knows how sorry I am for all the mistakes I have done before. I regret them and if it means spending my whole entire life paying for them, let it be, but there's one thing I have been praying for, that my daughter maybe able to forgive me and move on, not for me but for herself. The anger that she is holding deep within her is consuming her and pushing people that loves her away.

I have been praying for her that she may let Go and let God and I trust God that he will help her.

And Mark coming here today was just a cherry on top, I'm really grateful that he was able to forgive me and I wish nothing but all good for him and I wish that he will find the happiness he deserves.

Wisdom walked in, he told me earlier on that he is coming to check me up, our relationship is not yet there but one step at the time. We are getting there, we will work it out and one thing that gives me joy is that we are not forcing things, things are just happening. We have started praying together on Tuesdays and every Wednesdays I babysit my cute chubby granddaughter. She always makes my days bright

Wisdom: "Ma, I bought you few things at the mall. I forgot to buy toiletries for you, but Mercy will bring them."

Me: "It's okay, baby I appreciate everything you guys are doing for me. I think I still have some left. They will be enough for the month."

Wisdom: "It's nothing big, so Mark?"

Me: "What about him?" I helped him pack the groceries he brought.

Wisdom: "He was here, what did he want? Are you guys getting back together?"

Me: "What? No, we are not getting back together, he just wanted closure and I apologized. Nothing much."

Wisdom: "Hmm, if you say so." I looked at him and smiled.

Me: "Papa, I don't think I will ever go back to that route again. I don't want to get married ever again, my marriage failed because of my selfishness, so, I don't want to be that person again, I think I'm good alone. My life is better when I'm alone."

Wisdom: "Hmm, I hear you. So you and Oratile? "

Me: " I don't know yet, but I will give her time to cool

off, forcing her to forgive me is not an option. It will push her away. " He nodded.

Wisdom:" I'm proud of you, I'm proud that you are owning up to your mistakes. I forgive you Mama. "

Hearing him say those three words melted my heart. Lord I thank you, I know I don't deserve their forgiveness but thank you, I'm grateful for my children...

Palesa Ella Motaung

Hmmm, wow, that a great way to ruin a moment. Kgosi was very grumpy, well, I was too but I didn't show like he did. I dressed up in a navy maxi dress, Kgosi was still applying lotion, I was trying very hard to ignore him because he was still very hard and very grumpy and he kept on playing with himself.

He thought I will change my mind, but I'm not about to disrespect my parents in law in their own house.

Me: "I'm ready, finish up."

Kgosi: "Finish up while I'm like this? Come on cakes, you are my wife, they will understand that we are still busy."

Me: "Askies Rato laka, but I can't disrespect your parents in their house, understand please" I walked to him and stood behind.

Kgosi: "I seriously don't like this. I don't like at all." He turned only to find me standing there, I struggled to keep my eyes from his dick but I couldn't.

Kgosi: "Look at this?" Kgosi is such a baby hey, the way he throws tantrums.

Me: "Rato laka, please don't do this at least not now. Asomblief?"

Kgosi: "Okay, fine then give me a kiss." He got closer and captured my lips before I could even respond. He tried to get his hand under my dress

and I forced to pull out of the kiss.

Me: "Babe please hle."

Kgosi: "Okay fine. I will get dressed." He walked to the closet defeated.

I went downstairs leaving Kgosi in the bedroom still sulking, everyone was seating down on the long table, the only chairs available was for me and Kgosi opposite his parents and next Lindo

Gogo: "Finally you guys decided to grace us with your presence. We thought you were too busy to join us."

Londi: "Gogo leave the kids alone."

Gogo: "What did I do Kante? Is no secret that married people have sex."

Londi: "Lord have mercy on us, Gogo asomblief tog."

Gogo: "Let me keep quiet before they remind me

that I'm husband less."

Lwandle: "Haibo Gogo, so much drama vele? Or you need to get laid?"

Londi: "Lwandle please, not now."

Gogo: "Unfortunately my husband is no more my darling but if he was here I wouldn't be here, maybe I will be screaming his name somewhere upstairs."

Wow this woman is just too much, the whole table laughed.

Gogo: "Well, that's the truth, the thing is you young people shy away from these kind of talks, hence your marriages don't survive, we need to talk about this topics openly, once you get married you loose yourselves, your bedrooms becomes court rooms, wives sleeps with yellow t-shirts as if you are married to Mandela, come on guys. Make your marriages work, be sexy for your man, have fun with, try new things, don't just lie on the bed like a bored chicken. Marriage is fun when both of you put an effort to make it work. And you make it work in every aspect. Your husband doesn't have to always

initiate sex, also initiate it...role plays too. Makoti, I hope and trust that you are taking notes. I should be a marriage counselor Klaar. "

Lwandle:" I think a sexual marriage counselor will do. " Yah neh, indeed this a bunch of a crazy fun family. The table was in stitches.

Kgosi finally decided to grace us with his yummy presence, he was wearing a pair of jeans and a navy t-shirt and sneakers. He was looking yummy but grumpy.

Gogo:" King King, o sharp baby?"

Kgosi: "Ke sharp Gogo, wena?"

Gogo: "Ke sharp, your mama called you in a wrong time?"

Kgosi: "Gogo please, not now."

Gogo: "Okay, let's all eat up fast and release the

newly weds."

Uncle Lwandle was in stitches, this guy is half of Gogo in the whole mood nje.

Kgosi's father said the grace and we all ate with conversation flowing on the table but Kgosi was silent. I place my hand on his thigh and he eyed me.

Me:" Are you okay? "

He just looked at me.

Me: "Babe?" I said softly. Well everyone was minding their own business. So no one could hear us. Lindo was focused on her girlfriend, and Gogo was conversing with my cousins and aunt, keeping them entertained.

Kgosi: "I'm fine."He was really angry.

Me:" I'm sorry. "He continued eating.

I brought my face more closer to him since

everyone was indulging in their own conversation and his parents were all lovey dovey and uncle Lwandle and his wife too were all over each other, I might as well utilize this moment because ugwu is very upset of what went down earlier on.

He stopped eating and looked at me.

Kgosi: "It's fine." He said none chatinly.

Me: "So, when we are angry we don't talk to each other?" I moved my hand to his zip and I was balancing my other hand on the table.

Kgosi: "What are you doing?"

Me: "Nothing, I'm just trying to make a conversation with my husband." I managed to unzip his pants, luckily, he wasn't wearing any belt. The button was now a mission.

Kgosi: "Cakes, stop it."

Me: "Well, I won't stop if you continue to be this grumpy." I managed to unbutton his jeans after a couple of attempts and my hand landed right on his

manhood, on top of his boxers of course, he moved uncomfortably, and I could feel his manhood getting harder with my hand just in it without doing anything."

Kgosi:" Okay fine, you win, we can't do this here. I'm sorry for being grumpy. "

Me:" And? "

Kgosi:" And nothing. " I slowly moved my hand... Well I was getting hot myself.

Me:" You still don't want to talk to me? "

Kgosi:" But I apologized. "He was feeling the heat, and this might leave him even more grumpy than he is already but a girl can only try. I can't afford to have unhappy husband.

Me:" You call that an apology? "

Kgosi:" Babbbe, I need more than this. "

Me:" You can get more than this, but I don't like it when you get angry with over situation I can't control. What happened to making it work no matter what? And not allowing what we can't change bet

between us? Respect for your parents? " My hand was now inside his boxers massaging him slowly, he was very hard and my hand was getting wet, because of the pre-cums. I crossed my legs also because I was feeling the hit myself.

I don't want to mention his facial expression. If we get caught, he is going to get more angry.

Kgosi: "Cakes... Hmmm.. I'm sorry."

Me: "That's much better."

Kgosi: "Let's get out of here."

Me: "You can't leave here like this." I took out my hand and zipped his pants and the bulge was just too much, I perked his lips and settled my hand on his thigh.

Me: "I hope you learned your lesson."

Kgosi: "Baby I was about to cum..."

Tebogo: "May I have your attention please." His father stood up... We all gave him attention.

Tebogo: "Thank you, uhm, I just want to extend our gratitude to the Motaung/ Mbatha family. Thank you so much for this wonderful friendship and I pray that it will continue to grow more in love.

Palesa, yesterday my wife welcomed you but let me also take this moment to also welcome you into this family, you are now one of us, not a part of us but one of us. You are not a daughter in law in this house but you are our daughter, our child. So whatever the children of this house does, you are more than welcome to do it too. If you feel like not washing the dishes, it's fine, no one will ask you why you didn't, if you feel like waking up in the middle of the night and make noise, please do so, we will also do our part in disciplining you like the rest (we laughed), what I'm trying to say is that don't feel obliged to do anything because you are married into this home.

So, me and my wife decided that you guys will

move into the bedroom downstairs until your house is finally ready for you move in. I don't want you two corrupting my children with your noise(wow).. "

Lindo:" Hai, Daddy bear, they are already corrupting me, look at how they are sitting, and I dropped my spoon under the table.... "

Kgosi looked at me... What?

Tebogo:" You my boy need a deliverance I can't tell, so my dear, you are welcome into your parents house. This is your new home and do feel free to break your mother's cups also (Londi: and I will pay for them Sugar), and I will pay for no such. So, before the Motaung/ Mbatha leave, we have some presents for you, just a token of appreciation and family you are also welcome into this house. This is your home, visit us as you wish but not everyday though.(wow, this man though), so let's eat and be merry and let the young couple to make babies.

Cheers. "

Wow, clap once...

[03/12, 15:36] : My Breaking Point

Chapter 100

Finale

10 years later...

Mark Mofokeng

Me: "Are you ready to go?"

Ruth: "Yes, I'm ready, do you have my Bible?"

Me: "Yes, it's in the car already. You look beautiful."

Ruth: "Thank you Hubby, you don't look bad yourself." I kissed her forehead.

If you told me that I will be here again 10 years ago, I would probably laugh. I don't regret getting back with Ruth, the past five years we have been trying to our loves and trust me it's been the best years ever.

Indeed it's only God who can change a person. Ruth has been the best wife, the best mother and the best pastor's wife. We decided to revive the church here in Mokopane and she is involved in so many initiatives with women at church.

Our lives have transformed and I love the fact we are growing deeper into the love of God and we are growing old together in loving the Lord.

Today we are having our 3rd grandchild's baby dedication. God has been so good in my children's lives. Wisdom and Mercy have 3 children now, Khutso is 10, Itumeleng is 5 and Lehutso is only 3

months and he is the only boy.

Ruth: "Did you call the kids? I don't want them to be late and Mercy knows very well that they all have to join intercession."

Me: "Worry not, they will be there on time, I spoke to Wisdom earlier on and he said they were leaving Polokwane."

Ruth: "Okay, let's get going then, is Oratile coming?"
The sadness that overshadows her eyes. Oratile has since left home and she doesn't want to forgive her mother for her past. She is very wild, involved in wrong crowd, doing very bad things. She hates her mother with passion and she is not even afraid to say it to her face.

She does come here time and again when life hits her but it's only for that time and when she is up again she begins to be wild again. It's breaking her mother's heart.

Me: "She didn't say anything. But maybe she will come for her brother sake. Don't worry much about her."

Ruth: "I have been praying so hard for God to soften her heart for her to forgive me but I guess I deserve all of it. I just wish she can change her life for her own sake."

Me: "I know for sure that she will change, remember that everything works together for our good, to us who loves the Lord. We continue to pray for her without ceasing, and we know that our prayers will be answered. Okay?" She nodded.

Me: "I love you."

Ruth: "I love you too." She smiled

Me: "Let's get going."

We went to the car...

Ruth: "I wish we could go and support Palesa and her family in this trying times. That lady has been there for me through it all."

Me: "Maybe we should go visit them next week. Prophetess Londi was a very powerful woman of God, served the Lord diligently with reverence. Her seed multiplied through her children."

We drove to church....

Mercy M Mofokeng

Me: "Baby let's go, we are running late and you know that your mother will chew our heads if we are late. Khuts'o, take Tumi to the car as omblief baby.".

Khuts'o: "Mommy, Kats'o messed her dress with yogurt." She screamed from the lounge. If there's one thing that drives me crazy in this house are Saturdays and Sundays morning.

Running around and having to get the kids ready every morning is a stress on its own. My husband helps around here and then when he is around with

the kids but today he is in no mood for that.

Me: "Baby are you done?"

Wisdom: "Yes, I'm just exhausted, are you ready to go?"

He came back from Joburg this morning, he went to support his cousin and friend. Kgosì lost his mother and they are burning her today. So he just went there for moral support since he had to be here for his son's dedication.

Me: "How are they though? "

Wisdom: "Ah, what can we say, they are all trying. They are all trying to come to terms with what is happening but the families are there for support."

Me: "Yah, neh, indeed this life is not ours but of God. One thing that makes me happy is that she served the Lord with diligently with reverence. "

Wisdom: "Yah neh, I pray that God may give them strength "

Palesa Ella Motaung-Mokoena

This week has been one hectic week ever. I didn't know that losing my mother in love will hit us so bad. For me it broke me, because she died in my arms. I still relive those moments, in that hospital bed. I can still hear her voice talking to me. I was the last person in the ward with her at the hospital. That time Daddy just stepped outside for breather and the kids were not there yet. Even Kgosi was not there, he was at work and Mommy Bear was under my care. The accident really did a number 1 in her..

We still can't explain how it happened but it happened..

*****Flashback*****

Mama: "I'm not going to make it baby, The Lord is calling me home. I have fought my good fight of

faith. Please don't fight this. I have served the Lord with everything in me. I'm giving this baton to you. Fight it with faithfulness and one day we will meet in Glory with God. Please take care of my family, I know they are not strong."

Me:"Mommy Bear, you can't do this, you need to fight a little more. Maybe wait until Lethu's wedding has passed." She shook her head no, you could see that she was in pain but she was just trying to be strong.

Mommy: "No baby, I can't. It's time for me to rest. You have taken care of my family while I was away on missions, and I believe God was preparing you for this moment. God allowed you to come into My home because he knew that one day I will leave. When Moses died, God appointed Joshua to lead the Israelites into Canaan. Now look around you, as far as your eyes can reach, you will possess the land.

Where I couldn't reach, I know that God will give you

strength to reach. God will open doors of opportunities in your ministry. Please take care of my family and my grandchildren. Tell them I love them so much. " I nodded with tears streaming down my face. How do you say goodbye to your Pilar, to one person who have played such a great role of a mother figure in your life? This woman here filled the void of my Mother. She played the part of a mother so well that I had a very strong relationship with her. How does she do this? My kids adores their grandmother so much and the fact that she wasn't there when they were born but the little time they got to spend with her was precious.

She adored her hubby so bad, now in their age, they used to do things together. They lived for each other and God. How will she cope?

Mommy : "Let me rest baby." she kissed my hands and closed her eyes. I felt the heaviness in the room, her soul was departing, I literally felt it heavy in my heart that she is gone. I tried so hard to hold back the tears and the sound of my cry but I couldn't I let it all out.

My phone rang, it was Daddy Bear.

Me: "Pa?" I held my breath scared to break down on the phone in case he was driving.

Daddy: "She is gone?" I nodded with tears as if he was seeing me. His voice sounded so broken and shaken.

Daddy: "Stay there, I'm coming."

I slumped down on the floor shaking, we have buried Gogo about 6 months ago, now this? I was scared for my husband. I was scared for him so bad.

*****end of flash***

I can't believe we are here today, going to lay her to rest. The house is busy going up and down as everyone is busy preparing to leave to the hall where the service will be held. Her funeral will be

broadcasted since so many people knew Mommy bear and I know most of them wanted to be here but we can't accommodate all of them.

I was dressing up Katlego, in her white dress, I tied her black belt at her back in a form of bough.

Katlego is our first born, she is 7 and very talkative and ask too much questions, her grandmother used to say she is like her father. Kgosi was also a curious child when growing up.

The death of his mother truly broke my husband. He is beary holding on, Daddy Bear, the whole week, he has been quiet. he has been trying to hold on but I could see that he was beary holding in. Everywhere he was seated he had his Bible with him. But he was praying...

Kats o: "Cakes, Mommy Bear is no longer coming back?"

Me: "Yes baby, she is no longer coming back. She is now an angel in heaven with God." That's how she calls me, and I gave up trying to force her otherwise and her grandmother is Mommy bear.

Kats o: "SHe is gonna back with white clothes and smile with sparkling clothes?"

Me: "Yes my angel."

Lethu: "Sis, are you done with her? I want to give food."

Lethu has been strong this week and I'm very worried about her. I know she was looking forward for her wedding in the next 2 months, I don't know how she feels, she never really opened up.

Lethu's wedding was all we spoke about in this house. Mommy couldn't wait to walk her daughter down the isle. I remember when they came back from the missions, she was extremely excited that her little girl is finally getting married. She was hands on in helping her to plan for the wedding, she would sit and listen to her telling her about the

colors of her wedding, the decors and all that and she would advice her. She was the best thing that has ever happened to this family

Me: "I'm almost done with her, is Lindo and daddy up?"

Lethu: "Yes, they are almost done, you need to bath also."

Me: "I will when I'm done with the twins." O yes we are blessed with 3 children. Katlego Precious Mankoe, Kagiso Phanel(meaning Vision of God) Mankoe(boy) and Kamogelo Prudence Mankoe (girl), they are only 4 years old.

Lethu: "Okay, let me leave you to it then. Kats o, come baby let's go eat."

Kats o: "Bye Cakes."

Me: "Bye sweetie." They walked out. I have been dreading to go downstairs, knowing very well that her casket is in the living room.

Hubby walked in few minutes later.

Hubby: "Cakes."

Me: "Hmm."

Hubby: "Are you okay?" He hugged me from behind and kissed my neck.

Me: "Everything feels surreal, how are you?"

Hubby: "I'm okay Cakes, if there's one thing I'm grateful is having a mother like her, right now I'm not complaining about anything. Yes, it hurts but her life was worth it, she loved a fulfilled life. And looked at the kind of woman you are because of her, you are a true reflection of my mother. There are so many things in you and more that were in her. Look at how great we have grown in the ministry, it was all because of her.

Me: "How is daddy doing?"

Hubby: "He will be fine, don't worry. I'm just worried about you. Are you okay?"

Me: "I will be fine, I still need to wrap my mind on

everything that's happening but I will be fine. "

Hubby:" It's going to be fine my angel. I have got you. We are now the pillars of this house we will be fine."

Me: "Thank you." I turned and hugged him and kissed him.

Kgosi Mankoe

I let my wife go, this while situation was straining her. She loved my mother dearly. She was all she had in her and now she is gone. The Pilar that was holding our family strong is now gone. We are left all by ourselves. It's hard to imagine life without her. I don't even know how to begin to be positive but for my wife and kids' sake I will do it.

To my wife it's gravely pain because my mother died right in her presence, she felt her soul departing her body.

I bathed the twins and Kenzie helped to dress them up and I went to see my dad.

Me: "How are you holding up?" He shrugged his shoulders. I helped him with the shirt.

Dad: "I'm okay my boy, how are you?"

Me: "I'm fine Daddy, as long as you are okay. Are you ready for the service." He nodded.

Dad: "Where is Lindo? Call your wife, and children and Lethu. We need to pray before we leave." I nodded. I went to call everyone.

We gathered around her casket and joined hands. My wife let us with a song, she has an angelic healing and soothing voice. We all joined in and sang.

And we all prayed. My mother's family, her aunts

and my uncle came and we viewed her body for the last time and we got in the cars to the hall. We asked the broadcasting team to only start broadcasting when we get to the venue because we wanted privacy at home.

When we arrived, I held my wife's hand and Lethu walked in with the kids following her casket. Our worship team was singing her favorite song as we walked in.....

Speeches were made, my mother really touched lives, she left her mark in each and every person she came in contact with...

I stood up to render a speech on behalf of my siblings. They all stood up with me.

Me: "Most of you gathered here today knew my mother, Londiwe KaCele Mankoe as family, dear

friend, sister, cousin, colleague, a pastor and a mother. Some never met her but you are here in support of those who have privilege and honor of knowing her

As a family, we had the honor, privilege and blessing of knowing her as a wife, mother, grandmother, a friend, our friend, our beastie, our prayer warrior, our intercessor, and our Mommy Bear.

Perhaps in the quiet moments, you have read my mother's books, and her biography written by my baby sister here Lethu Buhle, who collected more information than could fit into a single page.

You have heard of the eulogies that were read here, adding to the glimpses of this remarkable loving, giving, devoted, dedicated, thoughtful, God-loving woman, whose love was expressed in manifold kind ways to countless souls.

Paul says in Romans 2:4 "Do you recognize that it is God's kindness that leads to repentance? "

God was kind toward Mommy Bear

God showed his kindness toward Mommy Bear as He allowed her to leave behind every member of her family in this country to go and serve Him in foreign countries.

God showed his kindness toward Mommy Bear when she nearly lost herself when she lost her parents.

God showed his kindness toward Mommy Bear as he married my Dad and in becoming a mother of 3, myself, Lindokuhle and Lethubuhle and in time became a mother in in love to his daughters in love and his son in love to be and a grandmother to 4.

Wow, so, how do I begin to say goodbye to such a phenomenal woman? What do I say to someone who always knew what to say to everyone? I'm out of words to describe her but I thank God that I lived my life forever telling you how much I love you.

I was never ashamed to show my affection to you as my mother. I know that heaven is rejoicing for gaining such a beautiful angel. As your children, we are very grateful for the kind of a woman you were in our lives. We are grateful for teaching us love, how to love one another, to be there for each other most importantly you taught us to Love Christ, you lived for Christ and you brought Christ in our family. Our lives reflect exactly the love of Christ. Today we are husband's and wives to be because of the kind of mother you were in our lives.

We will continue to share the love of Christ with others as you have taught us. We will continue to walk in the ways of the Lord as you have taught us.

The great legacy of prayer that you have left for us, we promise that we will continue to grow it even to our children and their children. You have fought your good fight of faith Mommy Bear, Your crown of Glory is waiting for you in heaven. Today we are celebrating your life, indeed today I now understand the book of Romans 8 from verse 35 when it says

[35]Who shall ever separate us from Christ's love? Shall suffering and affliction and tribulation? Or calamity and distress? Or persecution or hunger or destitution or peril or sword?

[36]Even as it is written, For Thy sake we are put to death all the day long; we are regarded and counted as sheep for the slaughter. [Ps. 44:22.]

[37]Yet amid all these things we are more than conquerors and gain a surpassing victory through Him Who loved us.

[38]For I am persuaded beyond doubt (am sure) that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities, nor things impending and threatening nor things to come, nor powers,

[39]Nor height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation will be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ J esus our Lord...

For us to live is Christ and to die is gain. Daddy Bear, we are here for you, we are not going anywhere and we love you. We will go through this journey with you and we know that we will conquer grief through the blood of J esus Christ. Thank you. "

We went to sit down and the service continued, my dad didn't want to say anything, I guess he was in shock or maybe it was his way of dealing with whole thing.

Palesa Ella Motaung-Mankoe

The program finished and we went to the cemetery. Apostle Buhle was the one preaching. My aunts were very helpful with the kids. This whole

experience brought back lot of emotions, it brought back bad memories, my mother's death and Naomi's death. It was little drizzling when we got to the grave yards. We seated down in the tent and the worship team sang a beautiful melody as they ushered Mommy Bear to her final resting place. Kats'o was seated on his grandfather's lap and hubby was seated next to me, his head was on my shoulders. And Lethu was on my other side, I held her hand.

Pastor Buhle let the service so gracefully, when he coffin went down the rain began to get stronger a bit. Hubby raised her head up quickly, Lethu was just looking at the coffin blankly. She had no emotions.

After everything, the family went to throw in the flowers, the rain had stopped and there was a very bright rainbow. I looked up in the sky and I saw so many words in the sky, words of affirmation.

"I'm Jehovah Rapha, The Lord Your Healer.

I'm Jehovah Shalom, The Lord Your Peace

When you seek me, with all your heart, you will find me,

I'm am, that I am.....

There were so many of them written, I thought I was the only one who was seeing the words, I found hubby, and Daddy looking also....

Daddy: "She is at rest."

Kgosi: "Indeed she is."

They both smiled. I covered Lethu's eyes for second and I let go, she looked up and she also saw the word she smiled with tears. And hubby touched Lindo's eyes and he also smiled.

Lindo: "I'm going to miss her."

Lethu: "I know, same here but I'm happy that she is at rest."

Lord I thank you for my family, I know that sometimes things don't make sense and they don't really have to make sense, but I thank you that You are here to give us strength, You are here to lead us. You are here to comfort us. I pray that this journey of grief will be less painful to them and it be a learning experience in their lives. Mommy Bear might be gone, but her spirit will forever dwell in us and that's the spirit of Love and Christ.....

My name is Palesa Ella Motaung - Mankoe, and this was my story.....

The END